

AN ESSAY
ON
PANTHEISM.

BY THE
REV. JOHN HUNT,
CURATE OF S. IVES, HUNTS.

The reason why we have made this discourse is that all men suppose that what is called
Wisdom has reference to first causes and principles.—ARISTOTLE.
He became man that we might be made God,—S. ATHANASIUS.

LONDON
LONGMANS, GREEN, READER, AND DYER.
1866.

[The Right of Translation is Reserved.]

S. IVES, HUNTS:
PRINTED BY W. LANG CROWN STREET,

BSH
.H91

CONTENTS.

INTRODUCTION.

CHAPTER I.

BRAHMANISM AND BUDHISM.

	PAGE.
BRAHMANISM :	
Indian Origin of Pantheism - - - - -	2
Hindu Literature - - - - -	3
Hindus, Polytheists or Monotheists ? - - - - -	4
Worship of Nature - - - - -	5
Brahm, or HE THAT IS - - - - -	6
Being and Non-Being - - - - -	7
The All-pervading Soul - - - - -	8
God Nameless, yet having All Names - - - - -	9
Matter is Ignorance and Illusion - - - - -	10
The Word of Brahm - - - - -	11
Brahma - - - - -	12
The Trimurti - - - - -	13
Three eras of Hindu Worship - - - - -	14
Brahma Creates - - - - -	15
Vishnu Creates, Preserves, and Destroys - - - - -	16
Vishnu is All Things - - - - -	17
Siva is All Things - - - - -	18
Materialism - - - - -	19

	PAGE.
Idealism - - - - -	20
Krishna and Arjuna - - - - -	21
Mystical Union with Brahm - - - - -	22
BUDHISM :	
Sakya Muni - - - - -	24
Nirvana and Sansara - - - - -	25
Being is Eternal - - - - -	26
Buddhism, not Atheism - - - - -	27
Immaterial Matter - - - - -	28
Budha is All - - - - -	29

CHAPTER II.

PERSIAN, EGYPTIAN, AND GREEK RELIGIONS.

THE PERSIAN RELIGION :

Zeruane Akerne - - - - -	31
Ormuzd, or the Personal Deity - - - - -	32
Domain of Ormuzd - - - - -	33
Kingdom of Ahriman - - - - -	34
Mithras - - - - -	35
The Sun is Mithras - - - - -	36
Honover - - - - -	37
Fire Worship - - - - -	38

THE EGYPTIAN RELIGION :

Egyptian Darkness - - - - -	39
Ammon, the Concealed God - - - - -	40
Hermes Trismegistus - - - - -	41
God and the World - - - - -	42
Osiris and Isis - - - - -	43
The Veil of Isis - - - - -	44
Harpocrates - - - - -	45
Hermes - - - - -	46
Father Nilus - - - - -	47
Worship of Animals - - - - -	48
God in Nature - - - - -	49

THE GREEK RELIGION :

Greek Mythology - - - - -	50
Worship of Nature - - - - -	51
Zeus is all Things - - - - -	52
Apollo is all Things - - - - -	53

CONTENTS.

vii

PAGE.

Pan is all Things - - - - -	54
Jupiter is all Things - - - - -	55

CHAPTER III.

GREEK PHILOSOPHY.

THE IONICS :

Thales of Miletus - - - - -	57
Anaximander and Anaximenes - - - - -	58

THE ITALICS :

Pythagoras - - - - -	59
----------------------	----

THE ELEATICS :

Xenophanes - - - - -	61
Parmenides - - - - -	62
Zeno and Melissus - - - - -	63

HERACLITUS :

Heracitus and the Fire Worshippers - - - - -	65
--	----

EMPEDOCLES - - - - -	66
----------------------	----

ANAXAGORAS - - - - -	67
----------------------	----

SOCRATES AND THE SCEPTICS - - - - -	68
-------------------------------------	----

PLATO :

Is Plato's God a Person ? / - - - - -	70
Ideas and Phenomena / - - - - -	71

ARISTOTLE - - - - -	72
---------------------	----

THE STOICS :

Sense and Reason - - - - -	74
World Order - - - - -	75
God, the Only Real Being - - - - -	76

CHAPTER IV.

PHILOSOPHY OF THE JEWS.

God and Nature - - - - -	78
Judaism and Greek Philosophy - - - - -	79
Greek Philosophy and the Apocrypha - - - - -	80
Philo Judaeus - - - - -	81
I AM or Being - - - - -	82
God has no true Name - - - - -	83
The Divinity of Man - - - - -	84
The Divine Logos - - - - -	85

	PAGE.
God fills all Space - - - - -	86
Creation, Ideal and Visible - - - - -	87
THE CABBALA :	
Ensoph - - - - -	89
The Sephiroths - - - - -	90
Matter, not a Real Existence - - - - -	91

CHAPTER V. NEO-PLATONISM.

PLOTINUS :	
God, the Teacher of Man - - - - -	93
Revelation made to Reason - - - - -	94
Plotinus' Theology, Eclectic - - - - -	95
The Trinity of Plotinus - - - - -	96
Matter, a Phantom - - - - -	97
The Burden of the Flesh - - - - -	98
PORPHYRY - - - - -	99
LAMBLICHUS - - - - -	100
PROCLUS :	
The Trinity of Proclus - - - - -	101
Pyramid of Being - - - - -	103
The One and the Many - - - - -	104

CHAPTER VI. THE CHURCH.

Christianity and Philosophy - - - - -	106
Irenæus and the Patristic Heresy - - - - -	107
Origen - - - - -	108
Clemens of Alexandria - - - - -	109
Arius, No Pantheist - - - - -	110
Athanasius - - - - -	111
Bishop Synesius - - - - -	112
Synesius' Hymns - - - - -	113
S. Dionysius - - - - -	114
The Trinities of Dionysius - - - - -	115
God, not to be Named - - - - -	116
God, to be called by all Names - - - - -	117
God, Unsearchable - - - - -	118

CHAPTER VII.

HERESY.

THE GNOSTICS :

The Special Heresy of the Gnostics	121
The First Gnostics	122
The Unknown Father	123
The Bythos	124
The Pleroma	125
The <i>Æons</i>	126
Nature Pantheism	127

MANICHÆISM :

JOHN SCOTUS ERIGENA

The Division of Nature	130
God, Unknowable	131
God, the Absolute Nothing	132
Creation	133
Is the Phenomenal Eternal ?	134
Man's Place in Nature	135
Philosophy and Church Theology	136
The Trinity	137
The Fall of Man	138
The Incarnation	139
Erigena's Disciples	140
Amalric De Bena	141
The Abbot Joachim	142
Albigenses	143
Brothers and Sisters of the Free Spirit	144

CHAPTER VIII.

SCHOLASTICISM.

Roscellin and Anselm	146
William of Champeaux	147
Peter Abelard	148
Albertus Magnus	149
Thomas Aquinas	150
Duns Scotus	151
Bishop Hampden on the Schoolmen	152

CHAPTER IX. THE ITALIAN REVIVAL.

Averroëism	154
Giordano Bruno	155
The Existence of God, a Primal Truth	156
The Interior Artist	157
Mind Omnipresent	158
Matter and Form	159
The Primitive Matter	160
Bruno and Aristotle	161
Cisalpini	162
Vanini	163
The Inquisition	164
The Stake	165

CHAPTER X.

MYSTICAL DIVINITY AND PHILOSOPHY.

Man Transubstantiated into God	167
The Beghards	168
Eckart	169
Self Annihilation	170
The Super-Essential Essence	171
God Alone can say, I AM	172
Ruysbroek	173
Tauler	174
Eckart and Tauler	175
The Divine Dark	176
Heinrich Suso	177
The Theologia Germanica	178
Luther and the Mystics	179
Jacob Böhme	180
Eternal Nature	181
The First Principle	182
The Trinity	183
The Fountain Spirits	184
The Angels	185
The Fall of Lucifer	186
God's Anger and Jealousy	187

CONTENTS.

xi

PAGE.

Christ and Lucifer	-	-	-	-	-	188
The Creation of Eve	-	-	-	-	-	189
Angelus Silesius	-	-	-	-	-	190
FRENCH MYSTICS :						
Fenelon and Madame Guyon	-	-	-	-	-	192
ENGLISH MYSTICS :						
William Law	-	-	-	-	-	193
The Sea of Glass	-	-	-	-	-	194
All Things of God	-	-	-	-	-	195
The Christ Within	-	-	-	-	-	196
Nature Without God	-	-	-	-	-	197
Inspiration Perpetual and Universal	-	-	-	-	-	198

CHAPTER XI.

SUFEYISM.

Sufeyism and Parseeism	-	-	-	-	-	200
Sufi Absorption	-	-	-	-	-	201
Gazzali	-	-	-	-	-	202
Sufi Poetry	-	-	-	-	-	203
Salaman and Absal	-	-	-	-	-	204
The Temptation	-	-	-	-	-	205
The Celestial Beauty	-	-	-	-	-	206
The Meaning	-	-	-	-	-	207
The Soul's Victory	-	-	-	-	-	208

CHAPTER XII.

IDEALISTIC PHILOSOPHY,

Des Cartes' Method	-	-	-	-	-	210
Cartesian Theology	-	-	-	-	-	211
God, Immanent in Creation	-	-	-	-	-	212
SPINOZA						
Spinoza's Doctrine, Cartesian	-	-	-	-	-	214
Theory of Knowing	-	-	-	-	-	215
Modes of Perception	-	-	-	-	-	216
Intuition	-	-	-	-	-	217
Nature Infinite	-	-	-	-	-	218
The Intermediaries	-	-	-	-	-	219
Spinoza and Plato	-	-	-	-	-	220

	PAGE.
Bodies	221
The Eternal and the Temporal	222
Creation	223
Is Creation Eternal ?	224
Free Necessity	225
Final Causes	226
God, Incorporeal	227
Duration, not to be ascribed to God	228
The Divine Understanding, and the Human	229
Personality	230
Man has no Free Will	231
Good and Evil	232
Might is Right	233
The Life of Reason	234
The Soul Immortal	235
Life Eternal	236
Revelation	237
Jesus Christ is the Truth	238
The Fall	239
Redemption	240
MALEBRANCHE	
Seeing all things in God	242
S. Augustine and Malebranche	243
No Secondary Causes	244
Sin	245
LEIBNITZ	
The Monads	247
Demonstration of the Ontological Argument	248
Sufficient Reason	249
Pre-Established Harmony	250
All for the Best	251
Faith and Reason	252
Christianity, Rational	253
CHAPTER XIII.	
TRANSCENDENTALISM.	
Kant's Critique	255
FICHTE	
The I and the Non-I	257

CONTENTS.

xiii

PAGE.

The Infinite I	-	-	-	-	-	258
God more than a Person	-	-	-	-	-	259
Immortality	-	-	-	-	-	260
Creation, Eternal	-	-	-	-	-	261
God is the Word or Reason	-	-	-	-	-	262

SCHELLING

The doctrine of Identity	-	-	-	-	-	264
Nature and Spirit	-	-	-	-	-	265
Philosophy of Nature	-	-	-	-	-	266
Schelling and Spinoza	-	-	-	-	-	267
The Absolute	-	-	-	-	-	268
The Potencies in Nature	-	-	-	-	-	269
Time and Space	-	-	-	-	-	270
Intellectual Intuition	-	-	-	-	-	271
Schelling and Böhme	-	-	-	-	-	272
Personality of God	-	-	-	-	-	273
Christianity, not a Nature Religion	-	-	-	-	-	274
Finite and Infinite reconciled in Christ	-	-	-	-	-	275

HEGEL

The Absolute Idea	-	-	-	-	-	277
Logic or Logos	-	-	-	-	-	278
Being, the same as Nothing	-	-	-	-	-	279
Becoming and There-Being	-	-	-	-	-	280
Philosophy of Nature and Spirit	-	-	-	-	-	281
Hegel parts with Schelling	-	-	-	-	-	282
The Idea in History and Religion	-	-	-	-	-	283
Hegelian Christianity	-	-	-	-	-	284
Hegel meant to be Orthodox	-	-	-	-	-	285
The Hegelian Trinity	-	-	-	-	-	286
Immortality	-	-	-	-	-	287
The One	-	-	-	-	-	288

CHAPTER XIV.

POETRY.

Goethe's Faust	-	-	-	-	-	290
The All-Embracer	-	-	-	-	-	291
Creation	-	-	-	-	-	292
World Soul	-	-	-	-	-	293

	PAGE.
Schiller	294
Novalis	295
Men shall be gods	296
Wieland	297
Ruckert	298
Lamartine	299
God in Nature	300
Ce Grand Tout	301
The God of Plato, Christ's God	302
Shelley	303
Shelley's Spirit of Nature, Personal	304
Pope's Essay on Man	305
Thomson and Cowper	306
Wordsworth	307
Wesley	308
Bryant	309
Emerson	310

CHAPTER XV.

WHAT IS PANTHEISM ?

Schleiermacher	312
The Trinity not Tri-personal	213
Individual Immortality	314
Schleiermacher's Disciples	315
Frederick Robertson	316
Theodore Parker	317
The Religious Element	318
Parker on Pantheism	319
God Immanent in, yet Transcending the World	320
The Religious Aspect of Nature	321
Emerson	322
Oversoul	323
M. Renan	324
Renan on Pantheism	325
The Abbé Maret on Pantheism	326
Pantheism or Catholicism, no Alternative	327
M. Cousin, a Pantheist	328
Cousin's Disciples, Pantheists	329

CONTENTS.

XV

	PAGE.
The Saint t-Simonians, Pantheists	330
Amand Saintes' Alternative	331
M. Saisset on Pantheism	332
Pantheism, an Enquiry concerning Being	233
A Doctrine of Being, the Foundation of all Theology	334
Pantheism, a Question concerning Creation	335
Impossibility of conceiving Creation	336
Why did God Create ?	337
Creation from Nothing, impossible	338
Sir William Hamilton's Pantheism	339
Milton on Creation	340
God, Personal or Impersonal ?	341
Athanasius and Arius	342
God, not Uni-Personal	343
Athanasius on the Divinity of Man	344
The Atonement	345
Propitiation	346
Providence, General or Special ?	347
Prayer	348
Miracles	349
God is both Personal and Impersonal	350
God and Evil	351
Predestination	352
Spinoza and Toplady	353
Immortality	354
The Divine Immanency	355
Soul in Nature	356
The Ancients on Development	357
De Maillet	358
J. B. Robinet	359
Nature, Progressive	360
Nature is One	361
Lamarck	362
Geoffroy S. Hilaire	363
S. Hilaire and Cuvier	364
Cuvier and Goethe	365
Vestiges of a Natural History of Creation	366
God working in Nature	367

	PAGE.
Mr. Charles Darwin	368
Sir Charles Lyell and Professor Huxley	369
Professor Owen on Homologies	370
Correlation of Physical Forces	371
Cognition of the Infinite	372
What is Revelation ?	373
Pantheism, the Theology of Reason	374
Plato's Pantheism reconciled with his Teleology	375
Plato reproached with Anthropomorphism	376
The real Error of the Pantheists	377
Christ, the Visible Image of the Invisible	378
CONCLUSION	
S. Paul and the Pantheistic Poet	380
Reason and Revelation	381
Wisdom justified of her Children	382

ERRATA.

- Page 105, line 30 *for* S. John's *read* S. John.
- .. 112, .. 25 *for* Bishop of Pentapolis *read* Bishop of the Ptolem-
ais in Pentapolis.
- .. 129, .. 23 *after* 1583 *supply* it is found in the Calendar of Catholic
worthies.
- .. 146, .. 20 *for* began *read* begun.
- .. 155, .. 33 *for* Neopolitan *read* Neapolitan.
- .. 157, .. 10 *for* productions *read* production.
- .. 162, .. 13 *for* Mengaril *read* Berigard.
- .. 262, .. 15 *for* phantom *read* phantasm.
- .. 296, .. 45 *for* it *read* there ; *and supply this line,*
Their song in sweet fragrance.
- .. 309, .. 31 *put* the * *after* 'Flame' line 17
- .. 311, .. 3 *for* thought *read* thoughts.

INTRODUCTION.

IT sometimes greatly helps to the understanding of a book when the author can give his readers an account of how the subject first engaged his own mind, and what were the different stages through which it passed before its final expression in writing. I do not know if a writer can always give such an account even when he is willing. I do not know that I can give an account of the origin of the present essay. So many causes have arisen during the last few years, calling for a more complete enquiry into this subject than has been made by any English author, that the marvel is it has not been taken up by some who have the learning, leisure, and ability necessary to do it justice. Germany and France have their *Essays on Pantheism* from all sides, and by the representatives of all schools. England has nothing but meagre accounts in *Encyclopedias* or *Histories of Philosophy*, the reading of which, speaking generally, would make no man wiser than he was before. Pantheism is something so frightful and so frightfully vague that running a lance against it is a dash of rhetoric, which hurts no one and offends no one; not that it is a man in an iron mask, but that it is an iron mask and nobody knows who the man is who owns it.

Towards the end of the year 1859, after I had been four years in orders, and working in a parish far away from books and civilization, I was deeply affected with a sense of my ignorance of theology. I found many difficulties which I could not answer, and which I yet believed could be answered. I removed to a curacy in London and formed a plan of reading all the books which had been written against Christianity and mastering all the systems which are said to be in opposition to it. I had no conception of the magnitude of what I undertook; but, being within reach of the British Museum, I began to work, and con-

tinued till I had collected materials for a complete history of the various forms which unbelief in Christianity and Natural Theology had assumed. I intended so putting them together that I might have a comprehensive view of the whole, and see at a glance what was their real value. The publication of the 'Essays and Reviews,' and the controversies which followed them gave a new and absorbing interest to my studies. I had already seen that such a book must come soon. It was the expression of the phase through which theology was then passing. It only startled those who did not know the signs of the times. The book itself and the answers to it all deepened my conviction that the whole science of theology needed to be reviewed, and, in many cases, new ground to be occupied. I intended to treat of Pantheism, Atheism, Deism—French, English, and German; the antagonism of Christianity with Heathenism in the times of Porphyry and Celsus, French Socialism, German Rationalism in all its forms; and, finally, of the present state of theology and the prospects of the Church of the Future. In the spring of 1863, I showed the plan to a friend, who said it would take me twenty more years to complete such a work. He advised me to finish one part first, and then go on to the rest. I have followed his advice, and the volume which is now published is the result. If this Essay has any success, it will be followed next by an Essay on Deism—a subject on which we have no work in English, such as it deserves.

The question of Pantheism and its relation to the received doctrines of Christianity was first raised in my mind by a passage in Dr. Caird's sermons. This passage I have quoted at page 212. The preacher showed the difference between the Divine mechanism and the human. Man constitutes a machine and leaves it to God's laws, but God can only leave a machine to His own laws; in other words, He cannot leave it. There is no second God to take care of it. 'Not from a single atom of matter can He who made it for a moment withdraw his superintendence and support. Each successive moment all over the

world the act of creation must be repeated.' This idea, as I have elsewhere shown, is purely Cartesian. Leibnitz set his face against it as the very essence of the errors of Spinoza. But, here I found it in the sermons of a popular preacher, whose orthodoxy as a minister of the Calvinistic Church of Scotland had never been questioned. I was anxious to know what was Spinoza's doctrine, and wherein he really differed from such theologians as Dr. Caird. I read first the article on Spinoza in Bayle's Dictionary. It gave me no satisfaction, for I had a strong suspicion that Bayle was trying to refute what he did not understand. I then read the account of Spinoza in Mr. Lewes's History of Philosophy; but here, too, from the writer's want of sympathy with such thinkers as Spinoza, he seemed unable to grasp the real significance of Spinoza's theology. I went through other Histories of Philosophy in search of Spinoza's doctrines. At last I read Spinoza himself, and found what I had often found before that every second-hand account of any author is to be received with suspicion. From Spinoza I proceeded to Malebranche, and here I perceived how easily Spinoza's doctrines might be held along with 'the faith of the Catholic Church.' Malebranche, like his master, Des Cartes, claimed to be a disciple of S. Augustine and S. Anselm. The exercise of reason in theology had the same results with the priest of the Oratory as with the Jew of Amsterdam. After reading Malebranche, I met the works of Theodore Parker, which, with all their errors, must do good to every earnest man who reads them. Here the Cartesian idea of the Divine Immanency was applied with a boldness which was startling and astonishing: yet, with such a power of eloquence and such an exercise of manly reason as to carry the conviction that there must be some truth in it somehow or somewhere. I had heard that the German Transcendentalists were all Pantheists. It was necessary to the completion of my enquiry to study them.

This, in itself, was no ordinary undertaking. I was warned of the danger of the study. I was told that the power of the Transcendentalists was so seductive, that over the study of them might be written what Dante inscribed over the gate of Hell,—‘No one who enters here will ever return.’ It is true that no one who enters here will take the same view of Christianity which he had before. He will believe it more, or less. It is the furnace of mind where men’s thoughts are tried. It is good for a man to go there, but he must go in earnest. There is wisdom there for the wise, but only confusion for him who ‘reads to scorn.’

After studying the German philosophies, it was evident that the whole field of theological thinking had to be gone over. I began with the theology of the Hindus. On Hinduism I was necessarily limited to translations and second-hand accounts. I followed Creuzer with such assistance as I could get from English writers. I do not suppose that Creuzer has any foundation for some of his conjectures. Even the divisions which I have adopted are adopted only for the sake of convenience. The great point at which I aimed was to set forth the underlying Monotheism, and this I think is evident, whatever may be our mistakes concerning Hinduism. On this subject the tracts of Romahun Roy were of great service. He has shown that the foundation of the Indian religion, like that of all other religions is a belief in one Supreme God. Mr. Maurice, in the preface to his Boyle Lectures, partly objects to Romahun Roy’s conclusion because of the character of the Monotheism at which he arrives. ‘It was,’ says Mr. Maurice, ‘a Monotheism, which made it impossible to distinguish the object worshipped from the mind of the worshipper, and, *therefore*, which implicitly contained, and out of which was inevitably developed the later Polytheism.’ But the character of Monotheism, of all Monotheism, is just what we have to determine. The same objection might have been

made to S. Paul when he argued against the Polytheism of the Greeks appealing to their Monotheism, which was not only implied, but plainly expressed. We might suppose an objector saying to S. Paul, 'You appeal to the Monotheism of Aratus, quote the whole passage, the Deity of Aratus was that Zeus who is all things.' The theology of the Hindus was essentially that of the Greeks. They both had different stages and various forms corresponding to the different character of the people and their progress in refinement and civilization.

On Buddhism, the authorities are more uncertain than on Brahmanism. The evidence is great, and yet surely it is incredible, that the Budhists are Atheists. A religion without a Deity to be worshipped must be impossible. In the present state of our knowledge of Buddhism I think it reasonable that it should be interpreted by Brahmanism, in which it had its origin. What are the real doctrines of the Budhists is one of the most pressing questions that have to be answered concerning the theologies of the Eastern world.

It was not till I had nearly finished this Essay, that I discovered how the subject was connected with Sir William Hamilton's Philosophy, Professor Mansel's celebrated Bampton Lectures, and the controversies to which they gave rise. After what I had written on this subject was printed, I had doubts if I had really understood the question when I agreed with Mr. Calderwood in opposition to the interpretation of Mr. Mansel. If, in what Sir William Hamilton says of creation, he is simply showing the impotence of thought, then he must mean that reason has no right to be heard in theology, that we have no right to exercise our faculties as to the mode of creation; it is really inconceivable by us. And this accords with the general principles of his system. Mr. Mansel, in a note appended to the second of his Bampton Lectures, seems to admit that Sir William Hamilton, in his doctrine of creation and causation, has spoken inconsistently with his own philosophy, and, as it appears

to me, virtually to allow that there was a real ground for Mr. Calderwood's criticism.

I could have wished that I had been able to enter more at length into the theologies of the Fathers and the Schoolmen. I was not aware that the former at all approached my subject till I had read *Dorner on the Person of Christ*, and it was then too late to go into the reading necessary for so extensive an inquiry. I satisfied myself with what I had time to read of Origen and Synesius, S. Augustine and S. Athanasius, taking Dorner's authority for the theology of the others. As to the Schoolmen, the chapter on them in this volume was merely an outline written years ago which I intended to fill up when I had an opportunity, but that opportunity has not come. What, however, is here written is sufficient for my argument. Those who dispute the interpretation of the Schoolmen which I have given, must dispute not with me but with Dean Milman and Bishop Hampden.

A work of this kind ought to have been written by one who had a good knowledge of Plato, with the Greek and Alexandrian philosophies as his capital to begin with. Instead of this I have been writing backwards, and not till I had made considerable progress did I know that Plato had anything to do with the subject. When I discovered this I was perplexed with the extent and indefiniteness of Plato's writings, and the conflicting views of his interpreters. I found it necessary to fall back on an authority. Such an authority I found in the Editor* of Archer Butler's Lectures on Philosophy, whose clear and definite notes on the Greek philosophies are of greatly more value than the diffuse and rather wordy lectures to which they are appended. Certain views may be disputed whether or not they are Plato's, but this does not affect my argument. It is enough for me that they have been ascribed to Plato.

The plan of this Essay the reader can see for himself. It is simply an enquiry. It is written to answer the question which is the heading of the last chapter. In going over so vast a

* William Hepworth Thompson, Regius Professor of Greek in the University of Cambridge, now Master of Trinity.

field it is possible that I may have misunderstood some of the authors and some of the systems. I have tried in every case to put the best, that is, the most orthodox construction upon them. I have tried to put myself in the position of each writer, to give his views as I apprehended he would give them himself, to say what I have supposed he meant when he is obscure or seems to contradict himself. It is much to be regretted that I have not been able to give the references for the verifying of the quotations. This was entirely impossible, as only a very small number of the books which were read or consulted ever belonged to me. The majority of them were read in the British Museum, where the extracts were generally made. I shall be glad if no serious mistakes are found in the translations from foreign languages, which were often made in haste. Sometimes the original was copied out so hurriedly that it was read afterwards with difficulty. I believe, that I am rarely wrong in the sense, however free the translations may be found.

I am well aware of the danger to which every man exposes himself when he writes and enquires freely on any great subject of theology. There is still intolerance in science, but that is nothing to the intolerance that proverbially clings to theology. Many will be offended that I have given a fair hearing to theologians and philosophers who have long by universal consent been placed without the pale of the Church. Some will be dissatisfied with the conclusions to which I have come. I have been guided by no motive but a desire to make a full and free examination; to receive what seemed to be true, or as containing truth, and to regret what seemed false. I have made it altogether a question of reason. A believer in the impotence of thought has no business anywhere but in the infallible church. There let him rest. We have another vocation. We acknowledge no blind submission to authority. To the earnest man there is no reward but the truth itself. The external reward in theology is not to the truth seeker or the truth finder, but to those who tread its beaten track, and who pledge themselves even to the phraseology of a party. Truly does Richard Baxter de-

scribe the condition of the earnest inquirer in theol'ogy, where he says :—" And when I have found the truth, I have found but an exposed naked orphan that hath cost me much to take in and clothe and keep ; which, though of noble birth—yea, a Divine offspring, and amiable in mine eyes, and worthy, I confess, of better entertainment, yet from men that know not its descent, hath drawn upon me their envy and furious opposition, and so the increase of knowledge hath been the increase of sorrow. My heart, indeed, is ravished with the beauty of naked truth, and I am ready to cry out, ' I have found it ! ' but when I have found it, I know not what to do with it. If I confine it to my own breast, and keep it secret to myself, it is as a consuming fire shut up in my heart and bones. I am as the lepers without Samaria, or as those that were forbidden to tell any man of the works of Christ. I am weary of forbearing ; I cannot stay. If I reveal it to the world, I can expect but an unwelcome entertainment and an ungrateful return, for they have taken up their standing in religious knowledge already, as if they were at Hercules' pillars, and had no further to go nor any more to learn. The most precious truth not apprehended doth seem to be error and fantastic novelty. Every one that readeth what I write will not be at the pains of those tedious studies to find out the truth, as I have been, but think it should meet their eyes at the very reading, so that if I did see more than others, to reveal it to the lazy prejudiced world, would but make my friends turn enemies, or look upon me with a strange and jealous eye."

Yet I know that there are thousands of earnest men in the Church of England at the present hour who know the necessities of the age, and the need for deep and searching enquiry into all great subjects, men who know that if Christianity is to be allowed to make its own way in the world, it must not be afraid of the light, it must use no cowardly devices, it must be set forth as what it is and what it professes to be, and not converted into something which it is not and which it does not profess to be. I have written in the interests of truth, and with a sincere intention, and I am not afraid to submit what I have written to the judgment of wise men.

CHAPTER I.

BRAHMANISM AND BUDDHISM.

OF the word Pantheism we have no accurate definition. The most opposite beliefs are sometimes called by this name; and systems which, in the judgment of some, are notoriously Pantheistic are defended by others as compatible with the received doctrines of Christianity. The popular definition does not go beyond the etymology of the word,* God is All, or the All is God. But this defines nothing until we know either what God is, or what the *All* is. If the universe is material, taking matter in its ordinary sense, then according to this definition God is matter, or, what is the same thing, there is no God. If, on the other hand, the universe is spiritual, then God is a spirit and matter is only an illusion—there is no material universe—what we call matter is only an appearance—the image or shadow of the Infinite Being. Hence two classes of Pantheists wholly distinct from each other, the material and the spiritual: the one is without a real God, the other is without a real world. To call the first by any name which at all implies that they are Theists is a contradiction in terms. The second is the class which are chiefly intended when we speak of Pantheists. Since we neither know what is matter nor what is spirit, it being impossible to demonstrate the existence of the one apart from the other, the indefinite meaning of Pantheism necessarily remains. Between these two kinds of Pantheism, that which denies a real God and that which denies a real universe, are a multitude of intermediary views approaching more or less to either of these. It is conceivable that mind may be eternally associated with matter, and thus the relation between God and the universe may correspond to that of the human soul with the human body. It is again conceivable that

* Πάν All, Θεός God.

matter may be the mere external manifestation of mind, having reality only from its connection with mind, or there may be an essence of which mind and matter are both but manifestations. In this essence they may find their reality, and this reality or essence may be that *All* which is identical with God. It is evident the question of Pantheism cannot be discussed till we have examined the beliefs that have been called Pantheistic.

1. BRAHMANISM.—Nearly all writers on Pantheism trace its origin to India. The *Abbé Maret* reaches the climax of his argument against the French Socialists in declaring that their doctrines come from India—"the mother of superstitions." *Pierre Leroux* admits the fact of his agreement on many subjects with the Indian sages, and answers with an air of triumph that "all religions, and all philosophies have their root in India, and that had Pantheism not been found in India that would have been a strong argument against its truth, for then humanity would have erred in its beginning."

In India the creed of modern intellect is combined with the worship of an infinity of gods. This is the problem of Brahmanism; this is the puzzle on every Hindu temple. When this problem is solved for Brahmanism there will be light shed on a similar problem that presents itself in nearly all religions. *M. Leroux* again truly says: "the religion of India does not concern India alone: it concerns humanity."

Though beginning with Brahmanism we do not thereby intend any inference to be drawn of its prior antiquity to some other ancient religions. We take it simply as the best representative of the great Aryan family—the branch which has grown to the most gigantic proportions, and that one in the light of which the others may be understood.*

We cannot reach the beginnings of humanity. The first races probably had no literature and no religious books; we must therefore begin with the oldest religious books in our possession, which are those of the Hindus. In saying this we do not raise any question of the relative antiquity of the

* It is found only in India; yet recent discoveries seem to show that India is not its birth place. There are tribes in India—scattered remnants of conquered races, dwelling on mountains and in border lands—who have no priests, and give no reverence to Brahmans. These are the Khonds, the Koles, and the Sourahs, supposed to be the aborigines of Hindostan. They differ greatly from the Hindus in their character and mode of life, as well as in their religion. Their principal deities are *Bura Pennu*, and *Tari Pennu*. The first is their chief god, and the second a malignant female deity—the author and promoter of all the evil in the world.

Vedas and the Bible. Some of the Brahmanical books were written many centuries before the Christian era, and others perhaps as many centuries after it. And though we speak of them as one set of books, we do not forget that they are many; and though we come to them in search of only one class of doctrines, which indeed are the most prominent and the most characteristic of their general spirit, we do not forget that other doctrines will also be found in them. The Vedas contain traces of many phases of religion and germs of many different philosophies.*

To find a complete harmony of sentiments in a mass of literature so varied as the Indian is more than we have any right to expect, yet there is a predominant characteristic reigning generally through it all. In it is reflected the mind

* The Vedas as they now stand are four in number: the Rig-Veda, the Sama, the Yagur, and the Atharva Veda. Originally there were only three; the last being of a much more recent date than the others. In the estimation of modern Hindus they are all eternal. The books themselves claim this duration of existence as containing the very words which were spoken by Him who is Eternal. They are distributed among the four classes into which Hindu society is divided: the first to the Brahmans, the second to the Warrior caste, the third to the Merchant caste, and the fourth to the Soudras. This agrees, too, with the estimation in which they are held; for, though all inspired, the first takes the highest place. The Rig-Veda is indeed the most important of the Hindu books. It is a collection of hymns and prayers in verse and prose. It is the nucleus around which all the others have gathered—the authority to which all subsequent teachers appeal. That it is the oldest is not disputed—its age being generally fixed at about 3,000 years.—The Yagur Veda, also consisting of hymns and prayers, is divided into two parts: the White Yagur and the Black Yagur. It is more modern than the Rig-Veda, but formed in imitation of it. The Sama Veda consists for the most part of extracts from the other two. In early times when the Vedas were only three in number, the second and third were considered as simply the attendants of the first. The knowledge of the Vedas was called the threefold knowledge, or literally the threefold Veda, "which," says Max Müller, "again presupposes one Veda, and that the Rig-Veda." The Atharva is the most modern of these four books. Its use indeed is wholly different, for while the priests performed their regular sacrifices with the other three Vedas, the fourth contained only the formulas of consecration—how to appease our enemies and how to curse them. The four Vedas were reduced to their present form by the sage Vyasa—the Indian Ezra, who lived about 400 years before the Christian era. He added expositions of the text which form what is called the Vedanta. These are known as Brahmanas and Upanishads, which profess to explain the origin of the rituals, and to set forth the religious philosophy of the Vedas. There is also a voluminous work called Puranas, which has been ascribed to Vyasa, but has probably had many authors. The Puranas are translated into the vulgar languages of India, and may be read by women and Soudras. Concerning the age of these different books there is great uncertainty, and no agreement either among Brahmans or Europeans. The laws of Menu were written, probably, about 600 years before Christ. They present a picture of the Social life of the Indians at a time when they had reached a high degree of civilisation.

of the people in different states of civilization and different eras of development. In the early books there is manifested a strong love of nature, and a high appreciation of the life that now is; and this spirit appears at intervals, not only in little episodes of family life, but sometimes in the very acts and prescriptions of religious worship. But it is not the spirit that prevails—it is not the character of the old Hindu people. They were not satisfied with this transitory existence: their thoughts were on things unseen; they were seeking a world without change. The character which the Greek historian* gives them is fully confirmed; “they considered this life as the life of an embryo in the womb, but death as the birth to a real and happy life for those who had thought, and had prepared themselves to die.” Weary of the life of nature, because of its brevity and its uncertainty, the Indian disregarded it and strove after indifference, both as to its pleasures and its sorrows. It was not his rest. He felt within him a spirit greater than the transient and the finite; he sought the Eternal and the Infinite.

We have already raised a question which must be considered at the threshold of Brahmanism, that is, the co-existence of a species of Theism with Polytheism. Are the Hindus, Polytheists or Monotheists? Ask a Brahman of the present day “How many gods he worships?” and he will answer “Millions;” by which he means that their number is not to be numbered; for all the vast accumulations of deities in the mythology, and of idols in the Hindu temples, are but efforts to express the Infinite One.

Every Brahman may not be able to give the reason for the multitude of objects he worships, but from our point of view this is the *rationale* of his worship. When we turn to the old Hindu books the same principle serves to guide us through the labyrinth. In the Rig-Veda we have a simple worship of nature: the elements and powers of nature personified are the first gods of the *Aryan* race.† But of these, chiefly the heavens, hence the worship of fire, of the sun, the moon, and the stars; and yet it is not these objects themselves that are worshipped, but the power which is in them—the manifestations, so to speak, of a mind in them which is sometimes identified with them. We have instances of this in the

* Megasthenes.

† Plato thinks that the sun, moon, and stars were the only objects of worship in Greece in the early ages. Caesar says that the Germans worshipped the sun, moon, and fire.

names of deities passing to the objects. Thus *Dyaus* the old deity of the Rig-Veda came to mean the sky, in the same way as the name of Jupiter among the Romans. Fire was called *Agni*, and the elements *Indra*, from their being originally the names respectively of the god of fire and the god of the elements. But though the deities in the Hindu Pantheon are numerous, and though many of them may be explained as mere personifications of the mighty powers in nature, there is yet ever in the Hindu mind a passing beyond the external, and a reaching out after something which is not finite. Their Polytheism is but a phase of their religion, and one more apparent than real. The spiritual effort of the Hindu is not limited to the worship of the powers of nature but strives to embrace nature infinite, and there to adore the One who is present in all nature, and who nourishes nature in Himself.

Creuzer divides Hinduism into three eras, which have three different phases corresponding to them. The first is that of simple nature worship, where no distinction is made between the Creator and creation. The second he calls that of reflection and devotion when this distinction is made, but only in a confused way. The third is that of philosophy, when reason seeks to explain how God and nature are one. *Creuzer* here applies to Hinduism the general law of the religious sentiment. In youth, whether that of a nation or an individual, religion is a feeling full of poetry. To this succeeds an age of enquiry when reason begins to be exercised; hence arises, as the result, a religious philosophy. By examining in succession these three phases we shall best be able to judge of the general character of the Hindu religion, considered as a consistent whole. The first era is represented by the Vedas, the second by the Vedic Commentaries, and the third by the schools of philosophy. That Hinduism was at first a simple worship of nature is evident from almost every page of the Vedas. Two hymns that have been translated into most European languages will be sufficient for our present object. The first is "The Gaytri, or holiest verse of the Vedas." It begins, "Let us adore the supremacy of that divine Sun: the God-head who illuminates all, who re-creates all, from whom all proceed, to whom all must return, whom we invoke to direct our understandings aright in our progress towards His holy seat. . . . What the sun and light are to this visible world, that are the *supreme good and truth* to the intellectual and invisible universe; and, as the corporeal

eyes have a distinct perception of objects enlightened by the sun, thus our souls acquire certain knowledge by meditating on the light of truth which emanates from the Being of beings—that is the light by which alone our minds can be directed in the path to blessedness.” The other hymn is from the Yagur Veda. The Deity is called by the name *That*, as we find frequently in this Veda. He is simply Essence, or Being.

“Fire is *That*, the sun is *That*;
The air, the moon—so also that pure Brahm.
Waters, and the lord of creatures.

“He, prior to whom nothing was born,
And who became all beings,
Produced the sun, moon, and fire.
To what God should we offer oblations,
But to Him who made the fluid sky and the solid earth—
Who fixed the solar orb, and formed the drops of rain.
To what God should we offer sacrifice,
But to Him whom heaven and earth contemplate mentally.

“The wise man views that mysterious Being
In whom the universe perpetually exists,
Resting upon that sole support,
In Him is the world absorbed,
From Him it issues.
In creatures is He twined, and wove in various forms.
Let the wise man, versed in Holy Writ,
Promptly celebrate that immortal Being,
Who is the mysteriously existing various abode.”

We have chosen these two hymns, not simply because they set forth the Hindu worship of nature, but, also, at the same time, the peculiar characteristics of that worship. It is not the sun itself that is worshipped, but the sun as the emblem, yea, the abode of that Being towards whom the hearts of the worshippers are filled with reverence. And the same of the moon, the fire, the waters. They are that Being because that Being is in all, and is the *being* of all. We have here an intimation of the Pantheism, the Polytheism, and the Monotheism of Hinduism; how they are related to each other, and how the one is to be interpreted by the other. Brahm, the supreme, is impersonal. His name is mystery, or *He That Is*. Placed at the summit of all thought, and beyond all thought, He is called by the name of all the gods and of all things, that He may be excluded from none. Again He is the One mysterious and nameless, that He may be distinguished from all things. He is pre-eminently One, everlasting, without body, parts, or passions. His power, wisdom, and goodness, are infinite. He is the Maker and Preserver

of all things, both visible and invisible. "May that soul of mine," says a prayer in the Rig-Veda, "which mounts aloft in my waking hours as an ethereal spark, and which, even in my slumber has a like ascent, soaring to a great distance, as an emanation from the Light of lights, be united by devout meditation with the Spirit supremely blest and supremely intelligent." And the hymn on creation, from the same Veda, thus speaks of that Infinite Spirit :

"Then there was no entity, nor non-entity,
Nor world, nor sky, nor ought above it—
Nothing anywhere.
Nor water, deep and dangerous—
Death was not.
Nor then was immortality,
Nor distinction of the day or night.
But *That* breathed without afflation—
Darkness then was."

"This universe was enveloped in darkness,
And was undistinguishable water.
Who knows, and shall declare when and why
This creation (ever) took place.
The gods are subsequent to the production of the world—
Who then can know from whence
This varied world comes?
He, who in highest heaven is Ruler, does know;
But not another can possess that knowledge."

The Yagur Veda speaks of the primordial soul as ineffable. "He is neither great nor small, large nor long. He is without color, shadow, smell, or taste; without youth or age, beginning or end, limits or bounds. Before Him there was no one; after Him comes no one. He is unspeakably pure, living in eternal repose, and in eternal joy, stable amid all change—in His grandeur free. He sees without eyes, and hears without ears. He sees all, hears all, understands all; but is seen by no one, is comprehended by no one." Brahm is pre-eminently *Being*; but lest that term should seem to exhaust His infinitude, He is also said to be Non-Being—not, however, in the sense that material forms are non-being, not because He is less than being, but greater than all being. Our thoughts of existence are too mean to be applied to Him. We must declare their insufficiency so as it may be understood that when we, the finite, affirm anything of God, it is but our finite effort to express Him, and therefore imperfect, for no number of finites can make up the Infinite; no accumulations of being can express Him who is the source of all being, therefore it is said that Brahm is both Being and Non-Being. This verbal contradiction pervades the whole of

Hindu Theology. "The Polytheism of the Vedas," says *Creuzer*, "is dissolved into Monotheism,* and all the names of the gods may be reduced to three. These are chiefly physical powers: fire, sun, and air; and these again go into the great soul. This great soul is sometimes called the sun, because it animates all which moves and is. It is the physical unity in all. There are many names sometimes for the same god, and of some gods nothing is affirmed, their name and nature is mystery. Such is the terrible Deva and the mysterious Om, which name belongs to all the gods, and is yet so sacred that no Hindu pronounces it. There are besides deities, which are portions of other deities, and sometimes the same god becomes many by the multitude of his incarnations or manifestations." The very vastness of the Hindu Mythology obliges it to be inconsistent. It is an effort to represent a Being who can only be grasped by an infinite thought. Were it consistent its failure would be still more signal, the many being but fractions of the One, and this One an Infinite Spirit. It therefore takes refuge in poetry, and struggles to utter by luxuriant similitudes, what language cannot with accuracy express.† The great soul animates and pervades all things. He speaks in the thunder, flashes in the lightning, roars in the cataract, glances in the sun, smiles in the moon, glitters in the stars, rolls in the ocean, sparkles in the fountain, reposes on the sleeping lake. He is imaged in the mountain. He whispers in the zephyrs, and murmurs among the leaves of the forest trees. He is one, and yet He is manifold. As the One no tongue can truly name Him—no thought worthily conceive Him. As the many He peoples the heavens, the earth, the air, and the waters, so that every region is full of gods, and everything that lives, and moves, and is, becomes

* Professor Wilson comes to the same conclusion respecting the theology of the Puranas. In the Introduction to his translation of the Vishnu Purana he says: "The Pantheism of the Puranas is one of their invariable characteristics, although the particular divinity, who is all things, from whom all things proceed, and to whom all things return, be diversified according to their individual sectarian bias. They seem to have derived the notion from the Vedas; but in them the one universal Being is of a higher order than a personification of attributes or elements, and however imperfectly conceived or unworthily described, is God. In the Puranas the one only Supreme Being is supposed to be manifest in the person of Siva or Vishnu, either in the way of illusion or of spirit, and one or other of these divinities is therefore, also, the cause of all that is, and is Himself all that exists."

† "That Divine Self is not to be grasped by tradition, nor by understanding, nor by all revelation; by him whom He, Himself, chooses, by him alone is He to be grasped—that Self chooses his body as His own."—UPANISHAD, QUOTED BY MAX MÜLLER.

a god. The fields are sacred, for Brahm is there; the rivers are worshipped, for Brahm lives in them. Brahma-putra, as its name implies, is the river of Father Brahm. The Ganges flowing down from the divine mountains, laden with the richest blessings of the great God of nature, is worshipped as itself divine. The beasts become sacred; and the images of the elephant, the ox, the goat, the hawk, the eagle, and the raven are found side by side with the idol gods of the Pantheon. Brahm is all things, and without Him things in themselves are but illusions: matter has no real existence—material forms are the forms of Brahm.

The Vedanta, or Vedic Commentaries mark the second era of Hinduism, when the spirit of reflection begins to distinguish between God and nature. They give prominence to the Monotheism of the Vedas, and at times protest against Polytheism and the worship of the natural elements. "The vulgar," says the Vedanta, "look for their gods in the water; men of more extended knowledge, in the celestial bodies; the ignorant, in wood, bricks, and stones; but learned men, in the universal soul." The soul of the universe now becomes the single object of worship. The Vedas had declared God "incomprehensible to reason, and inconceivable to imagination, compassed by no description, beyond the limits of the explication of the Vedas;" and again they had said "all that exists is indeed God." On these and similar passages the author of the Vedanta establishes his theology, commenting on the texts, explaining what seemed inconsistent with his interpretation, and reducing the whole, so to speak, to an analogy of faith. "God, he says, "is called by all names to denote the diffusive spirit of the Supreme Being equally over all creatures by means of extension, for in this way His omnipresence is established;" but yet "God is a Being more extensive than all the extension of space. He sees everything, though never seen; hears everything, though never directly heard. All material extension is clothed with His existence; for He is not only the efficient, but the material cause of the universe. He proceeds more swiftly than thought. He seems to advance, leaving behind human intellect, which strives to attain a knowledge of Him. He seems to move everywhere, though in reality He has no motion. He is distant from those who do not wish to know Him; but He is near those who earnestly seek Him. To know God is to feel that we do not know Him, and to suppose that we understand Him is to show our ignorance of Him. We see His works, and

therefore infer His existence; but who can tell *how* or *what* He is? He is something distinct from the universe, yet in some way the being of the universe is involved in His being. It is He that is the Eternal, the unchangeable, the ever-present. He applies vision and hearing to their respective objects. He is the splendor of splendors; the sun shines not with respect to Him, nor the moon, nor fire. As the illusive appearance of water, produced by the reflection of rays in the mirage, so the universe shines in Him—the real and intelligent spirit. The universe had its birth in Him; and as bubbles burst in the water, so shall it find its destruction in Him.” * “As from a blazing fire,” says the Atharva Veda, “proceed thousands of sparks of the same nature, so from the eternal Supreme Being various souls come forth, and again return to Him. He is immortal without form and figure, omnipresent and all pervading, unborn, without breath, or individual mind.”

Matter is called ignorance, because we know nothing about it; and illusion, because it professes to be something, while it is nothing. Creation is not, when considered as a thing. It is only when regarded as a manifestation of Brahm, its existence is due to emanation; it is the Eternal Being coming out of Himself. When He thinks, He becomes an object as well as a subject—that which is thought of, as well as that which thinks—as a man beholding himself in a mirror becomes the subject seeing, and the object seen, so is Brahm and creation: He projects His thought, and in it sees Himself as in a glass. That reflection of His being is one to Him; but to human beings the embodiment of His thought presents itself under a thousand modifications: hence we call the universe what it really is, an appearance; and this appearance is the out-shadowing of the Eternal Brahm.

Creation is not so much illusive in itself, as it is illusive to us. It has a real side which is divine: it is the thought of the Eternal Spirit—it is His speech—His *word* going forth. The Rig-Veda calls this *Vach*, or speech, the daughter of the primeval spirit—eternal, and yet transitory. “I uphold,” she says, “both the sun and the ocean, the firmament and the fire, both day and night. *Me* the gods render universally present everywhere: pervader of all beings; even I declare this myself, who am worshipped by gods and men. I make strong whom I choose—originating all beings—I pass like the breeze, I am above the heavens, beyond the earth, and

* Quoted by Romahun Roy.

what is the great One that am I?"* She lives eternally in Brahm, she is the instrument of creation, she presents herself throughout the universe as illusion; so that whatever we see is the voice of the creating God, and this voice is the thought of the eternal Spirit. The appearance of creation is the voice of the Creator, and that again is the volition of the Eternal. Around this doctrine of creation are clustered, not only the most abstruse of Hindu philosophies, but innumerable legends. There is not, however, on this subject, any more than on some others, a perfect agreement. Sometimes creation is the act of Brahm; at other times of the gods. Sometimes Brahm is represented as willing the creation; at other times it flows unconsciously from Him. In setting forth one view as the most prominent, we do not forget that others are also to be found. In the Vedanta we read that a point was reached in endless duration, when creation emanated from Brahm; in other places we read that Brahm resolved to create: probably the difference is only apparent. We do not expect the most exact language in hymns and legends; yet they all agree generally in this: that the things which Brahm created, He formed out of His own substance; and the reason given is, because there was no other substance from which He could form them. As the spider weaves its web from its own bowels, or as the tortoise protrudes its legs from the shell; so did Brahm weave or protrude creation. As milk curdles, as water freezes, as vapour condenses; so was the universe formed from the coagulation of the divine substance. These comparisons being derived from objects of sense have an air of materialism, which is not intended by the Brahmans who use them. They express nothing concerning the nature of substance, and must not be taken as exhaustive of the idea of creation. We have already seen that, though Brahm and creation are thus identified, the nature of Brahm is absolutely spiritual. In the hymn quoted above from the Rig-Veda the gods are said to be created after the world. This we may regard as the orthodox view; but, as the gods are the powers of Brahm manifested in nature, we can understand how the Brahmans often apparently reverse the order, and make the gods Brahm's agents, creators, and world-makers. The gods and the universe are thus one; and these again are Brahm in His objective being. To this meaning we may reduce the majority of the Brahmanical legends of creation. "In the

* Quoted by Dr. Williams—"Hinduism and Christianity Compared."

beginning of all things the universe clothed with water rested in the bosom of eternal Brahm. The world-creating power, or person of the Godhead, swam over the waters upon the leaf of a lotus, and saw with the eyes of his four heads nothing but water and darkness. Hence his self-contemplation, "Whence am I? Who am I?" He continued a hundred years of the gods in this self-contemplation without profit, and without enlightening the darkness, which gave him great uneasiness. Then a voice reached His ear, "Direct thy prayer to Baghavat, the Eternal Being." Brahma (this was the name of the person of the godhead), raised himself, and placed himself on the lotus in a contemplative position, and thought over the Eternal Being. Baghavat appears as a man with a thousand heads; Brahma prays: This pleases the Eternal—He disperses the darkness, and opens Brahma's understanding. But after the darkness had been dispersed Brahma saw in the exhibition of the Eternal, all infinite forms of the earthly world, as buried in a deep sleep. Thereupon the Eternal commands him again, "Brahma return to contemplation, and since, through penitence and absolution, thou hast desired the knowledge of my omnipotence, then will I give thee power to bring forth, and to develop the world, out of the life concealed, in my bosom. In another place Brahm is described as surrounding Himself with Maya (illusion); that is, joyful self-forgetfulness. He clothes Himself with it—it becomes, as it were, His garment. In this Maya, wherewith Brahm has encircled Himself, is desire—*desire* of creating; but in desire is love, and so far beauty. In relation to itself the Maya has true being; but, in relation to the Being of beings to the self-existent, to Brahm, it is only appearance: deception—illusion. World making is the sport of Brahm; creation is the play of the godhead, while God Himself is eternally at rest. The world, considered by itself, is a beautiful world, a choice form of art; but, placed over against the Eternal, it is nothing. We have here the first being, who is above all, and before all; and then we have love, which again has its existence in the Maya. Hence God is divided into the loving and the loved. And this separation is the original condition of all things. They are, and they are not. They exist only in and through separation. On the standing ground above separation they are not. Love is the world mother; but what she has brought forth is form only in appearance. Material things are but semblance forms, wizard gardens, which, with the wands of conjuration,

sink back into themselves. The One, that which is *Being* remains. The productions of the *Maya*, which are only appearance, change and vanish. So far as creation is *Brahm*, it has true being; without Him it is illusion, and non-being.

In this relation of the Supreme God and the gods—of *Brahm*, and the universe, we have the true explanation of the Indian *Trimurti*, which plays so distinguished a part in the later stages of Hindu worship. The early gods of the elements disappear before *Brahma*, *Vishnu*, and *Siva*; which at once represent *Brahm*, in His objectivity, as the creating, preserving, and destroying powers of nature. *Brahm* becomes *Bramha*; the universal soul becomes a person; the pervading spirit, a creator. This means that the universe emanates from *Brahm*, and becomes the first of the gods; hence the many passages in the Vedic Commentaries, which identify the universe with the body of *Brahma*, and the legend which refers the origin of the castes to four emanations of *Brahma*: the priests from his head, the warriors from his shoulders, the merchants from his belly, and the *Soudras* from his thighs. From him was born the spirit, the understanding, and all the senses; from him was produced the heaven, the light, the wind and water. His head is fire, his eyes the sun and the moon; the regions of heaven are his ears, his voice is the open *Vedas*. The world is his breath, at his feet is the earth; he is the internal spirit of all creatures.* *Brahma* is the *Macrocosm*; man is the *Microcosm*. The creating power of God is sometimes set forth by *Brahma* and *Vishnu* together. Two powers are placed in *Brahm*; the one centripetal, and the other centrifugal. The first is *Vishnu*. Whilst the god-head gives itself forth, the emanation seeks to return again to that from which it came. Its desires are towards the centre of being. The other power is *Brahma*, which is the spring of emanation. God by *Brahma* goes out of Himself. In creation He places Himself outside of God. There is a tendency in *Brahm* to turn from Himself—to step out of Himself, to deprive Himself; and every such deprivation is already a *minus* of God. This idea which evidently belongs to the *Vishnu* period, elevates *Vishnu* above *Brahma*; as the work of returning to God is higher than that of departing from Him—the reabsorbing power is deemed nobler than the act of creation. Here too, *Brahma* is a man, the prototype of men; but *Vishnu* is a God. In the older Vedic writings

* Quoted by Creuzer.

we only read of Brahma. *Creuzer* supposes that each person of the Hindu Trinity marks an era in Hindu worship. The first was that of pure Brahmanism, when men lived in holy innocence, and worshipped none but the creating god. He was an incarnate deity, the teacher of men, the first lawgiver, author of the immortal Vedas. He was worshipped with bloodless offerings—the fruits of the earth, and the milk of cows. But this primitive worship was soon swept from the earth; no traces can now be found of the temples of Brahma. To Brahmanism succeeded the worship of Siva. This was the reign of terror, when the worshippers performed cruel rites, and sought to appease the destroyer with blood. The era of Vishnu was a reformation of the worship of Siva, which was completed by Buddhism.

Each person of this *Trimurti* appears as the Supreme God, yet there are never wanting some traces of their relation to the powers and elements of nature. Their symbols hinted at this. To Brahma the earth was sacred, to Siva the fire, and to Vishnu the water. Of the being and work of each of these three gods, the Hindu writings are full. In the laws of *Menu*, we read that the invisible God created the five elements. First He created water, and gave it the power of moving. Through this power arose a golden egg which shone like a thousand suns, and in this was born Brahma, the self-existent—the great father of all reasonable beings. At this date we do not read of the Trinity, and Brahma is scarcely distinguished from Brahm. In another part of the “Laws of *Menu*” it is Brahm Himself who creates and manifests Himself in creatures. This universe was only darkness incomprehensible, invisible, unknown, and as if plunged in a profound sleep. Then the self-existent God impenetrable yet penetrating all things, reuniting the vital elements, suddenly dissipated the darkness. The spiritual, infinite, incomprehensible, and eternal Being—mysterious principle of all creation, revealed Himself in all His splendor.

It is in the Vedanta we must look to find the *Trimurti*, and there we find innumerable legends of their birth, life, and works. One gives them a mother named *Bhagavad*, who, expressing her joy at her own creation, dropped from her bosom three eggs, from which the three deities were produced.* Another legend says, “Brahm existed from all eternity in a

* Vans Kennedy says that *Creuzer* took this from Madame Polier, and that it is not found in the Vedanta. He also disputes the existence of some other legends cited by *Creuzer*.

form of infinite dimensions. When it pleased Him to create the world he said : ' Rise up O Brahma.' Immediately a spirit of the color of flame issued forth, having four heads and four hands. Brahma gazing round and seeing nothing but the immense image out of which he had proceeded, travelled a thousand years to understand its dimensions. But after all his toil he found himself as much at a loss as before. Lost in amazement Brahma gave over his journey, he fell prostrate and praised what he saw with his four mouths. The Almighty then in a voice like ten thousand thunders, was pleased to say 'Thou hast done well, O Brahma, for thou canst not comprehend me. Go and create the world.' The legend then describes how Brahma seeing the idea of things floating before his eyes, said, " Let them be," and all that he saw became real before him. Then Brahma was troubled lest creation should be annihilated, and addressing immortal Brahm, asked, " Who shall preserve these things which I behold." Then from Brahm's mouth issued a spirit of a blue color, and said aloud, " I will." This was Vishnu, the preserver. Brahma then commanded him to go and make animals and vegetables. When this was done, man was wanted to have dominion over the new made creation. Vishnu made some men, but they were such idiots that Brahma destroyed them. He then created four men from his own breath, but they could do nothing except praise Brahm, and therefore they likewise were destroyed. With this work of destruction Siva appeared. Thus Brahma, Vishnu, and Siva, together began to create, to preserve, and to destroy.

The following dialogue, also from the Vedanta,* gives nearly the same account of creation, besides touching on some other points of Hindu Divinity. The speakers are Brahma, who is called the wisdom of God, and Narud his son. Narud is reason, or the first of men, who according to one account of creation were created by the *Trimurti*. "*Narud* : ' O Father, thou first of God, thou art said to have created the world, and thy son Narud astonished at what he beholds, is desirous to be instructed how all these things were made.'—*Brahma* : ' Be not deceived my son. Do not imagine that I was the creator of this world, independent of the Divine Mover, who is the great original Essence and Creator of all things. Look therefore upon me only as the instrument of the Great Will and a part of His being, whom He called forth to execute His eternal designs.'—*Narud* : ' What shall we think of God ?'

* Quoted by Colonel Dow.

Brahma: 'Being immaterial, He is above conception; being invisible, He can have no form: but, from what we behold in His works, we may conclude that He is eternal, and omnipotent—knowing all things and present everywhere.'—*Narud*: 'How did God create the world?'—*Brahma*: 'Affection dwelt with God from all eternity. It was of three kinds: the creative, the preserving, and the destructive. The first is represented by *Brahma*; the second, by *Vishnu*; and the third, by *Shiblah* (*Siva*). You, O *Narud*, are taught to worship all the three in various shapes and likenesses as the creator, preserver, and destroyer.'—*Narud*: 'What dost thou mean, O Father, by intellect?'—*Brahma*: 'It is a portion of the great soul of the universe, breathed into all creatures to animate them for a certain time.'—*Narud*: 'What becomes of it after death?'—*Brahma*: 'It animates other bodies, and returns like a drop to that unbounded ocean from which it just arises.'—*Narud*: 'What is the nature of that absorbed state, which the souls of good men enjoy after death?'—*Brahma*: 'It is a participation of the divine nature where all passions are utterly unknown and where consciousness is absorbed in bliss.'—*Narud*: 'What is time?'—*Brahma*: 'Time existed from all eternity with God.'—*Narud*: 'How long shall the world remain?'—*Brahma*: 'Until the four jugs shall have revolved. Then *Rudra* (*Siva*) shall roll a comet under the moon, and shall involve all things in fire and reduce the world to ashes. God shall then exist alone, for matter will be totally annihilated.' "

In the *Puranas*, the doctrines of the *Vedanta* are repeated, but in many different forms. The essential and characteristic doctrines of the *Vedas* concerning the Divine Being reappear in all prayers, hymns, and legends. The One Supreme is everywhere acknowledged, but chiefly as manifested in one or other of the three persons in the *Trimurti*. *Brahma* is all things, comprehending in his own nature the spiritual and the natural. In the *Vishnu Purana*, *Vishnu* is all things, all gods, and all persons of the godhead. He is Creator, Preserver, and Destroyer. As lord of the elements, He creates, preserves, and destroys Himself. His form is infinite. He is the giver of all good, and the fountain of all happiness. He is the sacrifice and the sacrificial fires, the oblations and the mystic *Om*,* the *Vedas* and *Hari*, the object of all worship,

* "Om, or *Omkara*, is well known as a combination of letters invested by Hindu mysticism with peculiar sanctity. In the *Vedas* it is said to comprehend all the gods."—PROFESSOR WILSON.

the sun, the planets, the whole universe, the formed and the formless, the visible and the invisible. As the widespreading fig-tree is compressed in a small seed, so, at the time of dissolution, the whole universe will be compressed in Vishnu, as in its germ. As the fig-tree germinates from the seed, and becomes first a shoot, and then rises into loftiness; so the created world proceeds from Vishnu. As the bark and the leaves of the plantain tree may be seen in its stem; so may all things be seen in Vishnu, the stem of the universe. He is the essence of the gods and of the Vedas—of everything, and of nothing. He is night and day; He is time made up of moments, hours, and years; He is earth, sky, air, water, and fire; He is mind, intellect, individuality; He is gods and men, beasts, reptiles, trees, shrubs, and grasses; He is all things, great and small, all bodies, composed of atoms, and all souls that animate bodies.

Brahma having addressed the deities, proceeded along with them to the northern shores of the sea of milk, and with reverential words, thus prayed to the supreme Hari:

“We glorify Him who is all things, the Lord supreme over all, the unperceived, the smallest of the smallest, the largest of the largest of the elements, in whom are all things, from whom are all things, who was before existence, this god who is all beings, who is the end of ultimate objects, who is beyond final spirit, who is one with supreme Soul, who is contemplated as the cause of final liberation by sages anxious to be free. To Him whose faculty to create the universe abides in but a part of but the ten millioneth part of Him; to Him who is one with the inexhaustible supreme Spirit I bow, and to the glorious nature of the supreme Vishnu, which nor gods, nor sages, nor I, nor Sankara apprehend; that which the Yogis, after incessant effort, effacing both moral merit and demerit, behold, to be contemplated in the mystical monosyllable Om—the supreme glory of Vishnu, who is the first of all, of whom only one god the triple energy is the same with Brahma, Vishnu, and Siva.

“Thou art evening, night, and day; earth, sky, air, water, and fire; mind, intellect, and individuality. Thou art the agent of creation, duration, and dissolution; the master over the agent, in Thy forms, which are called Brahma, Vishnu, and Siva. Thou art gods, men, animals, deer, elephants, reptiles, trees, shrubs, creepers, climbers, and grasses: all things, large, middling, and small, immense or minute. Thou art all bodies whatsoever composed of aggre-

gated atoms. This, Thy illusion, beguiles all who are ignorant of Thy true nature; the fools who imagine soul to be in that which is not spirit. The notions, 'I am,' 'This is mine,' which influence mankind are but the delusion of the mother of the world, originating in Thy active energy."*

This universality of existence, which is ascribed to Brahma and Vishnu, is also ascribed to Siva. "The gods," says the Rudra Upanishad, "proceeded to the celestial abode of Rudra, and enquired 'Who art Thou?' He replied, 'I am, the fount and sole essence. I am and shall be, and there is nothing which is distinct from me.' Having thus spoken He disappeared, and then an unseen voice was heard saying, 'I am He who causeth transitoriness and yet remaineth for ever. I am Brahm; I am the east and the west, the north and the south; I am space and vacuum; I am masculine, feminine, and neuter; I am Savitri, the Gayatri, and all sacred verse; I am the three fires; I am the most ancient, the most excellent, the most venerable, and the mightiest; I am the splendor of the four Vedas, and the mystic syllable; I am imperishable and mysterious, but the revealer of mysteries; I am all that is, and all space is comprehended in my essence.'" In the Devi Upanishad the same attributes are ascribed to the terrible goddess.

The third era, according to *Creuzer*, is that of philosophy, when reason seeks to explain how God and nature are one. We have confined ourselves hitherto to the religious books of the Hindus, strictly so called, but there yet remains a large field of Hindu thinking in what is properly their philosophy. The history of mind in India corresponds to the same history in Europe. Every system that has appeared in the West has had its counterpart in Hinduism. There we have dogmatism, mysticism, materialism, idealism, and scepticism, in all their manifestations, and in all their stages of development. *M. Martin* even finds "Positivism,"† in the Rig-Veda. Sir William Jones compared the six leading philosophies of India, with the principal systems of the Greeks. The two of Nyaya have their counterpart in the Peripatetic and Ionian schools. The two of Mimansa correspond to the Platonic, and the two of Sankya to those of the Italics and Stoics.

* Wilson's "Vishnu Purana."

† Epicureanism would be a more appropriate name. The passage quoted by *M. Martin* is this: "Life and death follow each other. Let the invocation which to day we address to the gods be propitious to us. Let us give ourselves up to laughter, and the pleasures of the dance, and prolong our existence."

We noticed in the beginning that if God and the universe are one, if the universe be material, and that which we call matter has any reality in itself, the conclusion is, that the Deity is matter. There is no escape from this alternative but by declaring our ignorance of what matter is, or our conviction that it is not any true being. And this, in the majority of cases, is the declaration of Hinduism: yet the Indians like ourselves have their systems of materialism. The chief of these is the Sankya of Kapila, who has been reckoned an atheist. This is peculiarly the system of Hindu Rationalism. Setting aside the authority of the Vedas, Kapila substitutes for Vedic sacrifices, knowledge of the imperceptible One. We are to free ourselves from the present servitude and degradation, not by following the prescriptions of holy books, but by being delivered from our individuality, by ceasing to know ourselves as distinct from other things, and other things as distinct from us. Kapila did not mean to be an Atheist, but it has been inferred that he was one, from his making some indefinite principle which he called *Prakriti*, or nature, the first of things. What he meant by this principle may be open to many answers. It was the undefined eternal existence without parts or forms which produced all which we see and know. There is an intelligence indeed in nature, for nature lives, we see its presence in all thinking and sentient beings; but that intelligence is not the producing cause, it is itself produced. *Budha*, or intelligence, is not the first, but the second principle in nature; it depends on the organization of material particles. What is true of this world soul, is also true of the soul of man: it originates with the body, and with the body vanishes. *Kapila* describes the soul as the result of seventeen anterior principles. He places it in the brain, extending below the skull, like a flame which is elevated above the wick. It is the result of material elements, in the same way as an intoxicating drink is the result of chemical combination of its ingredients.*

The other Sankya bears the name of *Patanjali*, a disciple of Kapila. He agrees with his master in making knowledge,

† The Atheism of the Sankya of Kapila, has been disputed. He makes the great One to proceed from nature or matter, but it does not necessarily follow that this matter is visible or divisible. It may, as Professor Wilson conjectures, find its counterpart in the *first principle* of the Pythagoreans of the Platonists, and of Aristotle; and this Intellectual One, who proceeds from the *first principle*, does it not correspond to the "Mind" of Plato, and the "Intellect" of Aristotle? In Hesiod and Aristophanes the immortal gods are said to be produced from chaos: there is first matter as an indefinite first principle, then mind.

the means of deliverance from this present bondage ; carrying this principle to the extreme of mysticism, he inculcates an entire abstraction from all objects of sense, and a pure contemplation of the Deity alone. He exhorts all men to become *Yogis*, meditators upon God. *Patanjali* departed entirely from *Kapila* in his doctrines of matter and spirit. Regarding bodies as the result of soul, he leaned to idealism : admitting that matter exists as a reflection, an illusion, an appearance. The soul, he says, is placed above sensibility ; intelligence, above the soul ; being, above intelligence. This is that non-being without attributes, which is most truly Being, one and all things.

The Nyaya is divided into two schools : the physical and metaphysical. The author of the first is *Kanada*. Being a doctrine of atoms, it has been compared with the system of Democritus ; but the agreement is only in appearance. The atoms of *Kanada* were abstractions—mathematical or metaphysical points that had neither length, breadth, nor thickness. Though a physical system, it ended in idealism. *Kanada* judged that material substances had no reality but that derived from their qualities ; and these, again, were derived from the mind perceiving, and were not to be found in the object perceived. The author of the second Nyaya was *Gotama*. He does not concern himself much with matter, but discourses chiefly of mind. His great question is, "What is soul ?" He concludes that it is a principle entirely distinct from the body, and does not depend for its existence on any combination of elements. The treatise of *Gotama* is purely dialectical, and rivals in abstruseness and subtilty anything that is to be found in the Metaphysics of the West.

The third system is the Vedanta, which has two schools : the Parva Mimansa, and the Uttara Mimansa. The first, which is attributed to *Jamini*, is entirely practical, and seems to have no characteristic beyond the commendation of a virtuous life. The second was taught by *Vyasa*, and is the one chiefly intended when we speak of the Vedanta. This is, properly, the orthodox philosophy—the generally received exposition of Vedic doctrine. Here Brahm is the axis, the centre, the root, the origin of all phenomena. Mind is not here made a product of nature ; but nature is declared to be a product, or rather a mere manifestation, of mind. The true absorption of man is declared to be not into nature, but into the bosom of eternal Brahm. In the Vedanta Sara, or essence of the Vedanta, Brahm is called the universal

soul of which all human souls are a part. These are likened to a succession of sheaths which envelop each other like the coats of an onion. The human soul frees itself by knowledge from the sheath. But what is this knowledge? To know that the human intellect and all its faculties are ignorance and delusion. This is to take away the sheath, and to find that God is *All*. Whatever is not Brahm is nothing. So long as man perceives himself to be anything, he is in ignorance. When he discovers that his supposed individuality is no individuality, then he has knowledge. Brahm is the substance, we are his image, and the countenance of Brahm alone remains. Man must strive to rid himself of himself as an object of thought. He must be only a subject, a thought, a joy, an existence; as subject he is Brahm, while the objective world is mere phenomena—the garment or vesture of God.

In the Bhagavat Gita we have a beautiful illustration of the idealist philosophy of the Hindus. The Bhagavat Gita is an episode in the great national poem called the Mahabharatta. The subject of this poem is the quarrel of two branches of one great family. The hero, Arjuna, looks on his kinsmen whom he is about to slay, and his courage fails him. Krishna, an incarnation of Vishnu appears, and exhorts him not to fear to slay his kinsmen. The arguments addressed to Arjuna, are derived from the illusive nature of all existences except the divine, which being eternal none can injure. Krishna tells Arjuna that kinsmen, friends, men, beasts, and stones, are all one; that which to-day is a man, was formerly a vegetable, and may be a vegetable again. The principle of everything is eternal and indestructible; what then matters the rest? All else is illusion. If Arjuna will not meet his friends in battle, Krishna shows that he is deceived by appearances: he mistakes the shadow for the reality. At last Krishna reveals Himself and tells Arjuna that He appears not only in this form, but in all forms; for He is in everything and is everything. He is Creator, Preserver, Destroyer. He is matter, mind, and spirit. There is nothing greater than He is, and everything depends on Him, as the pearls depend upon the string which holds them. He is the vapour in the water, and the light in the sun and moon. He is the sound in the air, and the perfume in the earth. He is the brightness in the flame, the life in animals, the fervor in zeal—the eternal seed in nature—the beginning, the middle, and the end of all things. Among the gods He is Vishnu, and the sun among the stars. Among the sacred books He is the Canticles. Among

rivers He is the Ganges. In the body He is the soul, and in the soul He is intelligence. Among letters He is Alpha, and in words combined He is the bond of union. He is time eternal. He is that preserver whose face is turned to all sides. He is death which swallows up all, and He is the germ of those who do not yet exist. In this manner to show that He is all things, Krishna calls Himself by the chief names of all things.

The mystical knowledge of God whereby we become one with Him, is said to be a later introduction into Brahmanism; but it is as old as the oldest philosophies, and makes an essential part in them all. The ever repeated doctrine continually meets us, that so far as we exist we are Brahm, and so far as we are not Brahm, our existence is only apparent. To know God is to know ourselves; to be ignorant of Him is to live the illusive life. What then is our duty and destiny? To be united to Brahm, in other words, to realise that we are one with him. To contemplate merely the world of forms and the apparent existence, is to contemplate nothingness, to gaze upon delusion—to remain in vanity, yea to be vanity itself. We must soar above phenomena—above the brute instincts—above the doubts of reason—above intelligence.

We must separate ourselves from all which is subject to change, enter into our own being, unite ourselves to pure being, which is Brahm, the Eternal. He that hath reached this state is free from the bondage of individuality. He no more unites himself to anything. He has no more passions—consciousness is absorbed in bliss. He has neither fear, nor joy, nor desire, nor activity, nor will, nor thought. For him is neither day nor night, nor I, nor thou, nor known, nor knowing—all is gone. There remains only the universal soul; separated from the world, delivered from the illusions of Maya; he is one with the Eternal. He has found the object of his search, and is one with the object of his knowledge. He knows himself in the truth of his being. To reach this elevation is the end and object of all religion and all philosophy. To know ourselves in our true being is to know Brahm. To lose ourselves as to our illusory being is to find Brahm. Every man has a foretaste of this union in dreamless sleep, when the life spirit is simple and free; then speech with all its names, the eye with all its forms, the ear with all its tones, the understanding with all its images, returns to Brahm. Then those who at death are not prepared for this union must return to earth, some for one, and others for several times, till

the soul is sufficiently purified for the final absorption. Yes, the final absorption—for this is the blessed consummation of all things. Their coming forth from the Eternal is accounted for in many ways. The general burden of all is, that by creation came imperfection and evil,* and therefore we long for deliverance from creation, we long for that existence which was before creation was. That in all things which is real, being eternal, will remain united to Him who is eternal; that which is illusory will pass: Brahm will change His form, as a man changes his garment. As the tides return to the ocean, as the bubbles burst in the water, as the snow flakes mingle in the stream, so will all things be finally lost in the universe of being. Creator and creation are sleep *plus* a dream. The dream shall vanish, but the sleep shall remain. Individual life will mingle in that shoreless ocean of Being, that abyssal Infinite which no intellect can comprehend, and even Vedic language fails to describe—the eternal and unchangeable Brahm.†

2. **BUDHISM.**—The most widely received religion in the world is Buddhism. It originated about six centuries before Christ and claims to be a reformation of Brahmanism, a continuation, as we have already hinted, of the reformation of the Siva worship. The Budhists do not receive the Vedas, but follow their own sacred books which they call *Banas*, and which they say were written before the age of inspiration ceased. That was the time following the advent of their great

* Though all things proceed from Brahm, yet the Hindus admit, by a kind of contradiction, that they are not the same as Brahm. The human soul, for instance, is not of the same perfect purity as the *supreme Soul*; for when God willed to manifest Himself, then His nature was, in a certain degree, changed from its real and original state by the production of three essential qualities, which combining together gave rise to a consciousness of individual existence. It is this consciousness which is combined with the human soul, and which suffers pain and joy in the world, and is subject to reward and punishment in a future state: consequently the supreme Being, after willing the manifestation of this universe, becomes unconscious. The increment of consciousness which accrued to Him from creation forms no part of His essence, and it necessarily follows that whatever the human soul suffers from being united to it cannot affect the supreme Soul. The former is also supposed to be excluded from actual union with the latter, by being enclosed in a subtle vehicle, as air in a vessel, and it is not until the walls of the vehicle are dissolved that the human soul becomes homogeneous with the supreme Soul.
—SEE VANS KENNEDY.

† Vans Kennedy says that, in Hinduism an evil principle distinct from the Divine essence is utterly unknown. Perfection consists in complete quiescence, and the mere volition of the supreme Being to manifest Himself, being a change from this state was necessarily evil, and consequently communicated its nature to the effects produced by this volition, and hence it was that evil originated.

teacher, Sakya Muni, the historical Budha. Brahmanism and Buddhism part here. The Hindus admit a Budha, who was the ninth incarnation of Vishnu, but they reject the claims of Sakya Muni to be this Budha. There are many Budhas, some of celestial origin who are called by a name which means parentless, others are men who have been elevated to Budha-hood. But the greatest of all is this Sakya Muni, who is regarded as the founder of Buddhism. His history is overgrown with legends, yet a few things are regarded as facts. He was a prince who early saw the vanity of all that belongs to earth, of even what falls to a prince. He turned his thoughts from the visible world to the invisible. This transitory life appeared worthless when compared with the unending life of which his highest thought was only a negation of all that is. He renounced the world and became a Brahman. By a long course of study and severe mortification in the time of his noviciate, he sought that knowledge, which according to Brahmanical teaching, would free his soul from the finite and the personal. When he had reached the absorbed state he declared that knowledge was not enough, that we must add to it a sense of right, and a love of what is good and true. He saw, too, the inconsistency of Brahmanism in denying that the Soudras could rise to the absorbed state, while it made all human souls portions of the universal soul. Like all great reformers, Sakya Muni pushed the popular doctrines of his times to their legitimate conclusions, and thus swept away inconsistencies that others did not venture even to look in the face. The Divinity of man was a part of Brahmanism, why then should there be Soudras? If man is divine he is capable of divine thoughts, so reasoned Budha, and went forth to break down all distinctions of caste, to hold forth eternal blessedness as offered to all conditions of men, to proclaim a gospel to the poor Soudra as well as to the twice born Brahman. This gospel was a declaration of the wretchedness of life and a belief in something that was better than life; at its foundation was the doctrine of transmigration. Our sufferings, which he said sprang from our passions, were declared to be punishments for sins committed in former states of being. We are troubled, restless, tossed about on the sea of life. Our aim then should be to extinguish our passions, to free ourselves from their bondage, to find rest, but where shall we find it? In annihilation, in non-existence, in being free from that existence which is itself a punishment for sin.

The feeling in which Buddhism originates is not peculiar to India. It is found wherever men are found. There is no man who has not at some moment felt it. We hear it in the sad exclamation of Solomon: "Vanity of vanities; all is vanity;" in the words of the Greek poet, who said: "the best is not to be born;" and of a modern poet who, lamenting the condition of the poor, addressed death as "the poor man's dearest friend." The soliloquy of Hamlet was the essence of Buddhism: "Oh that this too, too solid flesh would melt."

Though the feeling of the vanity of life be universal, the Buddhist's mode of deliverance is peculiar. The Brahman did call his God Being, and the final absorption was into the eternal and unchangeable Essence; but the Buddhist looks and longs for pure nothingness. To other men non-existence is the most terrible of all things—the loss of being that from which we naturally shrink, except in moments of the deepest sorrow; but to the Buddhist annihilation is the consummation of blessedness. Men die, but that is not their end; so long as sins are unatoned for, they must be re-born into existence. *Nirvana* is the full deliverance when the soul is destined no longer to be. It is that death which is followed by no birth and after which there is no renewing of the miseries of existence. Nirvana is beyond sensation and the world of change. What is in Sansara, or the transient world, is not in Nirvana; and what is in Nirvana is not in Sansara. In Sansara is coming and going, change and motion, fullness and manifoldness, combination and individuality. In Nirvana is rest and stillness, simplicity and unity. In the one is birth, sickness, age, and death, virtue and vice, merit and demerit; in the other complete deliverance from all conditions of existence. Nirvana is the bank of deliverance nodding to him who drinks in the stream of Sansara—the sure haven to which all souls are directing their course who are seeking deliverance from the ocean of sorrows—the free state which furnishes an asylum to those who have broken the chains of existence, and snapped the fetters that bind to the transient life. The soul goes through its transitory existences till the source of re-birth is exhausted—till it can no longer be re-born, and therefore no longer die. The *I* is extinguished as plants no longer watered, as trees whose roots have been dug up from the earth, or as the light fades when the oil of the lamp fails.

This universe, though called *being*, is less than *non-being*; for the one is nothing while it professes to be a reality, the other is what it professes to be. Being is but the image of

non-being. The one is the shadow, the other the substance. Sansara is transient—it is in truth nothing; and, more than that, it is a nothing of phenomena—a deception. But Nirvana is the unchangeable, the consistent, the true nothing. Sansara has no being—its form is illusion—its reality may be destroyed. Nirvana has indeed no being, but it annihilates all deception, and liberates from all evil. But whence is this universe—this existence—which is the cause of all sorrow? We do not know—Budha alone knows—probably it has always been. We only know the round of existence—the circle of phenomena. We plant a seed, from it springs a tree; the tree bears fruit, the fruit bears a seed; from the seed springs again a tree; or a bird lays an egg, from it arises another bird, this bird lays another egg, from it arises again a bird: and so it is with the world, and with all worlds. They have come from earlier worlds, and these from others that were earlier still. Existence unfolds itself, forms appear and disappear, but being remains unchanged. Life succeeds life, but nothing is lost and nothing is gained. Being is a circle that has neither beginning nor end. As the moisture is drawn up into the clouds, and poured down upon the earth, to be drawn up again by the sun's rays; so being undergoes its perpetual and manifold evolutions in the midst of which it remains unchanged. One individual falls here, and one there; but others rise to replace these, and thus the procession advances in a circle which never ends. We say "never ends," but if it were asked if these worlds are to roll on for ever, the true Buddhist would decline to answer. He does not know if this succession will be eternal, any more than if it has been eternal; but he recognizes a necessity in the world which connects existence with the merit and demerit of animated souls. Every deed, be it good or bad, continues to work through infinite space, and brings with it its inevitable fruit until the effect be removed through perfect freedom from sin. The present destiny of every individual—his happiness or misery, sorrow or joy, birth, death, or condition in life—is but the ripe fruit of all his actions which he has committed in his many previous lives. This same power moves the universe: its destruction and renewal is but the working of the merit and demerit of animated beings.

Brahmanism has often an atheistical sound, but Buddhism more. If we examine only the surface, or if we confine ourselves to the mere positive teaching of Sakya Muni, we might be led to the conclusion that Buddhism is a simple

Atheism, and indeed this is the judgment of some learned Europeans who have spent long years in the study of Buddhism. But looking at it as we do, after analysing Brahmanism and finding there its roots and germs, we have a guide with which our present knowledge of Buddhism in itself could not supply us. That *Nirvana*,* or state of annihilation for which the Buddhist longs, is to him annihilation only so far as it is opposed to the present existence. It is non-existence, in the sense that it is the only real existence. The Buddhist renounces the life of sense, passion, and consciousness, for that of pure bliss, where he becomes a Budha, and lives the life of intelligence. He receives Budha-hood, or, as it is otherwise expressed, he becomes one with Adi-Budha.—that is Intelligence freed from all limits—the human intellect in its infinity. All Budhas are in reality but one, and the great object of the Buddhist's austerities is to lose himself in this one Budha; the very meaning of the word is intelligence. It is the soul of the universe, the one only substance beside which all else is phenomena. We have here a repetition of thoughts pre-eminently Brahmanical, but under new forms and with new names.†

* Buddhism, in spite of its apparent hopelessness, is by no means a gospel of despair. Its general teaching is universally practical. Those who have become Budhas and are themselves freed from existence, are labouring to free others, which shows that their Nirvana is not annihilation as we understand that word; and though little or no worship is directed to the supreme God, those men who have reached Budha-hood are objects of worship. Of all Heathen religions the moral precepts of Buddhism come nearest to Christianity. Some of these concerning riches, and the difficulty of the rich entering Nirvana, are almost in the words of Christ. The following precepts have something of Christianity in them: "To honour father and mother is better than to serve the gods of heaven and earth." "Brahm is with that family in which father and mother will be perfectly honoured by their sons." "To wait a moment silently with one's self is better than to bring offerings every year for hundreds of months."

† There are two kinds of Budhists: those of Ava and Ceylon, and the Budhists of Nepaul. The latter only are considered Theists; their God is Adi Budha. Their worship approaches nearer to Brahmanism. They have also a Trinity of persons in the Divine Nature: Budha, pure light, or intelligence; Dharma, matter; and Sanga, the mediating influence between Budha and Dharma. The Jaines are also reckoned a sect of Brahmanical Budhists. Though most writers on Buddhism have peremptorily affirmed that it is a system of Atheism, it is probable that a better acquaintance with Buddhism will show their mistake. Sakya Muni renounced the externals of Brahmanism, but he did not renounce its spirit; and it is generally admitted that the later Budhists admitted a supreme Deity. "The educated Lamas say, that Budha is the independent Being, the principle and end of all things. The earth, the stars, the moon—all that exists is a partial and temporary manifestation of Budha. All has been created by Budha in this sense, that all comes from Him, as light from the sun."—HUC AND GURTE's "TRAVELS IN TARTARY."

The schools of philosophy so far as doctrines are concerned are common to Brahmins and Buddhists. They are the heirlooms that ancient India has handed down from generation to generation. Forms of religion, yea, religions themselves may change, yet there are thoughts belonging to nations which reappear in all religions. The Buddhists have their materialists, who, like Kapila, ascribe intelligence to matter; who see in the beauty of the world, not the wisdom of God, but the wisdom of the inherent powers of nature which they call God. They have also the representatives of Epicurus, who admit that God is an immaterial Being, and yet deny that He either rules the world or cares for it. Some believe Him to be alone eternal and the sole cause of all things; others add a co-equal and co-eternal principle of matter, and derive all things from the joint co-operation of these two eternal principles; but the current of Buddhist philosophy is idealistic.*

For subtlety of thought and extravagance of speculation the Buddhists surpass even the Brahmins. What is a body? a Buddhist will ask; and he will answer by showing that a body is a spirit, or perhaps only an illusion of the mind which thinks, or the senses which perceive. He will argue that, as we can only know that any external object exists by perception, if perception ceases, how know we but the supposed existence of the object ceases with it? A body is composed of atoms; when these change the body changes, when the body is reduced to atoms it has ceased to exist. What then is a body? At the foundation of all existence

* Koeppen says, the Buddhists have no cosmogony, only a cosmology. They do not relegate the world to a first cause, for outside the Becoming is the Nothing. There is no causal nexus between the actual visible world and the first Actor. Four things, say the Buddhists, are immeasurable: the word of Budha, space, the multitude of animate beings, and the number of worlds. Numberless worlds move in eternal space. The world system is divided into three worlds: that of desire, that of form, and the formless; and these worlds, in all their degrees, from the highest heaven to the lowest hell, are peopled with animated beings, whose first creation is not explained. Is the soul something eternal, and does it keep its identity in its wanderings? Yes—at least this is the doctrine received by the North Buddhists. Nirvana is for the disciples of Budha the highest good, the last goal, the eternal safety. How can man reach deliverance is the first question of all Indian philosophy? When man returns to Brahm, answer the orthodox Brahmins—when the soul, knowing itself, is separated from nature, answer the Sankya philosophers—when man goes to Nirvana, says the Buddhist.

Koeppen, also maintains that the Buddhists are Atheists, and translates Dharma as doctrine, denying that the Trinity of the Buddhist has any affinity to the Trinity of the Brahmins, the Christians, or the Philosophers. It is simply Budha and his doctrine with the relation between them.

there must be a something. When we see a tree, we infer a root; so when we see a body, we infer a substratum. What is it? We do not know, and therefore the Buddhist philosopher calls it ignorance. This ignorance is that other co-eternal principle of which all things are formed, Dharma or matter. But it vacillates between something and nothing, with a close approach to the latter, even if it be a something. The Buddhist leaves it under the significant appellation of the unknown something. In the universe there is obviously the manifestation of a mind—this mind is Budha. We see an animating power making itself visible, but of its origin we know no more than we know of the other unknown. Hence the conclusion that they are co-existent and co-eternal, for if matter is anything it must have existed always, it being impossible for the aggregate of being ever to have been less than it is. Budha is then the reality of matter—the substratum of all existence.

The materials of this Chapter have been gathered from the translations of parts of the Vedas in the "Oriental Translation Society's" Publications, Professor Wilson's translation of the Vishnu Purana, an English version of the Baghavat Gita, a French translation of the "Laws of Menu," and the English tracts of Romahun Roy, with the works of Maurice, Colebrooke, Moore, Coleman, and Sir William Jones. The Author has chiefly followed Creuzer, but he has been largely indebted to Vans Kennedy on Indian Mythology, to Mrs. Spier's "Life in Ancient India," and to the admirable work of Dr. Rowland Williams. On the special subject of Buddhism the authorities chiefly followed are Spence Hardy's Manual, S. Hilaire's "*Budha et le Budhisme*," and Koeppen's "Die Religion des Budha."

CHAPTER II.

PERSIAN, EGYPTIAN, AND GREEK RELIGIONS.

IN the light of the Indian religions we may interpret all the religions of antiquity. They differ, and yet they are alike. We cannot determine if the one sprang from the other, or if each is a natural growth of the religiousness of man; but they have all a fundamental likeness. Worship of the powers of nature is the origin of them all, and as the mind expands worship of nature in its infinitude, including consciously or unconsciously, the whole conceivable assemblage of being as shadowing forth a Being infinite and inconceivable, whom we can neither know nor name; hence on the one hand a Polytheism, and on the other, alongside of it, a Monotheism. The Chaldeans and the Syrians worshipped the sun and moon. They had their gods and idols, their images, and amulets; yet the higher minds worshipped the one God. While the philosophers contemplated the Infinite, the multitude idolized the finite. After Brahmanism, the chief religions of the ancient world are those of Persia, Egypt, and Greece.

1. THE PERSIAN RELIGION. — Of the antiquity of the religion of the Persians we cannot speak with certainty† The sacred books called the Zend Avesta, are the chief sources of information; but these are only a fragment of the original scriptures—part of one of the twenty-one divisions into which

* Nearly two thousand families of the fire worshippers are still found in Persia where they are called Guebres. In India, whither they were driven by the followers of Mahomet in the seventh century, they are still a numerous sect. In Bombay they have three magnificent temples in which the sacred flame burns day and night. "The Parsees," says Niebuhr, "followers of Zerdusht or Zoroaster, adore one God only, eternal and almighty. They pay, however, a certain worship to the sun, the moon, the stars, and fire, as visible images of the invisible Divinity. Their veneration for the element of fire induces them to keep a sacred fire constantly burning, which they feed with odoriferous wood, both in the temples and in the houses of private persons."

they were divided. The Zend Avesta was written or collected by Zoroaster, the great prophet of Persia, who may have been contemporary with Budha five or six centuries before the Christian era. It is, however, generally admitted that portions of the Zend Avesta writings are of much more ancient date than the time of Zoroaster.

The Parsees both from their language and mythology are classed with the Indians as members of the great Aryan family, and as they inhabited the birth place of the human race it is probable that the religion of Persia is the oldest in the world. When we compare it with Brahmanism we find each possessing a sufficiently distinct individuality of its own. The ingenious mythologer will find many points of resemblance, but the general student will be more struck with their difference.

Brahmanism is more metaphysical; Parseeism more ethical. The spirit of the one is contemplation; that of the other, activity. The Indian is passive and speculative; the Persian is not without a speculative tendency, but he is more concerned to oppose the forces of evil which are in the world, and to subdue which he feels to be the vocation of man. To the degree that Parseeism is ethically strong, it is removed from what is called Pantheism, but the speculative side claims our attention, both for its own sake, and for its subsequent history and its connection with other systems of religion and philosophy.

Much has been written, not only in France and Germany, but in England, on the infinite and impersonal God of the old Persian religion. His name is *Zeruane Akerne*, time without bounds, or beginningless time. The idea of His existence is simultaneous in the mind with the ideas of infinite time and infinite space. He is the Being that must constitute eternity and infinity. That the Persian had this idea of an inexpressible Being who is above all the gods, as Brahm is above the Trimurti, may be considered as settled. But it appears that the name by which this Being is known to European Mythologers is a mere mistranslation of a sentence in the Zend Avesta. *Zeruane Akerne* is not a name as recent Persian scholars have shown: it simply means infinite time.* The infinite Being of the Persians was nameless, but sometimes called by the names of all the gods. He becomes

* The passage is, "Spento-Mainyus (Ormuzd) created, and He created in infinite time (*zeruane akerne*).

personal. He is *Ormuzd*, god of light; * *Mithras*, the reconciler between light and darkness; *Honover*, the Word of Him who is eternal wisdom, and whose speech is an eternal creation. *Hesychius* calls Mithras the first God among the Persians. In his conference with Themistocles, Artabanus describes Mithras as that god who covers all things. Porphyry, quoting from Eubulus, concerning the origin of the Persian religion, speaks of a cave which Zoroaster consecrated in honour of Mithras, the Maker and Father of all things. It was adorned by flowers, and watered with fountains, and was intended as an image, or symbol, of the world as created by Mithras. The same Porphyry records that Pythagoras exhorted men chiefly to the love of truth, for that alone could make them resemble God. He had learned, he said, from the Magi that God, whom they called Ormuzd, as to his body resembled light, and as to his soul, truth. *Eusebius* quotes from an old Persian book as the words of Zoroaster, that "God is the first Being incorruptible and eternal, unmade and indivisible, altogether unlike to all His works, the principle and author of all good. Gifts cannot move Him, He is the best of the good, and the wisest of the wise. From Him proceed law and justice." The Chaldean oracles, ascribed to Zoroaster, call God "the One from whom all beings spring." On this passage Psellus, the scholiast, says, "All things whether perceived by the mind or by the senses, derive their existence from God alone, and return to Him, so that this oracle cannot be condemned, for it is full of our doctrine."

This original impersonal unity created Ormuzd, who thus becomes the chief of gods. He is the living personal Deity, first begotten of all beings, the resplendent image of Infinitude the being in whose existence is imaged the fulness of eternal time and infinite space. As the manifestation of the impersonal, He is infinite—none can measure Him, none can set bounds to His will or His omnipotence. He is pre-eminently Will, altogether perfect, almighty, infinitely pure and holy. Of all things in heaven, He is supreme; of all things, He is

* "The Persians invoked the whole 'circle of the sky,' as Zeus Patroüs (probably Ormuzd). It has been assumed that the general names which figure at the head of the old theogonies, such as Uranus, were refinements placed by speculation before the gods of popular belief; yet the arrangement is justified by the consideration that nothing but a general idea could have answered the emotions of the first men: nature was deified before man. 'These,' says Philo, 'are the real objects of Greek worship: they call the earth Ceres; the sea, Poseidon; the air, Here; the fire, Hephaistos; the sun, Apollo.'"—MACKAY'S "PROGRESS OF THE INTELLECT."

the ground and centre. The sun is His symbol, yet the sun is but a spark of the unspeakable splendor in which He dwells. Whatever the original One is, that is Ormuzd—infinite in light, in purity, in wisdom. But as the first begotten of the Eternal, his duration is limited to 12,000 years. As a personal deity, he is finite—he is a king, and has a kingdom which is not universal, for it is opposed by the kingdom of Ahriman.

It has been commonly believed that the Persians worshipped two gods. This is the account given by Mahometan and Christian writers, but the Persians themselves have always denied it. They are not Dualists, but Monotheists on the one side and Polytheists on the other. Ormuzd alone is worshipped as the supreme God. His kingdom is co-extensive with light and goodness. It embraces all pure existences in earth and heaven.

Ormuzd's domain has three orders. The first is the *Amshaspands*, or seven immortal spirits, of which Ormuzd is himself one. He created the other six, and rules over them. The second order is the twenty-eight *Izeds*, and the third an innumerable number of inferior spirits called the *Fereurs*. The *Izeds* are the spiritual guardians of the earth. By them it is blessed and made fruitful. They are also judges of the world and protectors of the pious. Every month and every day of the month is under the guardianship of one of the *Amshaspands* or *Izeds*. Even every hour of the day has an *Ized* for its protector; they are the watchers of the elements. The winds and the waters are subject to them. The *Fereurs* are without number, because Being is without bounds.

They are co-extensive with existence; sparks as it were of the universal Being, who, through them, makes Himself present always and everywhere. The *Fereurs* are the ideals—prototypes or patterns of things visible. They come from Ormuzd, and take form in the material universe. By them the one and all of nature lives. They perform sacred offices in the great temple of the universe. As high priests they present the prayers and offerings of Ormuzd. They watch over the pious in life, receive their departing spirits at death, and conduct them over the bridge that passes from earth to heaven. The *Fereurs* constitute the ideal world, so that everything has its *Fereur*, from Ormuzd down to the meanest existence. The Eternal or Self-existent expresses Himself in the almighty Word, and this expression of universal being is the *Fereur* of Ormuzd. The law has its *Fereur*, which is its

spirit. It is that which is thought by the Word as God. In the judgment of Ormuzd, Zoroaster's Fereur is one of the most beautiful ideals, because Zoroaster prepared the law.

But there is another kingdom besides that of Ormuzd, king of light. There is the kingdom of Ahriman, Lord of darkness. He is not worshipped as a god, but he is in great power in the world. The effort of the Persian to solve the problem of evil is seen in his idea of the kingdom of darkness. It emerges face to face with the kingdom of light. There is not the hopelessness of human existence which we find in Buddhism; but there is the declaration that evil is inseparable from finite being. The old question had been asked "What is evil?" How did He who created light also create darkness? If He were good and rejoiced to make the kingdom of goodness, how has he also made the kingdom of evil? The answer is:—It did not come from the will of the eternal. The creation of the kingdom of evil and darkness was the inevitable result of the creation of the kingdom of light and goodness. As a shadow accompanies a body, so did the kingdom of Ahriman accompany that of Ormuzd. The two kingdoms, though opposed to each other, have yet a similar organization. The one is the counterpart of the other. At the head is *Ahriman*. Then seven *Erz-Dews*, and then an innumerable multitude of *Dews*. These were all created by Ahriman, whose great and only object was opposition to the kingdom of Ormuzd. When light was created, then Ahriman came from the south and mingled with the planets. He penetrated through the fixed stars and created the first *Erz-dew*, the demon of envy. This *Erz-dew* declared war against Ormuzd, and then the long strife began. As on earth beast fights with beast, so spirit warred with spirit. Each of the seven *Erz-dews* has his special antagonist among the *Amshaspands*. They come from the north and are chained to the planets; but as powers and dignities in the kingdom of Ahriman they receive the homage of the inferior *Dews*, and are served by them as the *Izeds* are served by the *Fereurs*. The existence of the kingdom of darkness is an accident in creation; a circumstance arising from the Infinite positing Himself in the finite. He permits evil to continue; not because it is too strong for Him, but that out of it He may educe a greater good. The limitation will be finally removed. The discord between light and darkness will cease. The reconciler will appear, and then shall begin an eternal kingdom of light without shadow, and purity without spot. The spirits of Ahriman shall be

annihilated. According to some representations, their chief shall be annihilated with them; but others think he shall continue to reign without a kingdom. Now, the Izeds wait for departing souls and preserve them for the final day. They shall then be brought forth to be purified with fire. They shall pass through mountains of burning lava, and come forth without sin or stain. Ahriman shall be cast into darkness, and the fire of the burning metals shall consume him. All nature shall be renewed. Hades shall flee away. Ahriman is gone. Ormuzd rules. The kingdom of light is one and all. But, who is the reconciler? Mithras, the human god. He is God, and yet he is in the form of man. All the attributes of Ormuzd are gathered up into a human form and make Mithras. He is fire—He is light—He is intelligence—the light of Heaven. To the Persian, the end of all religion is to become light. In all nature he strives for the victory of the good over the evil. He craves light for the body and light for the soul—light to guide his household—light to rule the state. As the symbol of all that is good in creation, his cry is, light! light! more light!

Mithras is the giver of light. But how is he to be distinguished from Ormuzd, who rules over the kingdom of light? This is not so easy to answer. It would perplex the mythologer to find the place of Mithras in the Persian Pantheon; yea, to find a place for him at all, without giving him some of the attributes of Ormuzd, just as Ormuzd had to get some of the attributes of the ineffable One. But the perplexity of the mythologer matters nothing. It is enough for the Persian that Mithras is the mediator—the human god or the human side of God. It is enough that He is light; the Creator of light; the grand wrestler for light against darkness, and that he will finally win the victory, for which the disciple of Zoroaster waits and longs. The sun must be His image. He has kindled that globe of fire; it is a reflection of His splendor. He is the heavenly light that came forth from the Eternal, and he is the principle of material light and material fire; therefore the Persian says in his offerings to the sacred flame, "Let us worship Mithras."

When the finite world was created, the darkness placed itself in opposition to Mithras, but this opposition is posited only in time. It is the strife of day and night; the light side of the year striving with the dark side; piety struggling with impiety; virtue with vice. The Eternal only willed the light, but the darkness arose, and as the world emanated from Him, He cannot

leave it. As Mithras, He mediates and works to hasten the victory. We see the great sun fighting and wrestling; every year, yea, every day he obtains a fresh victory, and purifies himself from the spots of darkness. Is not this Mithras? What other power is in that sun but the intelligible light which is fighting against darkness? There the mighty principle of right is struggling for victory; there glow sparks of that eternal splendor which is too strong for darkness, and before which all spots must disappear, and all shadows flee away. The kingdom of darkness shall itself be lightened with heaven's light. The Eternal will receive the world back again into Himself. The impure shall be purified, and the evil made good through the mediation of Mithras the reconciler of Ormuzd and Ahriman. Mithras is the good, his name is love. In relation to the Eternal he is the source of grace; in relation to man he is the life-giver and mediator. He brings the word as Brahma brings the Vedas, from the mouth of the Eternal. It is he that speaks in the prophets; he that consecrates in priests; he is the life of the sacrifice and the spirit of the books of the law. In heroes he is that which is heroic; in kings that which is kingly; in men he is man. *

* Creuzer gives a representation of Mithras from old Persian sculpture. It is a young man about to plunge a knife into the equinoctial bull. The young man is the god Mithras. God when condescended to the limits of time and space, becomes incorporated in the world, identifies Himself with its perishable nature. Thus by a sort of self-sacrifice, originating life, year after year, the life of nature falls a victim to the seasons.

In India the notion of cosmogony was annually commemorated in the *Asvamedha*, or horse-sacrifice. The horse being a general offering to the sun-god among the natives of upper Asia, and in this instance emblematic of the universe or of universal life embodied in creation. Its members represented the parts of nature; its blood, the principle of life, poured out from the beginning. The idea of sacrifice, which in its primal type was the outpouring of the universal into the particular, was the resolution of the partial into the universal. The Sanscrit name for sacrifice means union with heaven. The union might be either the original outpouring of the Divine Spirit into the world, or the return of these emanations to their source. The commemorative sacrifices of the Magi, in which the life alone was considered as the appropriate oblation to the source of all existence, were symbolical imitations of the Divine procedure, in which death is ever the antecedent and condition of life, as the seed perishes within the ground, and the gloom of winter precedes the flowers of spring. Each year Mithras kills the bull afresh; thus restoring nature to her prime, and liberating the imprisoned germs of fertility. But the annual revolution of the seasons is only a type of the great comical revolution of time. He is the sun physically; and morally intelligence. He dispels the darkness. This warfare is carried on through the instrumentality of the "Word," that ever living emanation of the Deity, by virtue of which the world exists, and of which the revealed formularies incessantly repeated in the liturgies of the Magi, are but the expression. Ormuzd is himself the

Creation is sometimes ascribed to Mithras, and sometimes to Ormuzd. God rises and speaks the word "Honover." Through this word all beings are created. The progress of creation advances as Ormuzd continues to pronounce the word, and the more audibly he speaks the more creation comes into being. From the invisible heaven which he inhabits he created the surrounding heaven in the space of forty-five days. In the middle of the world, under the dwelling of Ormuzd, the sun is placed. Then the moon arises, and shines with her own light. A region is assigned to her, in which she is to produce verdure, and give warmth, life, and joy. Above this is placed the heaven of the fixed stars, according to the signs of the zodiac. Then the mighty high spirits were created—the Amshaspands and the Izeds. In seventy days the creation of man is completed, and in three hundred and seventy-five days all which is, is created by Ormuzd and Ahriman.

Honover, the creative word; "I am," or "Let it be," is the bond which makes the all one. It unites earth to heaven—the visible to the invisible—the ideal to the real. A period may be assigned for creation, but in truth creation is eternal. Ormuzd has been always creating. From moment to moment in eternal ages the word was spoken by the Infinite, by the Amshaspands, by the Izeds, by the Fereurs, by all spirits throughout nature. It is the mystery in and by which the ideal world has its existence. It is the ground of all beings—the centre of all life—the source of all prosperity. Zoroaster's law is the embodiment of the law of Ormuzd; hence the Zend Avesta is itself called the living word.

In this mysterious *Honover*, the originals and patterns of visible things existed eternally. Here we catch a glimpse of the meaning of the symbolic worship of Persia. Regarding all

living Word. He is called first-born of all things; express image of the Eternal—very light of very light—the Creator, who by the power of the word which he never ceases to pronounce, makes in 365 days, the heavens and the earth. Mithras is the Ormuzd-descended hero appointed to speak the word in heaven and announce it to men. Between life and death, sunshine and shade, he is the present exemplification of the primal unity, from which all beings arose, and into which, through his mediation, all contraries will be absorbed. His annual sacrifice is the passover of the Magi—a symbolical atonement—a pledge of moral and physical regeneration. He created the world in the beginning, and as at the close of each successive year he sets free the current of life to invigorate a fresh circle of being, so in the end of all things. He will bring the weary sum of all ages as a hecatomb before God; releasing by a final sacrifice the soul of nature from her perishable flame, to commence a brighter and purer existence.

visible things as copies of the invisible, the ideal was worshipped through the sensible. Prayers were addressed to fire and light, to air and water, because the originals of these were in the word of Ormuzd. But chiefly to fire—temples were erected for its consecration, liturgies framed for its worship; sacred fire was carried before the king; it burned religiously in all houses and on all mountains. Not that adoration was directed to the mere material element, but to that divine and heavenly existence of which fire was the copy, the symbol, the visible representation. What is fire? Manifested spirit; matter in its passage to the unseen. What is light? Who can describe that splendor which irradiates the world? Is it not the outbeaming of the majesty of Ormuzd, the effulgence of the intellect of the infinite, all-embracing One. This symbolism was seen in all nature, and in all forms of the social and civil life of the Persian. The Iranian monarchy was a copy of the monarchy of the universe. It had its seven orders, corresponding to the seven Amshaspands. It had ranks and gradations, which all blended into one. As with the state, so with the family; it too was fashioned after the pattern of things heavenly. On the same principle all animals were divided between Ormuzd and Ahriman. They were classed as useful and injurious, clean and unclean. As the kingdoms of light and darkness had their chiefs, so had the animal kingdoms their protectors and leaders. The unicorn represented the pure beasts of Ormuzd, while the symbol representative of the animal kingdom of Ahriman was a monster—in part a man, in part a lion, and in part a scorpion. The watching and far-seeing spirits were symbolized by birds. These belonged to the pure creation, and were enemies to Ahriman. Ormuzd was represented by the hawk and the eagle, whose heads were supposed to be images of eternal time. The dragon-serpent is Ahriman; his spirits are dews, and their symbols the griffin, inhabiting the clefts of the desolate rocks. In this way of difference and intelligible unity, the Persian placed the being as well as the origin of all things in the impersonal One.*

* Bunsen maintains that Bactria, and not Persia, was the original seat of Zoroaster and his doctrine. The Fargard, or first book of the Zend Avesta, gives an account of the emigration of the Aryans to India through Bactria. Now the language of the oldest portion of the Zend Avesta is High Bactrian, and approaches very near to the Vedic language, that is, the old East Iranian which is preserved in the Punjab. Another argument is derived from a comparison of Zoroastrianism with Brahmanism. The old Vedic worship was a worship of nature, but the Zoroastrian books place a supreme God above

2. THE EGYPTIAN RELIGION.—The gods of a nation take their character from the climate of the country, and from the condition and character of the people. So true is this, that where foreign deities are adopted they become as it were naturalized; and however great the affinities between the gods of different nations, every country has its own peculiar deities. We notice first the difference; but when we pass from the mere outward features to the inner reality we find the likeness becoming closer, until we discover the principle in which they have a common origin.

The great systems of religion that prevailed in the East, all have their foundation in the doctrine of emanation. On the one side they are the worship of a Being infinitely great; on the other side, the worship of the attributes of that Being as these are seen or symbolized in nature. They are different forms of the God-consciousness in man, and often when the form is most different the substance is most alike. The supreme Deity of the Persians dwelt in light; but the supreme God of the Egyptians dwells in thick darkness.* There is a sphinx at the temple gate; it speaks a riddle—it proclaims a mystery. Inside the temple are the statues of young men, who intimate, with suppressed speech, that the name of God is secret, pointing with their fingers, they admonish us to beware that we profane not the Divine stillness. The incomprehensible Deity must be adored in silence; we may not speak of Him but in words of the most awful reverence. It is permitted us to feel and to know the truth of His presence; but the amulet of *Isis*, the voice of nature, is alone the true speech of God.†

nature. "We may assume," says Bunsen, "that the original Zoroastrian founded a new religion before the migration to India as a mere counterpoise to the earliest Bactrian naturalism, and that the Aryans, when they migrated, carried with them the primitive Zoroastrian religion on their great conquering expedition, the last scene of which was the Indian country. The Agni, or fire worship, of which mention is made in the Vedic hymns, must be considered as a remnant of the pre-Zoroastrian doctrine."

* According to Herodotus, the shrew mouse was sacred to Buto (Mut), this animal passed for being blind and was therefore dedicated to the mother of the god, because "darkness is older than light," as Plutarch says.

† Chaeremon (as cited by Porphyry) explained the Egyptian religion as ignoring a supreme cause; Eusebius followed this interpretation, rejoicing to show the absurdity of Paganism. Depuis extolled it, expecting to prove that the idea of an intelligent spiritual cause is an invention of modern times, and too absurd for the wise men of antiquity. Iamblichus refuted Chaeremon. This interpretation of the Egyptian religion is of the same kind with the interpretation which makes Buddhism atheistic, and thus charges with Atheism the most religious nations of the world.

What then is He? None can tell. His symbol is a globe or sphere, for He has neither beginning nor end. His duration is eternal—His Being infinite. He is present in all things—His centre here; His circumference nowhere. We may call Him Ammon, but this only means that He is hidden or veiled.* We can call Him by no true name, for no name can express Him. "Call Him then by all names," said Hermes Tresmegistus, for as much as He is one and all things; so that, of necessity, all things must be called by His name, or He by the name of all things." We cannot see Him, but, says Plutarch, "He sees all things; Himself being unseen." Material things are the forms of which He is the substance; the garment with which He clothes Himself, and by which He is made manifest to men. The workmanship of nature, like the web of Arachne, is wonderful; and by it we can see that there is an intelligence at work, veiled indeed, yet visible in its productions. The work manifests the Worker.

The writings that bear the name of Hermes Tresmegistus contain a full exposition of Egyptian theology.† In them, the iden-

* The Greeks, rightly considered Ammon as Zeus and the highest God: according to Manethos' interpretation, which is deserving of attention, His name signifies, "the concealed God" "concealment." We have also the root AMM "to veil," "to conceal," now actually before us in the hieroglyphics. The manner of writing Men, instead of Amen for Ammon is new; we do not therefore at all events import a modern Philosophical idea into Egyptian Mythology, by considering him as the "hidden or not yet revealed God." He stands incontestably in the Egyptian system at the head of the great cosmogonic development. *Bunsen*.

The gods of the first order possessed one general attribute, that of revealing themselves; in other words, the creative power or principle. The mythological system obviously proceeded from the concealed god Ammon to the creating god.

† Our knowledge of Hermes is chiefly through the Neo-Platonists. The books which bear his name are supposed to have been written about the 4th century after Christ, and must only be received as the Neo-Platonic interpretation of Egyptian theology. Their Pantheistic character may be learned from the following quotation from the 8th book:—"There is nothing in the whole world which God is not." He is being and non-being; he has manifested being, but He has non-being in Himself. He is not manifest, and yet He is the most manifest of all. He is whatever may be contemplated by the mind, or is visible to the eye. He is incorporeal and multi-corporeal. There is nothing of any body which He is not, for He is all things. Therefore has He all names, because He is one Father, and, therefore, has He no name in Himself, because He is the Father of all things. Who, therefore, can worthily speak of Thee, or to Thee. Whither turning, shall I praise Thee? Above, below, within, without? Neither mode nor place belong to Thee, nor anything besides. All things are in Thee, all are from Thee? Thou givest all things and Thou receivest nothing, for Thou hast all things, and there is nothing which Thou hast not. When O Father shall I praise Thee? For what shall

tity of God and nature is distinctly taught. Among the infant nations of the world, this identity seems to have been always assumed, not perhaps that they consciously made God and nature one, but that they had not yet learned to separate between matter and the power which works in matter. The ancient Egyptians may not have been philosophers, but Hermes Trismegistus undertook to expound the philosophy which was underlying their religious belief. How far he reads his philosophy into their religion, or how much of it he found already there, we cannot now enquire. For the identity of all things with God he adduced the favorite argument, that they must have existed as ideas in the divine mind. The reality of things, he says, must be eternal, for that cannot be which has not been before. Created things he calls '*parts and members of God*.* These words sound like materialism; but Hermes Trismegistus was no materialist; God is not matter, but the power which quickens matter. The sensuous world is strictly His creation; by His will it exists. It is the receptacle of the forms which He endows with life. All creation is from Him and by Him, but it is also in Him.

This idea is repeated in all Eastern religions. It is felt that the highest Being must in some way descend through all spheres and circles, and forms of existence. No order is conceivable if God be not conceived as everywhere conditioning the most conditioned. And this presence is not merely passive, but active. Nor is it merely a presence; it is also a connection. The Creator is in some way united to His works. The Hindus used the simple illustration of a spider and its web, or a tortoise

I praise Thee? For those things which Thou hast done, or those which Thou hast manifested, or those which Thou hast concealed? But why will I praise Thee? As being of myself, as my own, or as if I were another? For Thou art what I am; Thou art what I do; Thou art what I say; Thou art all which is produced, and which is not produced. Thou art an intelligent mind, an efficient Father, a God at work; good, doing all things well. The most attenuated part of matter is air; that of air, soul; that of soul, mind; that of mind, God. When Patricius edited the works of Hermes Trismegistus in the 16th century, the Catholic authorities obliged him to add Scholia, explaining that some things, such as the doctrine of creation and the existence of the gods were not according to the Catholic faith, but the essence of the theology; such as that God is intellect; that He made the world in imitation of the Word; that perhaps God has no essence—that He brings forth mind as a father generates a son; that God is masculo-feminine, and that man is made from life and light were to be understood in an orthodox sense—*sano modo*.

*Plutarch, quoting from Hecataeus, says that the Egyptians considered the primitive Deity and the universe as one and identical; and Eusebius, citing the Genica or old Hermaic books, asks, "Have you not been informed, by the Genica, that all individual souls are emanations from the one great Soul?"

protruding its limbs. 'The Persian made God the light of creation, and darkness the necessary shadow of the light: so that light and darkness had been one, and would ultimately be one again. Sometimes creation was called God's garment, but Hermes changed the figure, and made God the garment of the world. "He embraces it in His bosom; He covers it with His being; He takes it into Himself as the universe includes in its existence every world of which it is composed." God is the supreme World. The constitution of nature is not merely the work of God, but God is its *compages*—the power which by its presence and being constitutes nature. And thus God is every thing, one and yet all things—things which are, for He has manifested them; and things which are not, for their ideals and patterns are in Him. He is incorporeal, but He is also omnicorporeal, for there is nothing in any body which He is not. He is all that is, and therefore He has all names. He is the Father of all things, and therefore He has no name. He did not receive things from without, but sent them forth from His own being. The world is His conception, visible things are His incarnated thoughts. 'Is God invisible?' says Hermes; 'speak worthily of Him, for who is more manifest than He? For this very cause did He make all things, that in all things thou mightest see Him. As the mind is seen in thinking, so is God seen in working.' Hermes avoids materialism, but he is not afraid of an apparent contradiction. He feels that the truth concerning God, must be a contradiction to man. In the spirit of Egypt among sphinxes and beings grotesque and indefinite—after showing how God is the Lord and Maker of all things, yea, and is all things, he concludes, 'that all being parts of God and He the Maker of all, He, as it were, makes Himself.'

The deities of the Egyptians are arranged into three orders. This was the division made by Herodotus. In the first order three are twelve gods; in the second eight; and according to Bunsen, in the third seven. The only deities that were worshipped throughout Egypt, belonged to the third order, these were Osiris and Isis.* Ammon, the concealed God, was doubtless

* Isis and Osiris are of the third order; 'they are,' says Herodotus 'the only gods worshipped in the whole of Egypt.' Temples and cities of Isis, which boasted of having the tomb of Osiris, and sacred animals dedicated to him, are found from Elephantina, to the mouth of the Nile. Isis, according to Plutarch was called Myrionymous, and 'the prayers of the dead' contain a countless multitude of names, by which Osiris is invoked. Isis and Osiris have, according to Herodotus, and the genealogies on the monuments, their roots in the first, like the deities of the second order; but according to the whole testimony

worshipped everywhere, for to Him all worship was ultimately referred. He was the supreme God. As the Persian One became Ormuzd, or Brahm became Brahma so did the concealed God of Egypt become the revealed. But there were others beside Ammon who stood for the supreme God, the chief of these was the ram-headed god of the Thebaid, the patron deity of Egypt: Ptah,* the creator of the world, and the Lord of truth, with Neith, the goddess of wisdom, all of the first order, but chiefly Osiris, Isis, and their son Horus, of the third order. Osiris and Isis are the most familiar of the Egyptian gods. They represent singly, or together, the whole of nature, and that Being whose power and presence are everywhere manifest in nature. The Egyptians have many legends of Osiris and Isis, of the time when they once reigned in Egypt, of the murder of Osiris by the treachery of Typhon, and of the sorrows and lamentations of Isis :† how much of history there may be in this we cannot determine. The interpretation most like the truth

of the monuments, they are, in a word, the first and second order itself : so that some peculiar forms of Isis or Osiris, or both of them almost invariably correspond to each development, split up as it were into many different personifications. Isis, Osiris, and Horus combined, can be shown to comprise in themselves the whole system of Egyptian Mythology, with the exception, perhaps, of Ammon and Kneph, the concealed God, and the creative power. In them all the attributes are concentrated. Isis is the sister, wife, daughter, and mother of Osiris ; in her cosmogonic property she is like Neith ; in the Papyrus she is called the Neith of Lower Egypt. Plutarch speaks of an Egyptian tradition, according to which Zeus was originally unable to walk—his legs were grown together ; Isis loosed his legs. Isis-Neith is nature, through the medium of which, God became manifest and revealed.—*Bunsen*.

Plutarch tells us, that Osiris was sometimes pictured as an eye ; this is a natural conception. In children's books we sometimes see God pictured as an eye ; it was the favorite symbol with the Jewish Cabbalists.

* Ptah is the Creator of the world, Neith belongs to Ptah, and is found by his side ; the name is said to signify, "I came from myself." She is the creative principle, considered as feminine ; her titles are, "the great mother," "the mother of Helios her first-born ;" she is also called the cow which has produced the sun ; as mother of the living she appears nursing two crocodiles. In Ptah and Neith the Deity completes His manifestation as the soul of the world.

† The Osiris of history was king of Egypt ; he was killed by his brother Typhon, who shut him up in a coffer, and threw him into the Nile ; Isis went in search of the body of her husband, and found it cast up on the shores of Phœnicia. Osiris has some relation to the Greek Adonis, and is perhaps connected with Thammuz, in the Phœnician mythology.

"Thammuz came next behind,
Whose annual wound in Lebanon allured
The Syrian damsels to lament his fate,
In amorous ditties all a summer's day,

is that which regards them as personifications of the operations of nature. Osiris is the deity unveiled, he is sometimes Kneph or Athor, and this Athor is again united to Isis as the hidden principle of the universe, the creative wisdom of the Deity. She had a temple at Sais, on which was written the famous inscription preserved by Plutarch, "I am all that hath been, is, and shall be, and no mortal has uncovered my veil." But Osiris and Isis could only manifest the highest Being to the extent that nature reveals Him.

While smooth Adonis from his native rock
 Ran purple to the sea, supposed with blood
 Of Thammuz yearly wounded : the love tale
 Infected Sion's daughters with like heat ;
 Whose wanton passions in the sacred porch
 Ezekiel saw, when, by the vision led,
 His eye surveyed the dark idolatries
 Of alienated Judah."

Milton's Paradise Lost.

"*The dying god.*" The unseen Mover of the universe, was rashly identified with its obvious fluctuations, and since the lessons of eternal experience influence the fancy long before they reach the understanding, an ordinary Pantheist, who contemplated "one" all-pervading Spirit adorable even in the animal world, would not be inconsistent, in the idea that God is liable to death in that as dwelling in all forms. He might in ages past have been more originally manifested in one, though it were a human and perishable one. The speculative deity suggested by the drama of nature was worshipped with imitative and sympathetic rites. A period of mourning about the autumnal equinox and of joy at the return of spring was almost universal. Phrygian and Paphlagonian, Bactian and even Athenian were more or less attached to such observances. The Syrian damsels sat weeping for Thammuz or Adonis mysteriously wounded by the tooth of winter, and the priests of Attys—an analogous incarnation of solar power—emasculated themselves and danced in female attire, in devotional mimicry of the temporary enfeeblement of their god. Their rites were evidently suggested by the arrest of vegetation, when the sun, descending from its altitude, appears deprived of its generative power, and those ceremonies of passionate lamentation, which in the East were commonly offered to the dead, were adopted in the periodical observances of religion. Mourning, mutilation, self-immolation, and even the wide-spread custom of sacrifice, were mainly symbolical, either expressive of devotion to the all-generating and devouring nature, or of sympathy with the being Pantheistically incorporated in its changes. The recurrence of these annual solemnities was more marked among agricultural races, whose ordinary life and customs were immediately dependent on corresponding phenomena. The Greeks pay divine honour to heroes, but in Egypt a deity is said to die. Osiris is a being analogous to the Syrian Adonis, and the "sacred legend" is a narrative form of the popular religion of Egypt, of which the hero is the sun, and the agricultural calendar the moral. The moist valley of the Nile, which contrasted with the surrounding desert, appeared like life in the midst of death, owed its fertility to the annual inundation, itself in evident dependence on the sun. The Nile was called 'the antime of heaven,' and Egypt, environed with arid deserts, like a 'heart within a burning censer' (Crenzer) was the female power dependent on the influence personified in its god."—*Mackay's Progress of the Intellect.*

"Osiris and Isis," says Dr. Prichard, "are the universal Being—the soul of nature corresponding to the Pantheistic or masculo-feminine Jupiter of the Orphic verses. Typhon represents physical evil. To him are attributed eclipses, tempests, and irregular seasons. He is the sea which swallows up the good Nile and produces drought and famine. He is the enemy of Osiris, and his wife Nephthys is the enemy of Isis. Nephthys is represented by the desert; and the inundation of the Nile is the Deity leaving his garland in her bed. Typhon is the south wind of the desert, and to him all hideous beasts are sacred. Another Deity is Horus, the brother of Osiris; he too is the sun, the world, the all of nature. He is supposed to be identical with Harpocrates, who is sometimes called the son of Isis. Harpocrates was the god of silence—the emblem of nature in her silent progress. When the buds opened in spring time, and the tender shoots burst silently from the earth, then was Harpocrates born. Every spring was the festival of his birth. The young god died, but his everlasting mother lived and reproduced him as the seasons changed." Apuleius, an Egyptian priest of the third century, represents Isis as thus addressing him after he had been initiated into the Egyptian mysteries, "I am she that is the natural mother of all things—mistress and governor of all the elements—the initial progeny of worlds—chief of divine powers—queen of heaven—the principal of the gods celestial—the light of the goddesses—at my will are disposed the planets of the air—the wholesome winds of the seas; and the silences of the unseen world—my divinity is adored through all the world, in divers manners, with various rites, and by many names. The Phrygians call me the mother of the gods; the Athenians call me Minerva; the Cyprians, Venus; the Candians, Diana; the Sicilians, Proserpina; some call me Ceres, Juno, Bellona, Hecate; the Ethiopians and the Egyptians worship me as Queen Isis."*

What was said of Isis was said also of Kneph. The Egyptians, according to Porphyry, acknowledged one intellectual author and creator of the world under the name of Kneph. They worshipped him in a statue of human form, with a dark blue complexion, holding in his hand a girdle or sceptre, wearing upon his head a royal plume, and thrusting an egg from his mouth. Iamblichus, quoting from the Hermaic books teaches nearly the same concerning Kneph. "This god is placed as the

* Fable of the Golden Ass.

ruler of the celestial gods. He is a self-intelligent mind absorbed in his own contemplations. Before Kneph, is a Being without parts, the first occult power, and by Hermes called Eikton. He is worshipped only in silence. After these, are the powers that preside over the formation of the visible world. The creative mind which forms the universe is called Ammon Ptah, or Osiris, according to the character it may assume."

There was another deity to speak the wisdom of God, this was Hermes, the wisdom of Ammon, the teacher of wisdom among men.* Osiris was the great body of nature, Hermes the incarnation of the divine intellect; he was called by other names, Anubis "the golden," that which shines in the sun, the leader of the stars, the dog star. He was also called Thoth the pillar, because a pillar is the bearer of all the Egyptian wisdom which was preserved by the priests—Hermes is speech and wisdom; he is the discoverer of astronomy, the teacher of science, the inventor of arts. Among the gods he is pre-eminently the good spirit, the giver of gifts intellectual and spiritual. Osiris and Isis are the good king and queen, Hermes the wise priest. As Sirius in the highest part of the firmament overlooks the other planets, and protects the fiery animals of heaven, so does Hermes protect and care for all creatures; the whole of nature is revealed before him, his wise mind rules the world. He is physician, lawyer, judge; he teaches immortality, he guides souls in their wanderings, by imparting wisdom he makes men one with himself—the wise priest becomes Hermes. If all nature be as we have seen the exteriority of God, the exhibition to the senses of the invisible Ammon, it must then be all divine, and, if divine, why may it not be worshipped? How indeed can we worship the "veiled God," but through His works which declare His wisdom and His power? So perhaps the Egyptians reasoned, or rather more probably concluded without reasoning, and consecrated the visible world as an object of worship.

The Persian, with his clear and ever radiant sky, saw God in the light. The Arabian, with his thoughts directed to the starry heavens, saw God in the planets; the Egyptian, too, saw God both in the daylight and in the stars, but much more in that

* Kneph forms the limbs of Osiris in contradistinction to Ptah, who, as the strictly Demiurgic principle, forms the visible world. The second order are children of the first: Hermes or Thoth is of this order; his sign is the ibis, and his name is connected with the Egyptian root for "word;" he is the scribe of the Gods, and is called "Lord of the divine words and scribe of truth," "the guardian of the pure souls in the hall of the two truths."

abundant fertility which came he knew not whence, with the overflowing of the Nile, without which Egypt would have been a desert. How sacred then, above all things, the river Nile! * How it must have connected itself with the life and thought and religion of every Egyptian! It was the father of the country, on it depended the strength of Pharaoh. But the Nile is only an inanimate object—true, all things may have come from sand and water originally created by the *Unknown Darkness*. From these has sprung the lotus with which the Nile abounds, but the Nile has higher developments of existence than sand or water, higher forms of life than the vegetable lotus. It has beasts innumerable, the true children of father *Nilus*, cherished in his bosom, and abundantly provided for. They are very terrible, they are stronger than men and apparently wiser. They are the genii of that bountiful river, the gods of the stream, why may they not be worshipped if only for their terribleness?

But Egypt is peculiarly a land of beasts. It is prolific in animal life, the lion comes from the desert, the ibis gathers its food on the river's banks, the crocodile basks among the rushes. The Egyptian sees all forms of brute life everywhere abundant, he sees them guided by a wisdom which is above human wisdom, he sees a regularity in their movements which is equalled only by the regularity in the works of nature. As the fruitful Nile ebbs and flows, as summer, winter, spring, and autumn, come and go, by the same law do the brutes live; they have their part in the same order. In some respects man is superior to these creatures; they build no tents, they plough no fields, neither sow, nor reap, nor gather into barns, yet in many respects they are superior to man. Without his cares and disappointments, they lead a joyful life. The law of nature holds its dominion in them, they are determined by a high wisdom. "The stork in the heavens knows her appointed season." They live the universal life, and, as the Egyptian would call it the highest life, they are unconsciously one with the being of the universe. How natural for the Egyptian to worship the brute creation: to see in the wisdom which guided them a high reflection of that wisdom which is manifest in all nature. †

* The Nile, like the Ganges, is a deity—"The father of the father of the gods," the terrestrial and material representation of the Divine purpose.—*Bunsen*.

† The Egyptian priests, says Porphyry, having profited by their diligent study of philosophy, and their intimate acquaintance with the nature of the gods, have

Animal worship is usually the lowest form of idolatry and the mark of a low degree of civilization, but in Egypt it prevailed among a people famed in antiquity for cultivation and learning, and had its roots in a philosophy of being.* We must distinguish between the worship of animals, and the worship of them as symbols: the latter was that of the Egyptians, it did not obscure the worship of the gods, but was rather connected with it. Their deities were mostly represented in the forms of beasts, even Hermes had a dog's head because of his connection with the dog star: Kneph† was a good deity, and therefore was represented as a harmless serpent. Osiris had the hawk for his symbol, and his image was usually formed with a hawk's head; this bird was symbolic of the soul, the crocodile was sacred to the highest God; Plutarch assigns as the cause of this, that it is the only animal living in water which has its eyes covered with a transparent membrane falling down over them, by means of which it sees and is not seen, which is a thing that belongs to the supreme God, "to see all things, Himself being unseen," Plutarch says in another place, "Neither were the Egyptians without a plausible reason for worshipping God symbolically in the crocodile, it being said to be an imitation of God in this, that it is the only animal without a tongue, for

learnt that the divinity permeates not only human beings—that man is not the only creature on the earth possessed of soul, but that nearly the same spiritual essence pervades all the tribes of living creatures. On this account in fashioning the images of the gods, they have adopted the forms of all animals, and have sometimes joined the human figure with that of beasts. They adore, under these semblances, the universal power which the gods have secretly displayed, in the various forms of living nature.

* The following Pantheistic description of Serapis was given by an oracle of the god:—"My divinity shall be described in the words, I shall now utter. "The canopy of heaven is my head, the sea is my belly, the earth is my feet, my ears are in the ethereal regions, and my eye is the resplendent and far-shining sun.—*Macrobius.*"

† Kneph as creator appears under the figure of a potter with a wheel. In Philae, a work of the Ptolemaic epoch, he is represented making a figure of Osiris with the inscription *Num*, who forms on a wheel the limbs of Osiris, who is enthroned in the great hall of life. He is likewise called *Num-ra*, "who forms the mother, the genetrix of the gods." In a representation of the time of the Roman Emperors he is called "the sculptor of all men." In a monument at Esneh, of the same date, he is said to have made mankind on his wheel, and fashioned the gods, and is called the god who has made the sun and moon to revolve under the heavens and above the world and all things on it.

According to Plutarch and Diodorus, the name of the Egyptian Zeus signifies "a spirit," which can only refer to Kneph. At Esneh he is said to be "the breath of those who are in the firmament."

the Divine *Logos* or Reason does not stand in need of speech, but going on through a silent path of justice in the world without noise, righteously governs and dispenses all human affairs." Horus Apollo in the hieroglyphics says the Egyptians acknowledged a superior Being who was Governor of the world, that they represented Him symbolically by a serpent, and that they also "pictured a great house or palace within its circumference, because the world is the royal palace of the Deity," and again he says "that the serpent as it were, feeding upon itself, fitly represents that all things produced in the world by Divine Providence are resolved into it again." "The serpent," says Philo Byblius quoting from Sanchoniathon, "was deified by the Egyptian Hermes, because it is immortal and is resolved into itself." Sometimes the symbol of the Deity was a serpent with a hawk's head, and sometimes the hawk alone. In the temple of Sais there was a hieroglyphic which consisted of an old man, a young man, and a hawk, to make up the meaning, says Plutarch, "that both the beginning and the end of human life depends on God." We need not suppose that the multitudes of Egypt who paid their devotions to the sacred beasts had any conscious conception, that in so doing they were worshipping the One and All of nature. They saw God in nature and therefore they worshipped all the parts of nature as parts of the Divine.*

God soul, the world, to primal man were one—
In shapely stone, in picture, and in song.
They worshipped Him who was both one and all;
God-like to them was human kind. God dwelt
In the piled mountain rock, the veined plant,
And pulsing brute, and where the planets wheel
Through the blue skies God-head moved in them.

Bunsen's Egypt.

* Anchises, in the sixth book of the *Æneid*, explaining to Æneas the law of the transmigration of souls, says, "The spirit within nourishes heaven and earth and the watery plains, and the enlightened orb of the moon, and the shining stars; and diffused through the parts, a mind, actuates the whole fabric, and mingles itself with the large body: hence the races of men and cattle, and the lives of birds and monsters, which the sea produces under its marble plain." "This," says Bishop Warburton, "was the doctrine of the old Egyptians, as we learn from Plato, who says, 'they taught that Jupiter is the spirit which pervades all things.'" He adds that "the Greek philosophy corrupted this principle into Spinozism, of which we have an instance in the fourth *Georgic*—"Some have said that bees have a part of the Divine mind and ethereal draughts, for that God pervades all lands and tracts of the sea and the lofty heavens. Hence flocks, herds, men, all the race of wild beasts, each at birth derive their slender lives." This might pass for simple Egyptian doctrine, without supposing that it has undergone the *corrupting* (?) influence of Greek philosophy.

3. THE GREEK RELIGION.—“To understand,” says Mr. Maurice, “the difference between the Egyptian and Greek faith, it is not necessary to study a great many volumes or to visit different lands, our own British Museum will bring the contrast before us in all its strength. If we pass from the hall of Egyptian Antiquities, into the room which contains the Elgin Marbles, we feel at once that we are in another world. The oppression of huge animal forms, the perplexity of grotesque devices has passed away, you are in the midst of human forms, each individually natural and graceful, linked together in harmonious groups, expressing perfect animal beauty yet still more the dominion of human intelligence over the animal.” No truer contrast could have been made between the gods of Egypt and those of Greece. The former are rarely human, the latter rarely anything but human. Yet here the contrast ends. We have passed apparently from the indefinite to the definite, from the infinite to the finite, but it is only apparently, it is only as regards the external form of the mythologies.* In the inner spirit, we are surrounded by the infinite still, the Greek may be enjoying nature more than the Egyptian, but he still stands in awe of it. He may feel the dominion of man over nature, and be conscious that the life of human freedom is higher than that of brute instinct, but he is not without thoughts of the Infinite; he is not without a deep feeling that there is a something, or some Being above, and beyond all his thoughts and all his conceptions—a Being but feebly and imperfectly imaged by these human deities which he creates, and which he worships for their wisdom, their power, and their forms of beauty. The Greek, as well as the Egyptian, worshipped nature.† The names of the old deities in the Theogony are a sufficient evidence of this. Kronos‡ and Chaos, Erebus and Nyx, with Gaea, Ether, and Hermes testify to their own origin and meaning. An element of history

* The gods of Greece are so fixed and personified in its poetry as almost entirely to conceal their essential generality of character; but in proportion as we approach the Asiatic sources of Greek ideas, or in any way extend our view beyond the limits of the Epic circle, the gods, or the human beings representing them, become more complex, multiform, and independent, until at last all the mysteries and contradictions of genealogies sink into the one mystery of Pantheism.—*Mackay's Progress*.

† Bryant says, that the worship on mountains, in caves, in forests, and under green trees, all show that nature is ever the object worshipped.

‡ Pherecydes says, “Zeus and time are the same, and the earth always existed.”

doubtless mingles itself with the legends of the gods; mysterious and even foreign deities may have been introduced from other nations, but the evidence is overwhelming that Greek worship was essentially a worship of nature. The heavens, the ocean, the unseen world was each made a kingdom, and had each a divine king, or ruler placed over it. All mountains, rivers, lakes, woods, and forests had their presiding deities. The spirit of poetry could not go further. An abundant harvest was Ceres rejoicing; when the wine-press was trodden, it was Bacchus in the revel; the tempest tossing the ships was Neptune raging in the deep; conscience tormenting the evil doer was the furies seeking revenge; all virtues and all vices, all endowments, intellectual and moral, became gods. War was Mars, and beauty was Venus; eloquence was Mercury; prudence, Minerva; and Echo, no more a sound reverberated by the air, but a nymph in tears bemoaning her Narcissus. They were beautiful human gods, but they owed their existence to Greek imagination, giving life and form to the manifested powers of nature. They were all created; Pindar knew them, and spoke of them when he said—"There is one kind both of gods and men, and we both breathe from the same mother, and spring from the same original." Hesiod knew them when he gave their history and origin, and showed how each was produced from each.

Nor are we without traces of a transition period, when the Greek mind was passing from the Egyptian reverence of grotesque forms to the worship of humanized deities. The early Greek gods were monsters. The children of *Uranos* and *Gaea* were Titans and Cyclops, and hundred-headed giants. Even the deities that were afterwards the most famous of the Pantheon were originally of monstrous forms. *Pausanias* mentions a statue of Jupiter, which, in addition to its two eyes, had an eye in the forehead. We read also of a four-handed Apollo, and a two-headed Silenus, with a three-handed and three-headed Hermes, reminding us of similar stages in the development of Hindu mythology.

But the Greeks were Monotheists as well as Polytheists. They worshipped one God as well as many. We know this from Greek philosophy, also from S. Paul, who found the Athenians worshipping "the unknown God," whom he had come to declare to them. That they were inconsistent some of the philosophers felt and thought, and this inconsistency S. Paul made the ground of his argument, why they should turn from idols to

the living God.* That they did worship the one God, who is unlike all the others, is manifest even from their mythology. Homer makes all beings gods, as well as men, come forth from Oceanus, except Him who is pre-eminently God, the Father of gods and men. Hesiod, too, gives to all beings a beginning except Zeus. Sophocles says, "There is in truth but one God, who made heaven and earth," and Euripides addresses Zeus as the self-existent—as He who unfolds all things in His arms, who is resplendent with light, and yet who, because of our weak vision, is veiled in darkness. Pindar distinguished between the created gods and Him who is the most powerful of all the gods, the Lord of all things, and the Maker of the universe. This one God was like the Brahm of the Indians, the impersonal and the unknown. In the mythology He is represented by the greatest of the deities. Zeus bears some of His highest attributes. Zeus corresponds to Brahma and Ormuzd. His name is the name of the highest One: He is nature in its infinitude. This is the character of Zeus in the Orphic verses. In later times He became famous as the King of gods and men, but at first he was a prodigious Being, the One and yet all things, the Father, yea the Mother of the world, for Zeus was neither masculine nor feminine, but both genders in one. The universe is created in Him, and by His presence He constitutes the height of the heavens, the breadth of the earth and the deep sea. He is the vast ocean—profound Tartarus—the rivers, fountains and all other things—the immortal gods and goddesses. Whatsoever shall be, is contained in the womb of Zeus. He is the first and the last, the head and the middle of all things. He is the breath of all things—the force of the untameable fire—the bottom of the sea, the sun, the moon, and the stars, the King of the universe; the one power and the one God that rules over all; the great body of Zeus is identical with the great body of nature. The antiquity of the Orphic verses may be disputed, but what they say of Zeus agrees with what we read in other poems. In the famous hymn of Cleanthes we are called "the offspring of Zeus." The universe is there said to emanate from Him, and to obey His sovereign will. He is immanent in creation—present at all times—filling all places. Heaven, earth, and ocean present Him to our eyes.

* S. Augustine adopted the same argument against the philosophical Pagans. In the "City of God" he asks—"If Jupiter be all, why is Juno added, and the other gods?" And again he says, "If Jupiter and Janus are both 'the universe,' they should not be two gods, but only one."

The verses of Aratus from which S. Paul quoted when he addressed the Athenians on the "unknown God," have the same meaning, while they show us how Zeus stood for Him who was omnipotent and omnipresent. "Let us begin with Zeus. That name should never be forgotten, for all is full of Zeus—all ways, public places and all harbours, as well as all seas; He is present always everywhere; all we who breathe do not breathe without Zeus, for we are all His offspring."

Nor was Zeus the only universal Deity. The Alexandrian commentators, with some show of reason, brought forward other deities, to whom were ascribed the high attributes of Him who is infinite. Such were Kronos and Minerva, Necessity and Fortune, and even Venus and her son Eros,* according to the saying of Zeno, that "God is called by as many names as there are different powers and virtues." The chief of these deities was Apollo. Under the image of this youthful god—the bearer of light and joy to the creation, the Greeks adored that majesty which, as Euripides said, was veiled in light. As the sun rejoices the earth, giving health to the sick and strength to the weak, so Apollo, the god of medicine, comes forth with his healing beams radiant with light. The earth owes the comeliness of her fields, the music of her groves, and the sparkling of her streams and fountains, to the glorious king of day. Therefore Apollo is the god of beauty, the emblem of wisdom, and the author of harmony. On his temple at Delphi was inscribed the word *Ei*—"Thou art;" in which Plutarch read the true name of God.† We are but the creatures of a day placed between birth and death: as soon may we retain the flowing fountain as our fleeting existence; being does not belong to us—"God alone IS."

"The mysterious physical phenomena," says Mr. Mackay, "were throughout ancient mythology made prolific of moral and mental lessons. The story of Dionysus was profoundly significant: he was not only creator of the world, but guardian liberator, and saviour. The toys which occupied him when

* In the "Argonauts" of Orpheus, *Eros* is represented as producing Chaos; and Kronos also, in an Orphic fragment preserved by Proclus, is represented as coeval with ancient night.

† "This title," Plutarch says, "is not only proper but peculiar to God, because *He alone is Being*; for mortals have no participation of true being, because that which begins and ends and is continually changing, is never one nor the same, nor in the same state. The Deity, in whose temple this word was inscribed, was called Apollo, which means "not many," because God is one—His nature is simple—His essence uncompounded.

surprised by the Titans—the top, the wheel, the distaff, the golden Hesperian apples—were preeminently cosmogonic. An emblem of a similar class was the magic mirror or face of nature, in which, according to the Platonic notion, but which probably existed long before Plato, the Creator beholds Himself imperfectly reflected, and the bowl or ‘womb’ of being, in which matter became pregnant with life, or wherein the Pantheistic deity became mingled with the world. Dionysus, god of the many-coloured mantle, is the resulting manifestation personified. He is the polyonymous—the all in the many, the varied year, life passing into innumerable forms. But, according to the dogma of antiquity, the thronging forms of life are a series of purifying migrations, through which the divine principle re-ascends to the unity of its source. Inebriated in the bowl of Dionysus, and dazzled in the mirror of existence the souls, these fragments and sparks of the universal intelligence forgot their nativity, and passed into the terrestrial forms they coveted—Dionysus, the god of this world, the changing side of Deity.”

The shepherd god *Pan* occupied, even in the judgment of Socrates, the place of the supreme God, and this because, as his name implies, he was the all-God, the personification of infinite all-embracing nature. Pan was the nature side of the Greek divinities. He ruled over the woods and dwelt in desolate and solitary places. He was nature as it appeared to herdsmen and shepherds, in its wilder and grander and more savage aspects, but he is not without gleams of gentleness, and by no means destitute of joy. Every school boy knows that he was a merry deity, making music on his pipe of seven reeds, with the glad nymphs dancing to his rustic tunes. His body was rough like the luxuriant earth, but his face beamed with intelligence, which showed the *Ammon* concealed. As the heavens are radiant with light, so smiled the countenance of Pan. He had horns like the sun and moon, and his garment of leopard's skin was a picture of the varied beauties of the world; but he was not all beautiful. As nature veils some of her secrets, so must we veil the deformities of Pan. In the Orphic verses he is called the All of the universe—heaven and sea, the ruler of the earth, and immortal fire; for all these are but the garments of Pan.*

* The attribute of prophecy deputed to Apollo was not founded solely on his representing the all-seeing, all-hearing Zeus, but upon the higher notion of Pantheistic omniscience, which may have been inherited from the forest of

What has been said of the gods of the Greeks may be also said of the deities of Rome. The Romans, too, made God and nature one—finite on the human side, infinite on the divine side. Their mythology, like their literature, was but a feeble echo of the Greek. Their poets and philosophers only repeat what was said before. Their Jupiter is the Greek Zeus; he is primarily the heavens, or that portion of the visible universe which appears to us. This truth is petrified into the Roman language. Bad weather is "bad Jupiter;" to be in the open air is to be "under Jupiter;" and to be out in the cold is to be under "frigid Jupiter." "Behold," says Ennius, "the clear sky, which all men invoke as Jupiter." And Cato says, "His seat is heaven, earth, and ocean. Wheresoever we move, wheresoever we go, whatever we see, that is Jupiter." Virgil, in imitation of the Greek poet, says, "Let us begin with Jupiter; all things are full of Jupiter." In another place he describes "the prone descending showers," as the omnipotent Father coming down into the bosom of His glad spouse. The powers of nature personified; that is Greek Polytheism. Nature in its infinitude, embracing the whole conceivable assemblage of being in which mind is pre-eminently manifest; that is Greek Monotheism.

Epirus, or transplanted from the shrines of Asia. Poetry and philosophy served only to give different forms of expression to the same immemorial sentiment, which, through the treatment of art receding from it, universally lost in intellectual compass what it gained in distinctness. The comprehensiveness of the original feeling was preserved only in the most ancient symbols, such as the Scarabæus pointing to the great Dodonian parent and artificer, as the all-generating ungenerated cause, and the triform or triophthalmic statues of Argolis and Corinth exhibiting his triple dominion over time and space. And if Zeus was Triopian or Triophthalmic, so also was his son or correlative, Apollo. Apollo, again, was akin to Nomian Pan the companion of Rhea and foster brother of Zeus. In the praise of Zeus every element and every deity are united. His mythical brethren the autocrats of the sun and shade were felt to be repetitions of himself. It is not without reason that Arcadia and many other places disputed with Crete the honor of his birth for the seemingly new deity was only a reproduction of the Pelægic or Lycean Pan-theism in a new form.—*Mackay's Progress.*

The chief authorities for this chapter are Creuzer and Bunsen. On the Persian religion; the Latin work of Hyde; Spiegels' translation of the Zend Avesta, and Framjee's volume, "The Parsees, &c." On the Egyptian religion some things are taken from Dr. Prichard, and several passages on mythology in general, and its interpretation are from Cudworth.

CHAPTER III.

GREEK PHILOSOPHY.

ALL philosophy is a seeking after God—a reiteration of the cry of the patriarch, "O that I knew where I might find Him." And the all but universal answer has been, "He is not far from any one of us." This is pre-eminently true of the philosophy of the Greeks in all its stages, and in nearly all its schools.

As to the early Greek philosophers, there are two great difficulties. First, their own writings are not extant, so that the materials are both scanty and uncertain. Secondly, these materials have been used for the most opposite interpretations. Cicero, the Neo-Platonists, and the Christian Fathers hold the early Greek philosophers to have been pure Theists. They assumed rightly, unconscious indeed that it was an assumption; that the fact of these old enquirers after truth, being philosophers, was no argument, for their being irreligious, some of them believed in the gods of the Mythology, and some of them did not; but they were seeking after the One who was yet greater than all the gods. Aristotle, to whom we are chiefly indebted for the materials respecting them, refers their speculations to the old "Theologies," intimating that these are to guide us in the interpretation of their cosmogonies. And this is in the order of things: religion comes before philosophy, men bow in reverence before the unseen, long before it becomes the subject of reason. The view which makes the early Greek philosophers advocates of positive science, without reference to religion, is an anachronism in the history of philosophy. It places them in another age of the world than that in which they lived, and ignores the natural religiousness of man.*

THE IONICS—In the fifth century, before the Christian era, lived Thales of Miletus, a lover of knowledge, and a seeker after

* This is the view taken by Mr. Lewes in his *Biographical History of Philosophy*, but it is contradicted by all we know of the history of mind. Man has religious feelings about nature long before he studies it scientifically.

wisdom. He visited Egypt, at that time the sacred dwelling of science—sacred indeed, for out of religion Egyptian wisdom had arisen. The priests' lips kept knowledge—knowledge of all kinds. Thales probably learned there of the "unknown Darkness" which produced the "water and sand" from which all things were made. He may have compared this with what we read in Homer and Hesiod about the origin of all things from Oceanus and Tethys and hence the thought arose "water is the first principle of creation."* Perhaps he made experiments on matter. A rude chemist he must indeed have been, yet it was within his reach to know that material forms are fleeting and unsubstantial. He felt that at the foundation of nature there was a unity in which all things were one, a substance of which all partook—a material capable of being formed into suns and stars, and worlds, trees, animals, and men, an original element in which all the elements had their beginning; and what more likely than water to be this original element? It is the blood of nature, by it all things live, without it all die. He took a material element for the original unity, what he meant more we cannot tell. Did he find that he could go no farther? Did he make no distinction between the material and the spiritual?—We cannot answer. Aristotle says that Thales believed "all things were full of gods." Laertius, that he called God "the oldest of all things, because He was uncreated," and Cicero, that he held "water to be the beginning of things, but that God was the mind which created things out of the water."

* Water is a Protean quality, and therefore was thought the original *Hyle*; mythically Thetis, Nereus, Proteus. Tradition emanates from the centre of the alluvial plains of Babylon and Egypt. The opinion of the Ionian sage is from the Egyptians, who recognized a deity in moisture and identified the great and good Osiris with the Nile.—*Mackay's Progress of the Intellect*.

The inherent life with which the Ionics endowed the universal element was but the ensouled world of Pantheism—a re-union of the elements which poetry had parted and personified.—*Ibid*.

The reason why Thales concluded that water was the first of all things is thus given by Plutarch:—First, because natural seed, the principle of all things, is moist; whence it is highly probable that moisture is also the principle of all other things. Secondly, because all kinds of plants are nourished by moisture, without which they wither and decay. And thirdly, because fire, even the sun itself and the stars, are nourished and supported by vapours proceeding from water, and, consequently, the whole world consists of the same.

According to Diogenes Laertius, Musæus was the first who taught that all things were created of one matter, and would be dissolved into the same matter again.

"Our ancestors" says Aristotle, "and men of great antiquity have left us a tradition, involved in fable, that these first essences are gods, and that the Divinity comprehends the whole of nature."

"But why," asked Thales' disciple Anaximander, "should the preference be given to water over the other elements? That which you assume to be the ground of all things is finite. By thus placing it above the others, by making it the one thing of the universe, you make it infinite. It then ceases to be water. Why not at once call the *one substance* 'the infinite,' that which is unlimited, eternal, unconditioned." A universe of opinion has arisen about the meaning of Anaximander's "infinite." Was it material? was it incorporeal?—we only know that He believed in an "infinite" in which all beings have their being.*

Anaximander's successor, Anaximenes, thought it might be determined what that is which is infinite. It was not water, that was too gross, too material. Was there no existence conceivable in thought, nor perceptible by sense, that appeared infinite—no essence that is in all things—and yet is not any one of them? There is that which we call breath, life, soul. It pervades all. It permeates all. It penetrates all. Is not that "the infinite?" We breathe it. We live in it. It is the universal soul. This may have been what Anaximenes meant; we do not know for certainty. But this is the interpretation of the "air" by Anaximenes' disciple, Diogenes of Apollonia. He thought the Deity a divine breath, air, or spirit, endowed with the attributes of wisdom and intelligence, and pervading the universe of being. These philosophers begin with enquiries that belong apparently to natural philosophy, but they do not stop there; they cannot—they go beyond the bounds of the finite and the phenomenal.

THE ITALICS.—The Ionics began their search for the truth of the universe from external nature. The Italics began with mathematics. The former declared that all was one—one something, one infinite; they could not explain it further. Pythagoras said it is simply one. What he meant is not easy to determine. In Persia† he may have learned of the nameless One, who created Ormuzd and Ahriman. Was not this a Monad creating a Dyad?

* Aristotle and Plutarch suppose Anaximander's "infinite;" to have been material—the original or first matter out of which all things were made. Ritter on the other hand says, that Anaximander's "infinite" was not a mere multiplicity of primary material elements but an immortal and imperishable unity—an ever producing energy.

† It is only conjecture that Pythagoras ever was in Persia. There is no contemporary evidence that the early Greek philosophers learned anything from the East.

Did not One thus become the father of the world, and two its mother? What can be the essence of all things but numbers? Do not all come from the original Unity? As the number one is the foundation of the manifold operations of arithmetic and geometry, so the divine One—the universal Soul—is the foundation of the world's manifoldness. The universe is a reflection of the Divine. It is a "living arithmetic, a realized geometry." Because of its beauty, and harmony, and everlasting order, it is called the *Kosmos*.

But the Monad of Pythagoras; was it a mind or simply an original something, out of which the all was evolved? If the Monad was not the active principle, it is identical with Chaos, and the Dyad contained in it becomes the active power which causes the harmonious world-development to arise from the Chaos. On this supposition the Pythagorean doctrine of the Deity could have risen no higher than that of an evolution or emanation out of Chaos—an original substance from which has proceeded the divine world-soul. But if, as Tenneman thinks, the Pythagorean *Monad* was the active principle, the divine Being, then God is above and before Chaos. He is mind, and the producer, not the product of the material; while matter is only God posited on one side, and subject to Him. That the latter was the true Pythagorean doctrine is probable from its agreement with the fragments of Philolaus, an old philosopher of the school of Pythagoras. The essence of things is regarded as arising out of two grand elements—the limiting or limit, and the unlimited. Philolaus shows how this takes place through the opposition of the one and the many. The one was unity to many, and the many, as such was the indefinite Dyad, through the limitation given by the unity, and through the participation in the unity. But now that the essences of things consist of these two original elements, consequently the principles, or original elements of numbers, must be also the principles of things themselves. The Pythagoreans found the reason of the necessity in this, that only under this condition could things be an object of human knowledge; for neither the one nor the many, in the abstract, can be known by man. The *produced* alone is cognizable to the human understanding. The union of the limited and the unlimited form a *Kosmos*. This *Kosmos* implies a principle of harmony, and this harmony a first cause or author, who is truly and simply God. "Were there not," says Professor Böckh, "above the original one and many, the limit and the unlimited, a

highest absolute Unity, in which, as in the original ground of all things, these opposites and their harmonious union constitute a Kosmos, then in the system of the most religious Pythagoreans would be no trace of the Godhead, since neither the limited nor the unlimited appears in this system as God. But now that such a trace exists, and that in the Pythagorean system God is recognised and represented under the idea of the highest Absolute outside of and beyond these opposites, expressly as the first or original cause of harmony, we find established through undisputed testimony of many of the ancients.* According to Aristotle, Philolaus acknowledged one Original as the cause of the two principles—as the absolute Reality of all, and thus God as the highest Unity yet posited above that other unity as different from it. The Pythagoreans regarded this first cause as an intellect; this we may consider as certain. But the limit, the unlimited, and the Kosmos were all clearly allied to the first cause. The Kosmos consists of *Decades*, each of which has ten bodies. These revolve round a common centre. This centre is the most resplendent part of the universe. It is the seat of the Supreme Deity. From it proceeds that light which gives life and gladness to creation. The stars in the resplendent heavens, outside the centre of light, are dwellings of the gods; if not themselves, divinities. Beneath them in rank are demons or good spirits; then men; and lastly, the brute creation. Through all ranks goes the divine essence of the One. All are in some way allied to God; all are divine.*

THE ELEATICS.—The first genuine metaphysicians among the Greeks were the Eleatics. They first doubted the reality of matter, and felt the difficulty of distinguishing between knowing and being, thought and existence. The Ionics evidently assumed the reality of phenomena. The Pythagoreans, the reality of a mind or thought, as the substance of matter. The Eleatics annihilated the Duality, conceiving the identity of thought and existence.

The transition from Pythagoras to the Eleatics was easy. The reality of phenomena is in some sense admitted, but we are

* The Pythagoreans were of opinion that the infinite existence and the one itself are the essence of those things of which they are predicated, and hence they asserted that number is the essence of all things.—*Aristotle*.

The one is the formal principle and cause of all things. As in all men is man itself—in all animals, the animal—in all beings, the being.—*Alexander on the Pythagorean Doctrine*.

without a certain criterion for a knowledge of its existence. Reason tells us of the One, and this must be absolute and eternal. Xenophanes the founder of Eleaticism, did not deny, scarcely perhaps doubted the reality of matter. He saw the contradiction between the verdict of reason and the teachings of experience. The one resolved all existence into a unity—an essence eternal, impenetrable, and unchangeable—yet the senses proclaimed the existence of the manifold. The reality of both he admitted, though the mode of their reconciliation could neither be understood nor explained. "Casting his eyes upwards at the immensity of heaven," says Aristotle; "Xenophanes declared that the *One is God*." But he asked if the One be God, what mean the gods of Homer and Hesiod? If God is an infinite Being, how base to ascribe to Him the foolish actions of men; how unwise to suppose that He is like themselves, that He has their voice, and shape, and figure. If an ox or a lion were to conceive God, they would conceive Him as like themselves. If they had hands and fingers like ours, they would give Him an image and a shape like their own. But this is only God finitely conceived; God so to speak as created by the mind. He that is God must be a Being not created by us. He is not anything finite. He is the Infinite; not the infinite as an abstraction, for that, like the finite, may be only a form of our minds; He is an infinite Being, independent of all our thoughts and all our conceptions of finity or infinitude. Unlike to men in outward shape; unlike, too, in mind and thought. He is without parts or organs, but He is all sight, all ear, and all intelligence. He is pre-eminently Being, and the only true Being. Whatever really exists He is in Himself and all that does exist is eternal and immutable. Nothing can come from nothing. Whatever is must have come from Him. The produced is then identical with that which produces. If not, something has arisen which was not in the cause from which it arose. This is absurd, and therefore, said Xenophanes, all that is really being is God. He is One and all things.*

Parmenides did not lift his eyes to the immensity of heaven to see the One. He did not believe in the representations

* Professor Thompson says that Xenophanes carefully distinguished the Deity from the outward universe on the one hand, and from the *Non-Ens* on the other. It was Parmenides who first imagined the necessity of identifying plurality with the *Non-Ens*, in other words, of denying reality to the outward phenomenal world; so that there seems no ground for qualifying the theology of Xenophanes with the epithet "Panthestic."

of the senses. All that is merely appearance, delusion. Becoming and departing, being and non-being, change of place and vicissitude of circumstance—all which men generally regard as realities, are merely names. Whatever is *is*, there cannot then be anything produced. It cannot *be* in part and in part produced. If it has once been, or is yet to be, then it is not. An existence only to come, or a becoming which implies a previous non-existence takes away all idea of being, so that being must be always or never. There is a reason in man by which he knows that pure Being is that which is free from change of time, or of place. The senses reveal the manifold, but that is only deception. Thought acquaints us with pure being, and is itself identical with that being. It is opposed to the manifold, and the changeable which indeed do not exist, and therefore cannot be objects of thought. All things which really exist are one, and this existence is without change. It pervades all space. This one is not the collected manifold as revealed by the senses, but the one substratum which is the foundation and reality of all apparent existence. Parmenides does not call it God. His philosophy is a science of being and knowing. He denies the existence of the many: yet he is compelled to regard it as in some way existing. It exists in the sensuous representation. All men so perceive it to exist. Parmenides must, therefore, make an effort to explain how the world of phemonema has this apparent existence. Being and non-being set themselves as it were over against each other in spite of the philosopher. He denies that the latter is anything, and yet he must treat it as if it were a something. There must be a One prior to the multitude of beings. Every thing which is participated subsists in others which participate it. It has then a progression into being from that which cannot be participated. That which is most profoundly united, or simply being is *one* and *many*; but in the order of beings this multitude is occult and characterized by the nature of the One. Since there is then everywhere a monad prior to the multitude we must suspend all beings from the proper Monad. In souls the Monad of souls is established in an order more ancient than the multitude of souls, and about this as a centre all souls converge; divine souls in the first rank; their attendants next, and after these the co-attendants, as Socrates says in the *Phædrus*. Therefore the Monad of all beings is prior to all beings, and so Parmenides calls it the *One*.*

* "This truth alone it now remains to tell,

The work of Zeno and Melissus was to annihilate completely this lingering duality. They did this by showing that no knowledge could be derived from the senses; that from the very conception of being the manifold could not exist, and, therefore, belief in its existence was contradictory and absurd. "We cannot," says Melissus, "determine the quantity of anything without taking for granted its existence. But that which is real cannot be finite, it must be infinite, not in *space* but in *time*." It fills all time, and must always be the same. The multiplicity of changeable things which the senses reveal, can only be deception. The appearance is in us. The reality is nowhere. If the apparent things actually existed, they could not change. *A that* would remain what it is in the reality of its being whatever be the representation to our senses or whatever the subjective condition and circumstances of the representation.

Zeno maintained the non-existence of the phenomenal. His argument was that in dividing matter, we must in thought reach a stage where divisibility ceases to be possible—where the subject of division becomes a mathematical point, which has no real existence, and as all experience is found to be contradictory, no objective reality can be deduced from it. The only way to certainty of knowledge is to establish the conclusions of the pure reason and to explain phenomena for a mere illusion of the senses.

HERACLITUS.—The Eleatics tried to end the Dualism between the permanent and the changing by denying reality to the latter. But the phenomena remain as that which is given in the experience of the senses. There was still the one and the many. The

That in this path *One Being* we shall find,
As numerous tokens manifestly show ;
And there its character, without decay ;
And unbegotten, stable without end—
Only begotten, whole, nor once it was,
Nor will hereafter be, since now 'tis all ;
At once collected, a continued one,
From whence its source or growth could you explain ?
Not from non-being which no mind can see,
Nor speech reveal ; since as of being void,
Tis not an object of the mental eye,
But, as from no one it derived its birth,
Say, why in time posterior, it begun,
Rather in some prior time to be ?
Then must it wholly be or wholly not,
For never will the power of faith permit
That aught should ever into being rise."

Parmenides, Translated by Thomas Taylor.

unity of reason and the sensuous multiplicity. Heraclitus undertook to reconcile them, and to show how both existed in a perfect monism; the one in the many and the many in the one; so that true being was neither the one nor the many, but the union—the flux and reflux—the Becoming. Heraclitus's doctrine is generally acknowledged to be obscure. Cudworth calls him a "confounded philosopher," and Socrates, with gentle irony, said of his book concerning nature, that what he understood of it was excellent, and he had no doubt that what he did not understand was equally good. Regarding him as coming after Parmenides and engaged with the same problems as the Eleatics, we may conceive him as asking the question, "What is the universe?" Is it being or non-being? and he answers, "It is neither because it is both." All is and all is not; while it comes into being it is, yet forthwith it ceases to be. There is no continuance of anything; the only reality is an eternal Becoming. Into the same stream we descend, and yet it is not the same stream. We are, and at the same time we are not. We cannot possibly descend twice into the same stream, for it is always scattering and collecting itself again, or rather it at the same time flows to us and flows from us. The reality of being is not an eternal rest, but a ceaseless change. *Heraclitus* does not, like the Eleatics, distrust the senses, he holds them for true sources of knowledge, channels whereby we drink in the universal intelligence, and become partakers of the common reason. We arrive at truth in proportion as we partake of this reason. Whatever is particular as opposed to it is false; "Inhaling through the breath the universal Ether, which is the Divine Reason, we become conscious. In sleep we are unconscious, but on waking we again become intelligent, for in sleep, when the organs of the sense are closed, the mind within is shut out from all sympathy with the surrounding ether, the universal reason; and the only connecting medium is the breath, as it were, a root. By this separation the mind loses the power of recollection. Nevertheless, on awakening, the mind repairs its memory through the senses, as it were through inlets, thus coming into contact with the surrounding ether, it resumes its intelligence. As fuel, when brought near the fire, is altered, and becomes fiery, but on being removed again, becomes extinguished; so too the portion of the all-embracing, which sojourns in our body, becomes more irrational when separated from it, but, on the restoration of this connection through its many

pores and inlets, it again becomes similar to the whole."*

This doctrine, as here announced, may be contrasted with Eleaticism, which found certitude only in pure reason, while *Heraclitus* finds the senses to be means of communication between the mind and the universal reason; yet, after the contrast the doctrine of the unity of being is the same. With the one, reality is only in the permanent; with the other, it is in the Becoming. In both cases the One is all. *Heraclitus* was originally of the Ionic school, but some call him a disciple of *Xenophanes*. *Aristotle* says that he took fire as the first principle in the same way as *Thales* took water and *Anaximenes* air. "The universe," said *Heraclitus*, "always was, is, and ever will be a living fire, unchanged, and at the same time endowed with the power of thinking and knowing."† The relation between this fire and the Becoming we do not know, and can only conjecture. Had *Heraclitus* been in Persia? ‡ Was he a worshipper of fire? Had he learned of *Ormuzd*—the fountain of light—the all-embracing element whence all things flow? And did he, like the Persians with an indifferential difference, call it now the symbol of the first principle of creation, and again the principle itself? By this fire *Heraclitus* illustrates the eternal transformation and transposition of the Becoming. He makes it the substratum of movement, the origin and energy of existence. In the strife of light and darkness the universe arose. "Strife," he says "is the parent of all things. The one, by separating itself from itself, unites itself again." In another place he says, "Unite the whole and the not-whole, the coalescing and the not-coalescing, the harmonious and the discordant, and thus we have the one Becoming from the All, and the all from the One."

EMPEDOCLES.—To what school *Empedocles* belonged, is a

* The human soul, says *Heraclitus*, as it is endowed with reason is an emanation from the universal mind; but it is united to an animal nature in common with the inferior orders of creation. Man breathes the universal soul or mind, and readily unites with creature intelligence in a state of watching; sleep being an immediate and temporary suspension of this communication.

† The fire of *Heraclitus* is endowed with spiritual attributes; *Aristotle* calls it "soul" and "incorporeal." It is the common ground of the phenomena, both of mind and matter. It is not only the animating, but also the intelligent and regulative principle of the universe; the universal word or reason which it behoves all men to follow. This interpretation seems to materialize mind, but it also spiritualizes matter and makes the moveable one of *Heraclitus*, the Becoming, as immaterial as the resting One of the Eleatics, which is Being.—*Professor Thompson's Notes to Archer Butler's Lectures on Philosophy.*

‡ *Professor Thompson* is of opinion that *Heraclitus* never was in Persia.

question left undecided by Aristotle. With the Eleatics, he distrusted the senses. Regarding human and divine reason as one, he found in reason, the source of knowledge. In placing the origin of the universe in material elements, he seems allied to the Ionic school; but he separates from them in assuming four original or root elements instead of one.* Of these he makes fire the most important, and thus seems to approach Heraclitus. These elements are each original and eternal. They are mingled again by the working of two powers—strife and friendship. Men call these changes, birth and death, but in reality there is neither birth nor death. Nothing can be produced which has not always existed, and nothing which has once existed can ever cease to be. This indeed is the fundamental doctrine of the philosophy of Empedocles. It is truly Eleatic. But to his doctrine of separating and co-mingling elements, he seems to have added the *Becoming* of Heraclitus, not however purely, for in Empedocles' belief the elements do not change in themselves, but only in their relations. The four elements are eternal, yet not as material elements, but as ideal existences in the Divine mind. The world as revealed to the senses is but a copy. The world intellectual is the type. The latter, being the ideal, is the reality of the former, which is only phenomenal. The root elements exist eternally in the One.

The separating and uniting which we see incessantly at work are caused by discord and friendship. As these root-elements are the original thoughts of the Supreme, and as these undergo continual transformations, so the being of the supreme One is interfused throughout the universe. His essence pervades all. All life and intelligence are the manifestations of the Divine Mind. God is not like anything which can be seen or touched, or imaged by human intellect. He is an Infinite Mind. Here Empedocles joined with Xenophanes in opposition to the popular deities of the mythology. He was a great enemy to the gods of Homer. *Karsten* describes Empedocles' theology as an apotheosis of nature and pre-eminently Pantheistic, that is, in the sense of merely worshipping external nature. But the verses of Empedocles evidently mean more than this. Polytheism was an apotheosis of Nature; but the Pantheism of Empedocles was the worship of Being. His God is not the phenomenal, but the

* Empedocles called the original uncreated universe a sphere or globe. It contained in its bosom the four elements—a syncretism of the primordial chaos. His love and hatred are evidently suggested by the eternal strife, the Heraclitean father of all things.—*Professor Thompson's Notes.*

real, and is allied to the One of Parmenides. Only on this ground could he have opposed the worship of the popular deities. But we have seen in another place that this worship of Being had nearly the same origin as the worship of natural powers and objects. The one was the goal of reason, the other was the result of imagination. The one made the theology of the philosopher, the other that of the multitude. Reason protested against Polytheism, which Empedocles could not have done had his theology been merely a deification of phenomenal nature. Tradition says that Empedocles proclaimed himself divine, and to prove it, leaped into the crater of Mount Etna. The mountain disproved his divinity by casting up his sandal. This may be true or it may be only the popular interpretation of his identification of the human and the divine Reason.

ANAXAGORAS.—To understand fully the development of the theological sentiment among the Greeks, it is necessary to notice Anaxagoras, the great father of all Anti-Pantheistic theologians. What men are saying to day against Pantheism was said with equal force by Anaxagoras, and the more vulnerable parts of his theology are as ill defended by church doctors as they were by this old Greek. He was no metaphysician, but a man who believed his senses, and had never made sufficient enquiries into the nature of reason to be troubled with the questions that perplexed Zeno or Parmenides. Why should he doubt the reality of the visible world? Was it not there before his eyes? and why should he suppose any hidden relationship between mind and matter? Was not mind the active principle, and matter the passive reality. Why should some material element be the first being, and not that mind which is the ruling power over matter? God is mind, and matter is something arranged by Him. What theology can be more simple? No questions of the co-existence of a material finite and an immaterial infinite stood in the way of Anaxagoras. Speculations on the attributes of time and space did not concern him. Why should an infinite Being differ from a finite, except in being greater, and why otherwise should an infinite Mind not be the same as a finite mind? God made the world as a man makes a machine. He gave it laws and left it to the operation of laws, interfering only when it needs repair. In His far off dwelling place beyond the boundaries of the universe He beheld His workmanship, and was present to it as a man is present to the objects perceived by his sense of sight.

Compared with the other philosophers of the Ionic school,

Aristotle said "the philosopher of Clazomenæ was like a sober man." Socrates, however, did not estimate him so highly. "Having one day," says that philosopher, "read a book of Anaxagoras, who said the divine mind was the cause of all things, and drew them up in their proper ranks and classes, I was ravished with joy. I perceived there was nothing more certain than this principle that mind was the cause of all things."* Socrates purchased the books of Anaxagoras, and began to read them with avidity, but he had not proceeded far till he found his hopes disappointed. The author, he said, "makes no further use of this mind, but assigns as the cause of the order and beauty that prevailed in the world, the air, water, whirlwind, and other agencies of nature."

Aristotle, too, on further study was less pleased with Anaxagoras, and corrected his own views by coming nearer Parmenides. In after times the theology of Anaxagoras developed into the schools of Democritus and Epicurus, who dispensed with the hypothesis of a world maker, or rather left Him in His far distant home, reposing in silent dignity, and regarding the world as unworthy of His interference.

SOCRATES AND THE SCEPTICS.—For the same reason that we notice Anaxagoras, a few words are required for Socrates and the Sceptics. The Eleatics had questioned the objective reality of the phenomenal world on the ground of the uncertainty of sense knowledge; but if the objects of sense are denied reality, why, said the Sceptics, should it be granted to the subjects of reason. Knowledge is only relative. Our perceptions are different at different times and in different states. How do we know that truth is not beyond the reach of the human mind? "Man," said Protagoras, "is the measure of all things: what he perceives is, but its existence is only subjective—it exists only for him. The universal application of this principle ended in universal scepticism. In the light of it, knowledge is a dream, religion is superstition, might is right, and laws, but the conventional regulations of governments and states.

Socrates occupied himself solely with Ethics.† He tried to

* Anaxagoras says that all things at the beginning arose, and then came the world's Intelligence and shaped and embellished every individual species, wherefore it was called the great Intelligence.—*Diogenes Laertius*.

† Socrates employed himself about Ethics, and entirely neglected the speculation respecting the whole of nature, in morals indeed investigating the universals and applying himself to definitions. Plato approving this, his investigation of morals, adopted this much of his doctrine, that these definitions respect other things and are not conversant with anything sensible.—*Aristotle*.

find in reason a certain foundation for morals. The Sceptic said "What I perceive to be true is true only to me; my knowledge is not merely subjective, but it is individual, and therefore empirical." "That," Socrates would have said, "may be so with you as an individual, but not as a partaker of the universal reason. Human knowledge is not merely relative and empirical, for the measure of all things is not the individual, but the universal man. Morality has a basis in universal reason. It is something eternal, immutable, absolute.

Consistently with his purely ethical studies, Socrates sought in God a Being who answered to the moral necessities of the heart. From his youth he felt himself drawn towards the "pure and unchangeable mind." His God was the "mind" of Anaxagoras; but Socrates did not introduce Him as simply making the world. He also preserves it, He is the God of providence as well as of creation. He takes care of all. Nothing is unworthy of His regard—nothing too mean for Him to be indifferent to it, He is at once the author and king of the world.

PLATO.—Socrates sought to establish a foundation for moral truth. He found it in absolute reason.* In the same reason Plato found a basis for the truth of our knowledge of the reality of being. It comes not from the senses, but from the intercourse of our reason with the Divine. There can be no science derived from the perceptions of sense. They cannot reach that which *is*. They never go beyond phenomena. All their intercourse is with the apparent. But the mind has reminiscences of its former knowledge. Though now imprisoned in the body, it has its home in the bosom of the Eternal. It remembers the truth it once knew when it stood face to face with real existence. Truth belongs to the mind. Thoughts

* This connection between Socrates and Plato is only inferential, and may be disputed. His "Knowledge," according to Professor Thompson, was a knowledge of consequences generalized from experience. On this ground Grote claims Socrates for a "Utilitarian."

According to Xenophon, Socrates regarded the soul of man as allied to the Divine mind, not by its essence but by its nature elevated by reason above the rank of the mere animal creation.

It appears from the *Phaedo* that Socrates had the Buddhist notion of the wretchedness of the present existence. He looks upon the union of a body with the soul as a penalty. By the pre-existence of the soul he seems to mean its identity with the divine Being. He calls the soul "*That which is*." In the *Gorgias* again, he says, "I should not wonder if Euripides speaks the truth when he says 'Who knows whether to live is not death, and to die, life.'"

are verities. To limit the reality of existence to the *One*, Parmenides denied it to the *manifold*, and Heraclitus denied it to both the *One* and the *many* that he might ascribe it to the *Becoming*. But Plato saw in the *One** the thinker, and in the manifold his thoughts. And who shall separate between the mind and its thoughts? Both are one. Both are realities, and therefore we ascribe real existence both to the one and the manifold. Objects of sense have an existence so far as they participate in the ideal. Thus, man, house, table, exist but only because the ideas, man, house, table, are real existences. Our conceptions become perceptions. The manifold has thus a double existence. One in its ideals, another in phenomena. The latter is the world of sense, what men call the material, and what the vulgar suppose to be reality. But its existence is only borrowed. It is a shadow—a copy of that which is real, the realities are the ideas, the archetypes. The manifold then is at once being, and the semblance of being.

But these *ideas*, are they identical with God or distinct from God? Plato answers sometimes that they are identical, and at other times that they are distinct from God. This lies at the root of Plato's theology, and leaves an uncertainty whether God in his system is merely abstract Being or a personal creative Deity.

* This is only an interpretation of Plato. He does not call God the One, he calls Him Being. "Plato's one," says Professor Thompson, "is relation, a thought as against a thing or perception, a genus as opposed to individuals, &c., he rejects the absolute One of Parmenides at least under that name. Mind is with him the giver of the *limit* not the limit itself; the efficient rather than the formal cause; that cause which blends the limit with the unlimited; in short, a creative energy, if we may not say, conscious Creator."

Warburton ascribes the notion of the derivation of the souls of men from the Divine essence, and their final resolution into it to all the philosophers of antiquity, without exception. Archer Butler thinks this opinion unsupported in the case of Platonism, as it came from the hands of Plato; yet he says, "Plato may in the last analysis have embraced all things in some mysterious unity; an idea which in some vague sense it is impossible for human reason to avoid."

According to the *Timæus* the universe was generated, it was modelled after an eternal pattern. It is a blessed god, having its soul fixed in the centre, yet existing throughout the whole. The soul was made before the body. Between soul and body there is an intermediate, made up of the indivisible and divisible essence. The three are mingled into one. The eternal universe was a living existence; so the deity tried to make the sensible universe, as far as he could, similarly perfect. Time was generated with the universe. Eternity is a unity. The stars are generated gods, living existences endowed with souls. Fire, water, &c., should not be called "*this*" or "*that*," not being "*things*." Before the creation of the universe there were *being, place*, and generation. The charge of producing mortal natures was committed by the Creator to his offspring the junior gods.

In the one case the ideas are the being of God; in the other God is a Being who creates the universe after the pattern of the ideas. But where is the phenomenal world? Do the ideas create the phenomenal or is it eternal? When God made the world, He made it after the ideal pattern, but on what did he impress the idea? Here Plato ascribes eternity to that which is non-existent, matter. 'This shadowy semblance of being existed. It was that in which the idea took shape and form, and yet it is nothing.* It has the capacity to receive any variety of form, yet it is undetermined, shapeless, and invisible. It receives and preserves being, only as it has in itself the ideal form. The visible universe is the result of ideas with this substratum of non-existence. The universal mind is God. He is the highest of our ideas, and the source of all thinking and knowing. He is "*the Good*." In this supreme Idea all ideas have their ground and centre. Though itself exalted above division, yet in it the perceiver and the perceived, the subject and the object, the ideal and the real, are all one.

In returning to the Socratic faith in the capacity of the mind to know the truth, and applying it to the nature of essence, Plato in reality returned to Eleatic ground, and in following out his method, he arrived at the absolute reality in the same way as Xenophanes, Parmenides, and Zeno, had done before him. The God of reason was Being absolute.† God must be this, and yet Plato recoiled from the immoveable Deity of the Eleatics. God is this, but He is something else even if it be something inconsistent with this. He is moveable; He is intelligent; He is mind; the king of the world; the father of the universe; God who according to reason must be entirely unlike man, must yet again have attributes corresponding to those of men.

ARISTOTLE.—At the point where Plato took up the ground of Socrates, Aristotle differed from Plato. He said that Plato

* Plato, says Archer Butler, calls matter *the unlimited*; intelligence, the *limit*—one and many—single and multiple—indivisible and divisible—unchangeable and changeable—absolute and relative—example and copy—the good and the manifestation of the good—the object of science, eternal being and the object of opinions. Professor Thompson adds, "Bare matter he scarcely distinguished from place."

† Plato dedicated his mature powers to the task of reconciling the Ephesian doctrine of a flux, and becoming with the Eleatic principle of Parmenides.—*Professor Thompson's Notes*.

Plato, like most philosophers after Anaxagoras, made the supreme Being to be Intelligence, but in other respects left His nature undefined or rather indefinite though the variety of definition, a conception floating vaguely between Theism and Pantheism.—*Mackay's Progress*.

had never proved how ideas have an objective reality, nor had he even rationally explained how objects of sense participate in the ideal. Socrates proclaimed the universal as the essence of the individual—and so far he was right. Plato raised the conception of a universal to the rank of being, independent of the individual, and there, said Aristotle, Plato was wrong. Aristotle's method differed so much from Plato's that these two philosophers have come to be regarded as the respective representatives of the two great classes of minds into which all men may be divided. But their conclusions differ less than their methods.

Aristotle began with observations on the external world, but he found that in this way he could never get beyond the external. Sense acquaints us only with individual existence. We must get beyond this. We do get beyond this, for we have the knowledge of the universals. We have abstract ideas of things. Whence are these? From reason. The universal and the individual are then co-existent. We cannot separate a thing from our conception of it. The universal is immanent in the individual. It is as Plato said, the essence of the individual, but it is not itself independent of the individual. It is like form to the material in which form has its existence, yet only by means of the universal can we know the essence of any one particular thing. Though not independent, it is yet that which is actual, while the individual is only the potential. The absolute actuality is mind, and matter is the same essence in its potential being. There are four first causes, or first principles. Matter, form, moving cause, and end. As in a house there is the matter, the conception, the worker, and the actual house. These four determinations of all being resolve themselves into the fundamental ones of matter and form. The moving cause, form and end, stand together as opposed to matter. The last is that abiding something which lies at the basis of all becoming, and yet in its own being it is different from anything which has become. Whatever is, has been before potentially. Individual beings are produced by the coalescing of potential being and pure form. Every "That" is a meeting of potential and actual being. But there is a guiding power superintending these processes of progression. That power is a prime activity, a pure actuality, a first Mover. That Mover is God. The relation of the Divine to that of the world is left by Aristotle undertermined. In some places he seems to meet Plato, but in others he separates God from all being and becoming, con-

templating Him as absolutely mind, not dwelling in the universe and moving it as the soul moves the body; but moving it externally, Himself unmoved and free from nature. The world has a soul, but it is not God. God is maker of the world soul, which is the movable mover outside of the immoveable Mover.

"Aristotle's leaning was, seemingly, to a personal God, not a being of parts and passions, but a substantial head of all the categories of being. The doctrine of Anaxagoras revived out of a more elaborate and profound analysis of nature. Soon, however, the vision of personality is withdrawn. We have, in fact, reached that culminating point in thought where the real blends with the ideal; moral action and objective thought as well as material body are excluded. The Divine action on the world retains its veil of impenetrable mystery, and to the utmost ingenuity of research presents but a contradiction. God becomes the formal, efficient, final cause. He is the one Form comprising all forms. Acting and working is denied him, only activity of thought is ascribed to Him. The object of the absolute thought is the absolute good. In contemplating it the supreme Finality can but contemplate itself. Its immutable action is as the uniform self-circling revolution of the stellar heavens, and as all thought consists in contact and combination with the things thought, so all material inference being here excluded, the distinction of subject and object vanishes in complete identification, and the Divine thought is the thinking of thought. The energy of mind is life, and God is that energy in its purity and perfection. He is therefore life itself, eternal and perfect. This indeed seems all that is meant by the term God. 'Such,' says Aristotle, 'is the principle on which nature and the world depend.' If it be asked how these transcendent things came to be a part of a professedly empirical philosophy, and whence our knowledge of them, he replies that there is a faculty in the soul bearing the same relation to its proper objects as sensation does to phenomena, a faculty by which we recognize the object with certainty."

THE STOICS.—Plato and most of his predecessors endeavored to reduce all being to unity by denying reality to matter. As he admitted only reason for a channel of knowledge, he was consistent in regarding matter as non-being. But Aristotle, believing his senses as well as his reason, left the dualism mind and matter unreconciled. With Plato God was One and all things. With Aristotle God was One, and the universe a distinct existence. But as nothing can be which has not been

before. As there can be no addition to the totality of existence, Aristotle made two eternal, the one Form, the other Matter. God and the *material* from which the universe was made. The Stoics were not satisfied with the duality. They felt with Plato, that all must be one; that an infinite cannot leave a finite standing over against it. They were willing to trust the testimony of sense, and to admit that logically mind and matter God and the world are separate and distinct, yet the Stoics contended that actually they must be one. To show how God and the universe were distinct, and yet one was the problem of Zeno and his disciples. They did this by a philosophy of common sense, in which they acknowledged the truth both of our conceptions and our perceptions. The sensuous impression of an external object they looked upon as a revelation to the mind of the object itself. Sense furnished the materials of knowledge. Reason compared them and formed ideas. But if in this way all ideas came from the senses, how can we have an idea of pure spirit? The Stoics were consistent, they denied that we have such an idea, and with that they denied the existence of anything incorporeal. That every existence must have a body was the doctrine which moulded the whole of the theology of the Stoics. They did not define what a body was, that was impossible, bodies, beings of all kinds from the spiritual to the grossly material. But the very indefiniteness in which they left the idea of the corporeal, showed that they were far removed from the school of Epicurus. Their great enquiry was concerning the world—whence it is. Evidently it is not eternal as Aristotle supposed, since it is something produced. What we know of the world producer must be learned from the world itself. Being is evidently divisible into the active and the passive. A producing and a produced are the two obvious principles in the actual world. There must then be a similar two-foldness in the Original of the world, an active principle and a passive—the one a living power, the other a passive potentiality—the one that from which everything is, the other that through which everything is. The passive is the original matter—a lifeless and inert substance. The active is the efficient cause or producing power. But this cause must be corporeal, and yet how can we conceive of it under any known form of body. The Stoics tried to separate the living power which creates the universe from every idea of gross matter, and at the same time they felt that to have a definite conception of that power we must clothe it with some material

form. The active principle was therefore conceived as having for its substratum the nature of external fire, but to protect this representation from the misconception of ordinary minds, they also called it spirit.

The first expression of the working of the active principle is in forming the primary elements from the original matter; the second, in forming bodies. The active principle thus working externally in unorganized nature Chrysippus calls the binding power, and supposes the air to be its substratum or substance. This power acting in its higher operations producing the life of nature, and animating all forms of organism from the humblest plant to the highest spirit-life he calls the ether, but though the one active principle has many powers and functions, it is still but one, as the human mind with all its faculties is an undivided unity. This active principle is again considered as the original source of all right and morality—the principle of law-giving—the world order. The moral order is therefore of the essence of God, or in other words, this moral order is our divinest conception of the nature of God, for in this God appears as the unchangeable and the eternal, the absolute Being whose existence implies the highest rectitude, wisdom, and perfection. Tiedemann says of the Stoics—"Among all the philosophers of antiquity, none defended the existence of God with so warm a zeal or so many and so powerful arguments." The chief of these was the undeniable existence of right in the world. This shows a relationship between man and God, and the existence of a Deity as a moral Being, as the principle of moral law-giving and world order, that is, of right and morality. In the last analysis there is in reality but one Being existing. We may call Him God, or we may call Him the universe. The one is God active, the other is God passive. The one is the life, the other is the body which is animated by the life. The one is the creative energy, the other is the ground or substratum in which this energy is at work, and to which it is united. God is the soul of the great animal world. He is the universal Reason which rules over all, and permeates all. He is that gracious providence which cares for the individual as well as for the all. He is infinitely wise. His nature is the basis of law, forbidding evil and commanding good. By the very order of creation He punishes them that do evil, and rewards them that do well, being in Himself perfectly just and righteous. He is not a spirit, for that is nothing; as we have no idea corresponding to such an existence, but He is the

subtlest element of matter. He is in the world as those wonder-working powers and ever-creating energies which we see in all nature, but whose essence baffles our reason to penetrate. He is the most mysterious of all things we know, and more mysterious than all mysteries. He is the divine Ether. He is the breath that passes through all nature; He is the fire that kindles the universe. From Him issues forth that stream of divine life in which nature lives, and which flowing forth into all her channels makes her rejoice to live. Seneca, the Roman representative of the philosophers of the porch, calls God the Maker of the universe, the Judge and Preserver of the world the Being upon whom all things depend—the spirit of the world; and then he adds, “Every name belongs to Him—all things spring from Him. We live by His breath; He is all, in all His parts; He sustains Himself by His own might. His divine breath is diffused through all things small and great. His power and his presence extend to all. He is the God of heaven and of all the gods. The divine powers which we worship singly are all subject to Him.”

That the ground of all things is one reality, and that that reality is God, is the burden of nearly all the speculations of the Greeks, and the end of all their enquiries. They deny reality to created things lest two realities existing together might imply two everlasting beings, which is contradictory to the utterances of reason concerning being. The individual things proceed from God, and so far as they are real they are of God, but in their individuality they are distinct from God, what that reality of things is, each school has tried to express, but all the expressions involve a contradiction as they express something definite, while God is beyond definition—the undefined and the infinite.

The Materials of this Chapter are gathered from Schweglers's History of Philosophy, Mr. Lewes' Biographical History, Mr. Maurice's volumes on Greek Philosophy in the *Encyclopædia Metropolitana*, Archer Butler's Lectures on Philosophy, Mackay's Progress of the Intellect among the Greeks; the Histories of Brucker, Ritter, and Tennemann; with the Translations of Plato in Bohn's Library, and Thomas Taylor's Translations of Aristotle.

CHAPTER IV.

PHILOSOPHY OF THE JEWS.

THE Hebrew Scriptures begin with the creation of the world. The creating God or gods is called *Elohim*, "a name," says Gesenius, "retained from Polytheism and which means the higher powers or intelligences."* That the sacred writer should use a word borrowed from Polytheism will not surprise those who understand the nature of language, but that the writer himself had passed from Polytheism to the belief of the One God is evident from the whole of the record of creation, and confirmed by the succeeding history. To Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, the name of God was *El Shaddai*. To Moses God revealed Himself by the new name Jehovah or *I AM*. The God of Moses was pure *Being*. It was the name Jehovah which kept the Jews from idolatry. In proportion as they ceased to think of their Deliverer as the unspeakable Being they were in danger of worshipping the gods of the nations. "This new name," as Dean Stanley says, "though itself penetrating into the most abstract metaphysical idea of God, yet in its effect was the very opposite of a mere abstraction." The old Jews did not speculate about the Essence of God, though they had reached the highest conception of that Essence. Guarded by the declaration once for all that the nature of God was mysterious and His name ineffable, they were free to make Him a person—to ascribe to Him attributes and to represent Him as made in the image of man. He has hands and feet. He rules as a king, dwelling with Israel in Canaan, protecting them with His mighty arm, and watching over them with ever open eyes, which are in every place, beholding the evil and the good. All the mighty objects of nature are summoned to express God. The great mountains are the mountains of God; the

* Hebrew grammarians find a similar plurality in the Godhead indicated by the title *Jehovah Sabaoth*, Lord of hosts. Jehovah is not here in the construct state, so that the proper translation should be without the "of." The words are in apposition, and the meaning is, that in Jehovah, all hosts are comprized. He is all in all. By the Rabbinical writers, God is called *Makom*, place, because He is the place of everything.

tall trees are the trees of God; and the mighty rivers the rivers of God. He is the Rock of safety, whose way is perfect. He maketh Lebanon and Sirion to skip like a young unicorn. It is His voice that roars in the raging of the waters; His majesty that speaks in the thunder; and when the storm and tempest break down the mighty cedars, it is the voice of the Lord, yea, it is the Lord who breaketh the cedars of Libanus. This psalm* expresses the full extent to which the old Hebrews went in the identification of God and nature. They never surpassed this even in poetry; and never forgot that the Lord sitteth above the water floods, and that the Lord is king for ever. The personifying tendency natural to a race of men who had to fight for their own national existence, as well as for the doctrine of the divine Unity, interfered with all speculation concerning the divine Essence. It exposed them however to the idolatry against which their national existence was meant to be a continual witness. The search for symbols led them to liken God to things in heaven and earth and the waters under the earth. The world, according to Josephus, is "the purple temple of God," and to imitate this temple, the Jews built the tabernacle, and afterwards the great temple of God at Jerusalem. The symbols permitted them by Moses and David and Solomon became objects of worship. The images borrowed from nature to express God prepared them for the worship of Baal and Ashteroth, the sun, moon, and stars, the gods of the Sidonians, of Chaldea, and the nations round about them.

We may perhaps fairly date the origin of Jewish philosophy from the time of the Captivity. The metaphysical idea involved in the name of Jehovah becomes prominent and acts its part as the personifying idea had done before it. The sin of the Jews is no longer idolatry. They are henceforth without *Teraphim*.† The unity of God was not unknown either to the Chaldeans or the Persians. Abraham only conserved a doctrine well-known to his ancestors of Chaldea, but in his day almost hidden by the prevailing idolatry. When the Jews went into Babylon and Persia, did they hear again from the sages the philosophical notion of God, or did the idea implied in the name *I AM* come naturally to its proper development? The answer is immaterial. The Jewish Rabbis who prosecuted the metaphysical idea of God, maintained that their speculations were familiar to learned Jews, and that though the Scriptures

* Psalm xxix. † Hosea iii, 4.

speak of God as a *person*, which was a necessity of the popular mind, yet we are to distinguish between the popular aspect of Jewish theology and that theology itself. The latter was the *Esoteric* teaching, the former simply *Exoteric*. To the Rabbis was confided the hidden philosophy which the multitude could not receive. How far Rabbinical philosophy agreed with the Scriptures or differed from them must be left for the present an open question. The Hellenist Jews may have borrowed from the Greeks and Orientals, or the Greeks and Orientals may have borrowed from the Jews. Or, again, it may have been that the philosophies of each were natural developments. Some thoughts belong universally to the soil of the human intellect, and have an independent growth among nations that have no intercourse with each other. But even when a doctrine is borrowed, there must be previously a disposition to receive, for a borrower will only borrow what is congenial to his own mind. Religious teachers, as Schleiermacher says, do not choose their disciples, their disciples choose them. The many points of agreement between Judaism and the philosophies of the Greeks and Orientals, leave it open for us to say either that the Heathen got their wisdom from the Jews or that the roots and germs of Christian doctrines are revealed to the universal reason. The speculative Jews have maintained that the philosophy of Judaism as they understand it was the source and beginning of all philosophies. Plato is with them but an Attic Moses, and Pythagoras a Greek philosopher who borrowed the mysteries of Monads and Tetrads from the chosen people.

We have supposed that from the time of the Captivity, the Jews had a philosophy of religion; but of this philosophy the traces are few, and the authorities uncertain, until near the beginning of the christian era. Eusebius has preserved some fragments of Aristobulus supposed to be the Alexandrian Jew mentioned in the Maccabees as King Ptolemy's instructor. In these fragments Aristobulus clearly distinguishes between God Himself, as the first God, the ineffable and invisible, and God as manifested in the phenomenal world. And in the letter ascribed to Aristeas, librarian to Ptolemy Philadelphus, we see Judaism and Hellenism forming so near an alliance that each regards the other as but a different form of itself. Aristeas informs Ptolemy that the same God who gave him his kingdom gave the Jews their laws. "They worship Him," says Aristeas, "who created all, provides for all, and is prayed to by all, and especially by us, only under another name." And Eleazar, the

high priest of Jerusalem, when asked by Aristeas if it was not unworthy of God to give laws concerning meats, such as those given to the Jews, answered "that they were indeed insignificant; and though they served to keep the Jews as a distinct people, yet they had beyond this a deep allegorical meaning. "The great doctrine of Moses," said Eleazar, "is, that the power of this one God is through all things;" words in which the students of Alexandrian philosophy have seen an intimation of that Spirit which is through all and in all. It has been thought, too, that in the Greek version of the Scriptures made at Alexandria, there are evident marks of the influence of Greek thought on the minds of the translators, who seem often to have chosen such words as left the ground clear for a Platonic interpretation, and sometimes, even to suggest it. Some of the most remarkable of these are the translation of the name of God. "I am that I AM," which the Seventy render "I am He that IS;" and the second verse of the first chapter of Genesis, where the Hebrew words which simply mean that the earth was confusion, are translated "The earth was invisible and unformed," pointing it has been supposed, to the ideal or typical creation of Plato, which preceded the material. "The Lord of hosts" is usually translated "the Lord of the powers," or, "the Lord of the powers of heaven," the Greek name for the inferior gods.

The Books of the Apocrypha, which were mostly written by Hellenist Jews, have also been pressed into this service, but the evidence they furnish is uncertain. Solomon is made to speak of himself as good coming undefiled* into a body; which seems to be allied to the Platonic idea of the body being the cause of sin. He is also made to speak of the incorruptible Spirit† of God being in all things. But the verses supposed to be most conclusive are those which speak of wisdom as the creative power of God; "A pure influence flowing from the glory of the Almighty. She is the brightness of the everlasting light—the unspotted mirror of the power of God—the image of his goodness; and being but one she can do all things, and remaining in herself she createth all things new and in all ages; entering into holy souls she maketh them friends of God and prophets. She preserved the first formed father of the world, who was created, alone, and brought him out of his fall."

* Wisdom of Solomon—viii, 20.

† Wisdom of Solomon—xii, 1.

‡ Wisdom of Solomon—vii, 25, 6 7, and x, 1.

Again, the son of Sirach makes wisdom thus praise herself:—

I came out of the mouth of the most High,
 And covered the earth as a cloud.
 I dwelt in high places,
 And my throne is in a cloudy pillar.
 I alone compassed the circuit of heaven,
 And walked in the bottom of the deep.
 In the waves of the sea, and in all the earth,
 And in every people and nation, I got a possession.
 With all these I sought rest :
 And in whose inheritance shall I abide ?
 So the Creator of all things gave me a commandment,
 And He that made me, caused my tabernacle to rest,
 And said, Let thy dwelling be in Jacob,
 And thine inheritance in Israel.
 He created me from the beginning before the world,
 And I shall never fail.
 In the holy tabernacle I served before him :
 And so was I established in Sion.
 Likewise in the beloved city he gave me rest,
 And in Jerusalem was my power.
 And I took root in an honorable people,
 Even in the portion of the Lord's inheritance.*

* * * *

I am the mother of fair love,
 And fear, and knowledge, and holy hope,
 I therefore being eternal, am given to all my children,
 Which are named of Him.

That these verses speak of wisdom as the creative power of God in much the same way as wisdom is spoken of in heathen philosophies, is not to be denied. It is also true that they were composed in Greek, and in a heathen city; but their likeness to the words of wisdom in the book of Proverbs, forbids us to say that they were borrowed from heathen philosophy. The writer may indeed have felt the harmony between the thoughts of the Alexandrians and those of the Jews, and may have delighted to show the Heathen that his nation was already in possession of a philosophy not inferior to theirs.

But if the influence of Greek philosophy is only imperfectly discerned in the Apocrypha, or the fragmentary writings of the Hellenist Jews, all doubt is removed by the works of Philo Judæus—the proper representative of Alexandrian Judaism. We have not indeed any treatise of Philo's on a subject purely speculative, and consequently, no complete or carefully defined system of speculation; but the ideas scattered through his prac-

* Ecclesiasticus xxiv, 3—18.

tical and expository writings, and his unceasing efforts to bring the teaching of the Old Testament into harmony with these ideas wherever it seemed to differ from them, sufficiently evidence his obligations to the Greek philosophers.

But how could the Old Testament be made to teach Greek Philosophy? The history of a practical nation like the Jews might be supposed beforehand to have but little relation to the thoughts of philosophers, who spent their lives in the study of causes and essences. Often indeed the connection between thought and action, philosophy and daily life, is closer than we imagine, and the Old Testament writers may have had metaphysical thoughts, though they wrote no books on metaphysics. It is, however, impossible in reading Philo, notwithstanding the advantage he had in using the Greek version of the Seventy, not to feel that his interpretations are more frequently read into the Scriptures than found there. But this need not concern us here; we come to Philo's writings neither to refute his doctrines nor to approve them, but only to trace the character of that philosophy which manifested itself among the Jews of Alexandria.

The Greek translation of "I AM" as "He that IS" at once allied the Jewish theology to that of Plato; for, "the Being" was pre-eminently the name of Plato's supreme Deity. From this Philo could at once speak of the God of the Jews as the Eleatics and Platonists had done of the Being without attributes, of whom nothing could be truly affirmed; of whom no likeness could be made, for He is unlike anything in heaven or earth; He is infinite, immutable, and incomprehensible; but these predicates do not say what He is; only what he is not. Qualities belong to finite beings, not to God. He is wiser than wisdom; fairer than beauty; stronger than strength. By reason we know that He is; but we have no faculty whereby to know what He is. We aid our feebleness by metaphors and illustrations from things material. We call Him the primitive light, from which all light emanates; the life, from which all life proceeds; the infinite Intelligence; but of Him, as He is in Himself, we only know that He is one, simple, and incapable of destruction. He has no name. To Moses He revealed Himself as "I AM THAT I AM," which, says Philo, is equivalent to saying "It is my nature to be; not to be described; but in order that the human race may not be wholly destitute of any appellation which they may give to the most excellent of beings, I allow you to use the word Lord as a name." "So indescribable is the

living God," he says again, "that even those powers which minister to Him do not announce to us His proper name." "After the wrestling with the Angel, Jacob said to the invisible Master, 'Tell me Thy name;' but He answered, 'Why askest thou my name?' "And so He does not tell him His peculiar and proper name, for," says He, "it is sufficient for thee to be taught by ordinary explanations; but as for names which are the symbols of created things, do not seek to find them among immortal natures." "A name can only designate something that is known; it brings it into connection with something else. Now, absolute Being cannot come into relation with something else. It fills itself; it is sufficient for itself. As before the existence of the world, so after it, Being is the all. Therefore, God who is absolute Being, can have no name." "Indeed," says Philo, "the name God does not worthily express the highest Being. It does not declare Him as He is, it only expresses a relation of the highest first Principle to the created. In reference to the universe, God is "the Good," but He is more than that; He is more than God. It is enough for the Divine nature to be and not to be known. He must be unchangeable, because He is perfectly simple; and the most perfect of all beings can be united with no other." "God does not mingle with anything else, for what is mingled with Him must be either better than He is, or worse, or equal; but there is nothing better or equal; and nothing worse can be mingled with Him, for then He would become worse, or perhaps annihilated, which it is wrong to suppose." Without attributes, without names, incomprehensible to the intellect of man, God is the One, the Monad, Being; "and yet," adds Philo, making a still higher effort to express the ineffable, "the Therapeutæ reverence God worthily, for they consider Him simpler than unity, and more original than the monad." He is more than life, for "He is the source of life itself."

The necessity of again connecting the divine Being with the created world and things conceivable and sensuous, after entirely separating between Him and them, involved a contradiction perhaps more than verbal. But each is a truth distinct by itself, and both are to be acknowledged as such, even if we cannot see the possibility of harmonizing them. God, though a simple essence and unlike things which proceed from each other, is yet the Cause of all the created universe. The unchangeable Being thus becomes the Cause, and being the ground essence of all becoming, that is, the phenomenal, must in some way be re-

lated to it. It may be admitted that the universe did not owe its origin directly to the first Being; for, indeed, the most beautiful of the sensuous world is unworthy of God; to say nothing of the more unworthy part, which to ascribe directly to God would be blasphemy; and yet without Him it could not be; so that He must be recognized, at least, as the Cause of causes. The unknowable thus becomes known, though known only as the unknowable. Thus to be ignorant of Him is truly to know Him. "Therefore," says Philo, "we, disciples and friends of the prophet Moses, do not leave off the inquiry concerning that which really is; holding fast that to know this, is the goal of fortune, is an unbroken, life whilst the law also says, 'That those who are near God, live.' Then indeed, those who are separated from God are dead in soul. An important doctrine, dear to a wise man; but those who have taken their place with God live an immortal life again." "The goal of this life is the knowledge and science of God." He is incomprehensible, and yet comprehensible. Incomprehensible to us men, and yet comprehensible to us so far as we are divine,* for there is in us a germ of the Deity, which may be developed to a divine existence; and though God cannot enter into the circle of the human, We may yet be raised to equality with Him, and then we shall both see Him and know Him. This is the goal which we have before us. Now we know God imperfectly through his works. He is a God afar off; an Essence whose existence is demonstrable by reason; though indeed this knowledge of God is only negative. But we rise to a true knowledge of Him as our being becomes assimilated to His being. We have visions of God, a pure and perfect knowledge, by intuition, phantasy, or whatever other name be given to that revelation by which God is revealed to the soul. "It is such as was given in part to Moses when transcending the created he received a representation of the uncreated; and through this comprehended both God and His creation."

The supreme Being is not then the immediate maker of the worlds. Beginning with the sensuous, which is the first step of the celestial ladder we ascend to the spiritual; for, the visible evidently reveals the working of the Invisible. But we cannot here infer only one Being; there are, evidently, more than one, at least, two, an original first Cause and an intelligent Being, who is the proximate cause. The latter, Philo says, is subjected

* Man was not made of the dust alone, but also of the divine Spirit.—*Philo*.

Quoted by John of Damascus

to the first, and is the mediating power between it and the dead unformed matter.

This mediating power is the *Logos*, or Word of God, the world maker. Philo gives the *Logos* a variety of names: He is the mediator between mortal and immortal races; He is God's name, God's interpreter, God's vicar; to man He is God; but on the divine side, the second God, or the image of God. The spirit world is the divine thought; the sensuous world, the divine speech; and the *Logos*, the capacity of God to think and speak. As thought, He is the *Logos* immanent; as speech, the *Logos* transient. Philo identifies the *Logos* with that wisdom which God is said to have created as the first of His works, and established before the *Eons*, the spouse of God, who is the father and the Mother of the all. Sometimes the *Logos* is plural, not only the Word, but the words of God; and these are identical with the divine powers or attributes. The two Cherubim in Genesis are the two highest powers of God; His goodness and His might. By the one He has created all, by the other he preserves all. Between these as a uniting bond, is the *Logos*, which embraces both; for, by the *Logos*, God rules, and creates, and shews mercy. The Cherubim were the symbols of these powers, and the flaming sword that turned either way was the divine *Logos*. In the same way the *Logos* is identified with other attributes, and distributed into different potencies of the divine Being; and as all these potencies are consubstantial, having their substratum in God, the *Logos* is identical now with the potencies, and now with the first Cause or supreme God; so that Philo ends in ascribing to the first Cause, through the *Logos*, those qualities, works and attributes, which he had otherwise denied Him; considering them unworthy of the first God. The Deity could not pervade matter, nor come into any relation to it; but through the *Logos* He is the maker and preserver of the world. By the *Logos*, God is restored to the world, and the oneness of the created and the uncreated becomes manifest through the mediating power or powers, for those powers are identical with God; they are also the spiritual world-plan, the perfect world after which this sensuous world is formed; and even it, so far as it is well formed, is itself the *Logos* or word of God. The spirit worlds are God's first begotten, and the sensuous His younger sons. "Ideas," "demons," "heroes," "angels," "the higher powers," have the same relation to the lower that God has to the higher. The necessity of personification may cause them to appear as distinct beings: but they have all in their degrees

a divine existence. Angels and spirits are the divine thought, and not separate from Him who thinks. He is the God of gods. The Chaldeans said "Either the visible world is itself a god or God contained in Himself is the soul of all things." From this view, says Philo, Moses differs, for he maintains either that the world-soul is the first God, or that the stars and their host cause what happens to man; but that all this universe is held together by invisible powers, which the world maker has extended from the uttermost part of the heavens to the end of the earth." Philo intended to differ from the Chaldeans by means of the *Logos*, word, words, or invisible powers distinct from God and yet identical with Him; but he differed only in intention, for Philo's chief God filled all things and went through them all, and left no place void or empty of Himself.* All the inferior Gods, the divine mediating powers, as well as the world, are all parts of the first God. He is the place of all things—that which embraces all things, but is Himself embraced by none. He extends Himself to all visible things, and fills the all with Himself. He is original light; matter is the darkness; the circles of being are light circles about the first Being. The *Logos* is a brilliant far-shining light, most like to God. The individual powers are rays which spread wider and wider the light they receive. The entire creation is an enlightened becoming of matter through the first light. It is the one God who is working always and in all. "The Lord looked down to see the city and the tower," "after the manner of men," says Philo, "Moses speaks; since who does not know that he who looks down, necessarily leaves one place and takes another. But all is full of God. He embraces, but is not embraced; and to Him alone it happens to be everywhere, and yet nowhere. Nowhere, because he created space and things corporeal; and it is not becoming to say that the Creator is contained in others, the things created, but *everywhere*, because He leaves no part of the world void; since by His presence He holds together the earth and water, and the wide heaven, and all things."

The *Logos* made the world. The ideal of creation, according to Plato, existed in the mind of God. Philo said that the *Logos* created the world after the pattern set forth in the ideal. But we must take care that the necessity of personifying does not mislead us. We have already seen that the ideal was itself the *Logos*. God's thought was His image, and as the thought was

* The soul of the universe, is, according to our definition, God.—Philo.

the likeness of God, so man was the likeness of the *Logos*. Creation may thus be regarded either as flowing forth from God, or, as being willed by Him. It is in reality an emanation; but as we personify God in the *Logos*, we must consider it as an act of the will. "Moses," says Philo, "taught that the material or younger creation was formed on the model of the archetypal or elder creation. As a plan exists in the mind of an architect, so did creation exist ideally in the mind of God. In the beginning, that is, out of time, God created the incorporeal heaven and the incorporeal earth, after the model perceptible by the mind. He created also the form of air and of empty space. He called the air darkness, and the space 'the deep.' He then made the incorporeal substances of the elements, and at last the ideal man; after forming the invisible heaven and earth with their inhabitants, the Creator formed the visible. But He could not be entirely responsible for the creation of mixed natures; so he called in *others*.—'Let us make man.' " The creation of Adam was the creation of human reason not yet united to a body. Through its union with the sensuous came the fall of man. The fall, in Philo's judgment, was a necessity, the natural result of creation; but it was a step in the divine procedure. Man shall rise through the *Logos*, through the working of the divine Reason within him; for the mind of man is a fragment of the Deity; his immortal nature is no other than the Spirit of God. It shall yet subdue the body, and rise to the purely divine.*

* To make out for Philo something like a congruous system, it has been thought desirable to pass by his inconsistencies, and especially his allegorical trifling with the Scriptures. "It is no easy matter," says Dähne, "to determine the qualities which Philo gives to matter, since he, like all his philosophical predecessors, in order to lead over all imperfection to this which he did not know how to separate in any other way from the most perfect God, placed matter along side of God as a second principle, which was naturally bound up with Him; but with this the national faith was at war; and as the faith of the people forbade its entrance, it was kept in the back ground; sometimes he seems to forget it, and sometimes he goes from one school to another. The same with all the Alexandrians, Heathen and Christian, and the same too with the Gnostic Heretics. Philo calls matter 'the void,' 'that which is empty;' and, like Plato's evil world-soul, he makes it the cause of evil. He seems to admit its existence as a something; and though he receives the axiom that nothing from nothing comes, he speaks, at times, of matter as if it had been created, having had no previous existence. And though he has spoken in full, concerning creation and the first existence of the sensuous world, he yet says that 'It is the most absurd of all ideas, to fancy that there ever was a time when the world did not exist, for its nature is without any beginning and without any end.'" God eternally creates. There was no time before the world. It is constituted by the movement of the heavens. Eternity has no past or future, it is now. There is no time in God. The days of creation are merely the

THE CABBALA.—The Cabbala is the secret tradition of the Jews, which explains the hidden meaning of the Scriptures, and contains the true *exoteric* doctrine of Rabbinical Judaism. The origin of the Cabbala is unknown. The present collection of books which profess to unfold it are supposed to have originated about the first or second century of the Christian era; but concerning the age of the doctrines contained in them we know nothing. The mystical Rabbis ascribe the Cabbala to the Angel Razael, the reputed teacher of Adam, and say that the Angel gave Adam the Cabbala as his lesson book in paradise. From him it descended to generation after generation. Noah read it in the ark; Abraham treasured it up in his tent; and through Jacob it was bequeathed to the chosen people. It was the charter of the national wisdom; their secret masonic

order of succession. God speaks, and it is done. "When God spoke to Moses, all the people saw the voice. The voice of man is audible, but the voice of God is visible in truth. What God speaks is not His word, but His works, which eyes and not ears perceive." It would be a sign of great simplicity, Philo thinks, for a man to suppose that the world was created in six days; or, indeed, created at all in time; but naked truth can only be received by very wise men; it must be put in the form of lies before the multitude can profit by it. The creation of Eve is manifestly a fable. God had put Adam, or human reason into an *ecstasy* (the Greek word), and the spiritual came in contact with the sensuous. In Genesis iii, 15, God says to the serpent, "*It shall bruise thy head;*" Who? Evidently the woman, says Philo; yet the Greek word is *He*. It cannot refer, grammatically, to the woman, who is feminine; nor to seed, which is neuter; it must then refer to the mind of man that shall bruise the head of the serpent, which is the cause of union between the mind and the sense. Eve bare Cain—*possession*;—the worst state of the soul is self-love, the love of individuality. Abel, or, *vanity*, was next conceived, in which the soul found out the vanity of possession. Cain slew Abel in a field, which is the man in whom the two opposite principles contended. From Cain sprung a wicked race; the evil consequences flowing from Cain's victory, when every desire after God was destroyed. Another interpretation of Cain killing Abel, is, that Cain killed *himself*; showing that the evil-doer naturally reaps the reward of his evil deeds. Abraham leaving Chaldea was his leaving the sensuous. The Babylonian Talmud complained that the *Seventy* had translated Gen. i, 27, "Male and Female created he him." Philo vindicated this translation, because the ideal man was masculine-feminine. "Of every tree of the garden thou mayest freely eat; but of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, *thou* shalt not eat of it; and in the day thou eatest thereof, *thou* shalt surely die." The *Seventy* make the pronoun in the first verse singular; but in the other two, the pronouns are plural, because, says Philo, the reasonable soul is alone required for the practice of virtue; but to enjoy the forbidden fruit, there is need not only of the soul but of the body and of sense. "Sacrifice and offering thou wouldst not, but a body hast thou prepared:" the body is given to man for sacrifice. It is to be renounced. When the high priest entered the Holy of Holies he became God. Where we read "There shall be no man in the tabernacle," Philo interprets,—When the high priest shall enter into the Holy of Holies, he shall be no more a man, until he comes forth again.

symbol. By its instruction Moses brought the Jews out of Egypt, and by its cunning wisdom Solomon built the temple without the sound of a hammer. That the collection of books which we possess is the original Cabbala may be true, though its wisdom much resembles that of the schools of Alexandria. The likeness of the Cabbalistic theology in some points to that of Zoroastrianism, has suggested the time of the captivity as the probable date of the origin of its earlier parts; but a likeness of this kind proves nothing. Its nearest kindred is the writings of Philo, and it is of nearly the same intrinsic worth.

The whole conceivable universe of being, spiritual and material, is one. It proceeded from one, and the process of this procession is the subject of the metaphysics of the Cabbala. It shows how all spirits and spirit worlds are on the one side blended with God, and how on the other they flow out into the visible world, and are connected with it. The first of beings, the chief Being, is *En-soph*; eternal and necessary, the everlasting or the oldest of existences. He is the absolute Unity, the Essence of essences, pre-eminently Being. But that He may not be considered as any one of the things that are, He is also called Non-being. He is separated from all that is, because He is the substance of all that is, the principle of all things, both as potential and as actual. Before creation, He is God concealed, dwelling in the thick darkness; but by creation, He is God revealed, with His light filling space infinite. Unrevealed He is the unopened fountain of spirit, life, and light; with His self-manifestation, these flow forth to all beings. He opened His eye, according to the Cabbalistic hieroglyphic, and light, spirit, and life streamed forth to all worlds.

This self-manifesting of God concealed, was creation or emanation. The power of the Infinite flowed forth in its three-fold form. The first act of unfolding, that which preceded creation, was called the word or speech of God. It is not distinct from God and the world. Priority or antecedence merely expresses the order of sequence. The Cabbalists, like Philo, know nothing of time, but as existing for the human mind. God and His manifestations are eternal. This Word was the first ray, the original, in which the principles of conception and production were united; the father and mother principle of the actual universe; the alpha and omega, the universe of forms; the first-born of God, and the creator of all things; at once the image of the ineffable God, and the form or pattern of the visible worlds, through which it proceeds as a divine ray in all

degrees of light, life, and spirit. At the head of this gradation is the celestial man, Adam Kadmon, the old or first Adam, who is united to the Infinite in and through the first ray, and is identical with that ray or word of God. He is the Macrocosm or great world, the archetype of the Microcosm or little world. In the celestial Adam we eternally exist. He is that wisdom, of whom it is said, that of old His delights were with the sons of men.

From *En-soph* emanate ten Sephiroths, or luminous circles. These represent the divine attributes. They manifest His wisdom, perfection and power. They are His vesture: "He clothes Himself with light as with a garment." By these He reveals Himself. They are also called the instruments which the supreme Architect employs in the operations of His ceaseless activity. They are not however instruments like the tools of an artizan, which may be taken up or laid down at pleasure. They are as the flame from the burning coal. They come from the essence of the Infinite. They are united to Him. As the flame discovers force which before lay concealed in the coal, so do these resplendent circles of light reveal the glory and the majesty of God. They are from Him, and of Him, as heat from the fire, and as rays from the sun; but they are not distinct from His Being. He suffers neither trouble nor sorrow when He gives them existence. They are no deprivation of His being; but as one flame kindles another without loss or violence, so the infinite Light sends forth His emanating Sephiroths. When the primordial ray, the first-born of God, willed to create the universe, He found two great difficulties.—First, all space was full of this brilliant and subtle light, which poured forth from the divine Essence. The creative Word must therefore form a void in which to place the universe. For this end He pressed the light which surrounded Him, and this compressed light withdrew to the sides and left a vacuum in the centre. The second difficulty arose from the nature of the light. It was too abundant, and too subtle for the creation to be formed of it. The creative Word therefore made ten circles, each of which became less luminous in proportion as it was removed from Himself. In this way, from *En-soph* to the meanest existence, we have a connected universe of being. The infinite light or emanation of the darkness is the All God. In His infinitude are placed all ranks and orders of existence. Around Him, in what we are compelled by the imperfection of thought and speech to call His immediate presence, are the pure spirits

of the highest sphere. Then spiritual substances less perfect. After these are angels or spirits clothed with bodies of light, which serve both as a covering and as chariots to convey them whither they will. Then follow spirits imprisoned in matter, subject to the perpetual changes of birth and death. Last of all gross matter itself, that of which human bodies and the world are composed, the corruption of the pure divine substance deprived of the perfections of spirit, and light, and life,—divinity obscured.

The Cabbalists believe in creation, but only in the sense of emanation. They do not find in Scripture that God made the world out of nothing. "From nothing, nothing comes" is with them an established doctrine. No one thing, they say, can be drawn from nothing. Non-existence cannot become existence. Either all things are eternal, which, they say is atheism, or they have emanated from the divine Essence. If it is objected how matter could emanate from God, they answer, that matter is not an actual existence, and in its logical annihilation they are not less successful than other philosophers. The efficient Cause being spirit, must, they say, produce what is like itself. Its effect must be a spiritual substance. True, indeed, there exists something gross, palpable, and material, but its existence is only negative—a privation of existence. As darkness is a privation of life, as evil is a privation of good, so is matter a privation of spirit. As well say that God made darkness, sin, and death, as say that He made the substances which we call sensible and material. The sum is—all is a manifestation of God. The divine Word is manifesting itself always, and in all places. Angels and men, beasts of the field and fowls of the air, animated insects, grains of sand on the sea-shore, atoms in the sunshine—all, so far as they do exist, have their existence in that which is Divine.

Authorities :—Mangey's Edition of the Works of Philo ; the Translation of Philo in Bohn's Library ; Dähne's *Geschichtliche Darstellung der Jüdisch-Alexandrischen Religions-Philosophie* ; *Cabbala Denudata*.

CHAPTER V.

NEO-PLATONISM.

IT is only Ammonius the porter,—said some Alexandrians to each other. “He professes to teach the philosophy of Plato;” and they laughed contemptuously, thinking how much better it would suit him to be making his day’s wages at the harbour instead of troubling his mind about essences and first principles, entelechies, potentialities, and actualities. But the Alexandrians were earnest truth seekers, and when Ammonius Saccas intimated that he was to lecture on philosophy, an audience was soon collected. Among this audience was a young man with a look of unusual earnestness. He had listened to many philosophers. He had questioned many sages. His search for truth had been deep and earnest, long and ardent; now he is about to abandon it as hopeless. The abyss of scepticism lies before him. He knows no alternative but to go onward to it; and yet his spirit pleads that there must be such a thing as truth within the reach of man. The universe cannot be a lie. On the verge of despair he listens to Ammonius, and ere many words had been spoken, he exclaims, “This is the man I am seeking.” That pale, eager youth was the great Plotinus, the mystical spirit of Alexandria, who, with Plato in his hand, was destined to influence the religious philosophy of all succeeding ages. With the devotion of a true philosopher, Plotinus sat for eleven years at the feet of the Alexandrian porter. He then visited the East, that he might learn the philosophies of India and Persia. Rich in Asiatic speculation, he returned to Rome, and opened a school of philosophy. Charmed by his eloquence, multitudes of all ranks gathered around him. Men of science, physicians, senators, lawyers, Roman ladies, enrolled themselves as his disciples; nobles dying, left their children to the charge of the philosopher; bequeathing to him their property, to be expended for their children’s benefit. Galienus wished to re-build Campania, and place him over it, that he might form a new society on the principles of Plato’s republic. Strange and

wonderful was the power over men possessed by this mystical philosopher. He discoursed of the invisible; and even the Romans listened. As he himself had been in earnest, so were men in earnest with him. What had he to tell them? What was the secret of his power?

There was a new element in Plotinus which was not found in the old Greek philosophers. He was religious, he wished to be *saved*. Indeed, this word was used by the Neo-Platonists in the same sense as it was used by the church; only, the way of salvation for them was through philosophy. They sought to know God, and what revelation of truth God made to the human mind. Aristotle could pass with indifference from theology to mathematics, his sole object being to improve his intellectual powers; but Plotinus regarded philosophical speculation as a true prayer to God. He had, as he explains it, embraced the philosophical life, and it was the life of an angel in a human body. The object of knowledge was the object of love; perfect knowledge was perfect happiness, for, necessarily, from the right use of reason would follow the practice of virtue.

Neo-Platonism has been called Eclectic, and this rightly. It not only borrowed from other systems, but with some of them it sought to be identified; and on many points the identity is not to be disputed. That the senses alone could not be trusted had been abundantly proved, and individual reason only led to scepticism. The one remaining hope was in the universal reason. But between reason individual and reason universal, there is a great breach: the former has but a partial participation in the latter, and is therefore defective. Common sense is the judgment of an aggregate of individuals, and is to be trusted to the extent that, that aggregate partakes of the universal reason. Beyond this no school of Greek philosophy had as yet advanced. A further step had been indicated by Parmenides and Plato, and is now consistently and logically made by Plotinus. That step was to identify the individual reason with the universal; but this could only be done by the individual losing itself in the universal. There is truth for man just in proportion as he is himself true. Let man rise to God, and God will reveal Himself to him. Let man be still before the awful majesty, and a voice will speak. In this divine teaching, inspiration or breath of God passing over us, is the only ground of truth. And the reason is, that our home from which we have strayed is in the bosom of the Infinite. He is near us at all times, but we do not feel His presence because we love self. Let

us put aside what holds us back from Him; all that weighs us down and prevents us ascending to the heights of divine contemplation. Let us come alone, and in solitude seek communion with the Spirit of the universe, and then shall we know Him who is the true and the Good. When we become what we were before our departure from Him, then shall we be able truly to contemplate Him, for in our reason He will then contemplate Himself. In this ecstasy, this enthusiasm, this intoxication of the soul, the object contemplated becomes one with the subject contemplating. The individual soul no longer lives. It is exalted above life. It thinks not, for it is above thought. It thus becomes one with that which it contemplates; which then is neither life nor thought, for it is above both. It is not correct to say that Plotinus abandoned reason for faith; he holds fast to reason, but it is human reason, at one with the Divine. To the mind thus true, thus united to universal reason, truth carries with it its own evidence.

Our knowledge begins with the sensuous world. The manifold is, at first, alone accessible to us. We cannot see that which is eternal till purified by long labours, prayers, and this particular illuminating grace of God. At first our weakness is complete; We must penetrate the nature of the world to learn to despise it, or, if it embraces any spark of true good, to seize it and use it to exalt our souls and lead them back to God. As Plato instructed by Heraclitus not to name a river, not even to point to it with his finger, yet fixed his eyes on the fleeting waters before contemplating the eternal Essence, so Plotinus stops for a moment among the phenomenal; seeing in sensation, not the foundation, but the occasion of science. The order of being is not disturbed by the changes in the sensuous world. That order must be the proper object of knowledge, and not those many individuals which are ever changing. There can only be a science of the universal, for that alone is permanent. We quit the phenomenal world for another; the eternal, immutable, and intelligible. There spirits alone penetrate, and there thought directly seizes essences. True knowledge is that which teaches us the nature of things, penetrates directly the nature of objects, and is not limited merely to the perception of images of them. This much had been established by Plato, and some think by Aristotle too; but Plotinus was carried beyond through this rational knowledge to a revelation or vision of the Infinite, granted to the soul that had been purified by mental and spiritual exercises.

The theology of Plotinus was a combination of the theologies of Parmenides, Socrates, Plato, and Aristotle. Parmenides and his followers had carried Dialectics to their last consequence, and the result was that God was the immoveable One. Socrates rebelled against the Eleatic deity, and, taking up the "mind" of Anaxagoras, which created the world, he ascribed to it also the preservation and moral government of the universe. Plato was partly faithful to his master Socrates. He too contended for the moveability of God, though had he followed out consistently the Dialectical method which he received from the Eleatics, he would have come to the same conclusion as they did; but he recoiled from the theology of Eleaticism, and made God a Creator. Aristotle combatted the God of Plato as being too much related to the sensuous world, and substituted a mover, who was moveable; and above him in another sphere, an immoveable Mover, who alone is God. Plotinus did not regard these theologies as contradictory. Each contained a truth of its own. He could not reconcile them by reason, but he could receive them and see their harmony by an intuition which was above reason. He admitted Plato's method, and Plato's God. He admitted, too, Aristotle's doctrine of the first principle, which must be immoveable, and his interpretation of the Dialectical method, that it could stop only at simple Unity; yet, he said, God must be a cause, hence a threefold God—a God in three *hypostases*, the Unity of Parmenides, the immoveable Mover of Aristotle, and the Demiurgus of Plato.

The Demiurgus, world maker, or world-soul, is the third hypostasis of the Trinity of Plotinus. It produces things moveable, and is itself moveable; but it is nevertheless universal, excluding from its bosom all particularity, and all phenomena; it is unlike our souls which are but "souls in part." The Demiurgus is God, but not the whole of God; it is entirely disengaged from matter, being the immediate product and the most perfect image of "mind." It does not desire that which is beneath it, but is intimately united to God, and derives from Him all its reality, and brings back to Him all its activity and all its power; or rather it is one with Him, though existing as a distinct hypostasis; it is the all of life in whose essence all things live. Plants and animals,—yea, minerals, stones, and pebbles, are all animated by it; for it is the only true element in nature. But, whatever its manifestations, it is still one and the same. We may see it manifested as the divine Socrates; or as a simple brute, leading the mere insect life; as one of the deities of the

mythology, as a blade of grass or as a grain of dust. It is at once everywhere, and yet nowhere; for, as spirit, it has not any *where*. It proceeds from "mind" as the ray from the radiating centre, the heat from fire, or the discursive from the pure reason. This "mind" from which it proceeds, is the second hypostasis; Plato identified the two. Mind was the Demiurgus, or world-maker, and not different from the archetypal world. Plotinus made the distinction that he might separate God more from the world, and at the same time unite Him more closely to it. Mind is the divine Logos, God knowable and conceivable by man; but God is above human knowledge and finite conception; therefore, said Plotinus, repeating Plato, "O man, that mind which you suppose, is not the first God; He is another, more ancient and divine." This is the first hypostasis, the simple primordial Unity; the Being without acts and attributes, immutable, ineffable, without any relation to generation or change. We call Him Being, but we cannot stop at this; He is more than Being; He is above all that which our minds or senses reveal to us of being. In this sense He is above Being; He is Non-Being. The laws of reason cannot be applied to Him. We cannot declare the mode of His existence. He is the super-essential Unity; the only original and positive Reality; the source whence all reality emanates. What more can we say? In this Unity, by means of the Logos or mind, and the Demiurgus, all things exist. It is the universal bond, which folds in its bosom the germs of all existence. It is the enchained Saturn of mythology; the father of gods and men; superior to mind and being, thought and will; the absolute; the unconditioned; the unknown. The three persons of this Trinity are co-eternal and consubstantial; the second proceeding from the first, and the third from the first and second. Duality originates with mind, for mind only exists because it thinks existence; and existence being thought, causes mind to stand over against it as existing and thinking. Between the supreme God or first person of the Trinity, and the Demiurgus, there is the same connection as between him who sows and him who cultivates. The super-essential One being the seed of all souls, casts the germs into all things, which participate of Him. The Demiurgus cultivates, distributes, and transports into each the seeds which come from the supreme God. He creates and comprehends all true existences, so that all being is but the varieties of mind; and this being is the universal Soul, or third person in the Trinity. Thus all things exist in a triune God. The

supreme One is everywhere, by means of mind and soul, mind is in God, and in virtue of its relation to the things that proceed from it, it is everywhere. Soul is in mind, and in God, and by its relation to the material, it too is everywhere. The material is in the soul, and, consequently, in God. All things which possess being, or do not possess being, proceed from God, are of God, and in God.

The material world presented the same difficulty to Plotinus that it had done to other philosophers. It flowed necessarily from God, and being necessary, it could have had no beginning, and can have no end. Yet it was created by the Demiurgus, that is, it existed in the Demiurgus; for creation was out of time, it was in eternity, and, consequently eternal.*

Before the creation, according to Plato, there existed God the Creator, the idea of creation, and the matter from which to create. These three are eternal and co-existent. But the existence of matter is a non-existence; for, being a thing of change, it is next to nothing, if it is anything; but more probably it is nothing. The real existences then are God and His thoughts, the Creator and the ideas of things. And as these thoughts existed always in the mind of the Deity, creation is eternal; for the things which we see, are but images of those which are not seen. If Plato left any doubt about the nothingness of matter, Plotinus expelled it. Like a true chemist, he reduces matter to a viewless state. He deprives it of the qualities with which our minds endow it, which we commonly suppose to be its properties, and when deprived of these it evaporates. It is found to be nothing, having neither soul, intelligence, nor life. It is unformed, changeable, indeterminate, and without power. It is therefore non-being. Not in the sense in which motion is non-being, but truly non-being. It is the image and phantom of extension. To the senses, it seems to include in itself, contraries—the large and the small, the least and the greatest, deficiency and excess; but this is all illusion, for it lacks all being, and is only a becoming. Often when it appears great, it is small. As a phantom, it is, and then it is not. It

"The Alexandrians did not make the phenomenal world eternal. Eternity meant with them the plenitude of being. Now the world is divisible and moveable; it is therefore not perfect, and, consequently, not eternal. It has a cause, and that cause is God." This is M. Simon's judgment; but all Platonists, including Plato, contradict themselves when they speak about creation. Even S. Augustine, in his "City of God," makes creation eternal; he likens it to an impress on the sand. The impress and the hand that made it are both eternal. The *impress* is the eternal effect of an eternal Cause.

becomes nothing, not by change of place, but because it lacks reality. The images in matter are above matter. It is the mirror or image in which objects present divine appearances, according to the position in which they are placed: a mirror which seems full, and appears to be all things, though in reality it possesses nothing, and has no reality except as non-being. God and His thoughts are the only true existences. Material things *are*, only in so far as they exist relatively to true beings. Subtract the true existences, and they are not. God and His thoughts or emanations, in their totality, embrace all existences throughout the universe. God is so far separated from His emanations, that we must not confound Him with any one of them; but they are all in and by Him. There are grades of being from that which is everywhere and yet nowhere, to that which must be somewhere; from God who is pure spirit, to that which has a finite material form, and occupies a definite space.

Plotinus found the germs, at least, of all his doctrines, in Plato. The supreme Good he identified with the absolute Unity; and though in some places Plato calls God a soul, and ascribes to Him the creation of the world, yet in the *Timæus* he evidently regards mind as the Demiurgus; and this Demiurgus produces the soul of the world. Plotinus thus sums up Plato's doctrine: "All is outside of the King of all; He is the cause of all beauty. That which is of the second order, is outside of the second principle; and that which is of the third order, is outside of the third principle. Plato has also said that the cause of all had a Father, and that the cause or Demiurgus produced the soul in the vase in which he makes the mingling of the like and the unlike. The cause is mind, and its Father the Good, that which is above mind and essence. Thus Plato knew that the Good engendered Mind, and that Mind engendered Soul." Matter being the non-existent or the deprivation of existence, by coming into relation with it, the human soul was so far alienated from God; therefore Plotinus despised the material. Our bodies are that from which we should strive to be freed, for they keep us from a complete union with the Divine. We ought then to mortify the flesh, and live an ascetic life, that we may be delivered from the participation of the body. Plotinus practised what he taught; his mind fixed on the invisible, and foretasting the joys of the divine union, he lived indifferent to sensuous pleasures; wishing to attenuate his body into spirit. Regarding it as a calamity that he had ever been born into this world, he refused to tell his friends his birthday, lest they

should celebrate an event so sad. When asked for his portrait, he said it was surely enough for us to bear the image with which nature had veiled us, without committing the folly of leaving to posterity a copy of that image; and when dying, he took leave of his friends with joy, saying, That he was about to lead back the divine within him to that God who is all in all.

PORPHYRY.—To follow the other Neo-Platonists is but to follow the copyists of Plotinus. His most ardent and most distinguished disciple was the celebrated Porphyry. When Porphyry differs from his master, the difference is only in details. His supreme God is the same super-essential Unity in three hypostases which, if differently named, are yet the counterpart of the Plotinian Trinity. We have the same expressions of the Unity being everywhere, and yet nowhere; all being, and yet no being; called by no names, and yet the eternal source of all beings that have names; outside of whom there is neither thought nor idea, nor existence; before whom the totality of the world is as nothing, but because He is pure Unity, and superior to all things called by pre-eminence, God. With Porphyry Neo-Platonism made a closer alliance with religion. Philosophy, which had formerly banished the popular deities, now re-called them to its aid. The ancient religion, about to expire, once more glowed with life. At the root of Polytheism there had been a Monotheism, but their harmonious co-existence had hitherto been apparently impossible. Now they shake hands; the philosopher sees his philosophy in the popular worship; and the devout worshipper sees his religion sanctioned by the speculations of philosophy. Plato had conjectured that there was a chain of being from the throne of God to the meanest existence. To make up the links of this chain was the favorite work of the Neo-Platonists of Alexandria, both Heathen and Christian. Porphyry undertook it, and for this purpose he required all the gods, heroes, and demons of antiquity, with all the essences, substances, emanations that had been cogitated by all the schools of all the philosophers. He erected a pyramid of being. First: God, or the One in three hypostases. Next the soul of the world. Here Porphyry differed from Plotinus, who made the world-soul the same as the third person of the Trinity. Porphyry admitted it to be a being—the first of creatures but begotten—the great intermedial between God and man. It consists of the world, the fixed stars, the planets, the intelligible gods, all of which are children and servants of the Supreme. Under these were demons, and genii, principalities and powers, archangels, angels,

personifications of the forces of nature, and other heavenly messengers; all helping in some way to bridge the distance by constituting grades of being from the Trinity to man.

IAMBlichus.—While Porphyry was expounding Plotinianism at Rome, Iamblichus and Hierocles were continuing the succession at Alexandria, but not without some change. The theory of the Triad, as we have seen, was born at Alexandria, through the necessity of reconciling the absolute, immoveable God of Dialectics with the necessarily moveable Demiurgus. Plotinus and Porphyry could not give movement to the absolute God, nor immoveability to the creative god; nor could they admit many gods, so they believed in a God, who, without coming out from Himself, transforms Himself eternally into an inferior order, and thus renders Himself by a kind of self diminution, capable of producing the manifold. To preserve the immoveability of the first God, and the moveability of the third or manifold, they introduce an intermediary. The doctrine of a Trinity served to preserve the unity, while the hypostases remained distinct. Iamblichus thought to remove the contradiction, by multiplying the intermediaries. In the first rank he put absolute Unity, which enveloped in its bosom the first monads. These are the universal monads which do not suffer any division or diminution of their unity and simplicity. The first God is simple, indivisible, immutable. He possesses all the attributes which accord with the plenitude of perfection; the second god possesses the power which engenders the inferior gods; the plenitude of power; the source of the divine life; the principle of all efficacy; the first cause of all good. The third god is the producer of the world. He gives the generative virtue which produces the emanations and makes of them the first vital forces, from which the other forces are derived. All Being, that is, God, and the universe are thus embraced in this Triad of gods. Porphyry had begun to make philosophy religious, but it was reserved for Iamblichus, his disciple, to bring the work to completion. If the gods of the poets and the people are true gods, it must be proper, thought Iamblichus, that temples be dedicated to them, their oracles consulted and sacrifices daily offered. What higher calling then could there be for a philosopher, than to concern himself with that which concerned the gods? And if the world-soul is so near us that it constitutes the reality of the world, may we not influence it, work upon it, receive communications from it? Hence divination, theurgy, wonders of magic. The soul of the philosopher drinking deep

into the mysteries of spirit, has intercourse with the spirit world. He becomes the high priest of the universe, the prophet filled with Deity—no longer a man, but a god having intercourse with, yea, commanding the upper world. His nature is the organ of the inspiring deities. To this sublime vocation Iamblichus was called. He tells us, how communications can be received from the various orders of the spiritual hierarchy. He knows them all, as familiarly as the modern spiritualist knows "the spheres" of the spirits, with only this difference, that the modern spiritualist evokes the spirits and they come to him; but the philosopher more properly elevates himself to the spirits. The descent of Divinity is only apparent, and is in reality the ascent of humanity. The philosopher by his knowledge of rites, symbols, and potent spells, and by the mysterious virtues of plants and minerals, reaches that sublime elevation, which, according to Plotinus, was reached by prayer and purification, a clean heart and an intellect well exercised by Dialectics.

PROCLUS.—In the early part of the fifth century, late one evening a young man, not yet twenty years of age, arrived at Athens.* He had come from Alexandria to complete his studies under the care of some celebrated philosophers. Before entering the town, he sat down to rest by the temple of Socrates, and refreshed himself with water from a fountain which was also consecrated to the Athenian sage. He resumed his journey; and when he reached Athens, the porter addressing him, said

* The conversion of Constantine checked the progress of philosophy. It was restored under Julian, who adhered to the theological school of Iamblichus. Julian was a lover of divination, always eager to read the will of the gods in the entrails of the victims. He worshipped the sun as we may suppose the devout Neo-Platonists were used to do, but it was the *intelligible* sun—God veiled in light—the source of essence, perfection, and harmony. "When I was a boy," he says, "I used to lift up my eyes to the ethereal splendor, and my mind, struck with astonishment, seemed to be carried beyond itself. I not only desired to behold it with fixed eyes, but even by night when I went outside under a pure sky, forgetting everything besides, I gazed, so absorbed in the beauties of the starry heavens that if anything was said to me I did not hear, nor did I know what I was doing." The sun which so entranced him in his youth he afterwards worshipped as *God*—the parent, as some philosophers had said, of all animate things. Libanius says, "He received the rising sun with blood, and again attended him with blood at his setting. And because he could not go abroad so often as he wished, he made a temple of his palace and placed altars in his garden which was purer than most chapels." "By frequent devotions he engaged the gods to be his auxiliaries in war, worshipping Mercury, Ceres, Mars, Calliope, Apollo, whom he worshipped in his temple on the hill and in the city." After Julian, philosophy revived at Athens, where it flourished till 520, A.D., when the schools were shut by the decree of Justinian. The last of the Neo-Platonists was John of Damascus.

"I was going to shut the gate if you had not come." The words of the porter were in after-times interpreted as a prophecy, that if Proclus had not come to Athens, philosophy would then have ceased. He prolonged its existence for another generation. Arrived at Athens he found Syrianus, who was then the master of the school. Syrianus took him to Plutarch, who had been his predecessor, but who had now retired from teaching, having recommended his disciples to Syrianus. Plutarch, struck with the genius and the ardor of young Proclus, wished to be his teacher, and at once they began their studies. Plutarch had written many commentaries on Plato, and to excite the ambition of Proclus he engaged him to correct them, saying, "posterity shall know these commentaries under your name." Syrianus made him read Aristotle that he might be familiar with the inferior departments of science; he then opened to him the holy of holies—the divine Plato. When he had mastered Plato, he was initiated into the mysteries of magic and divination. In time he became famous for his universal learning and his sweet persuasive eloquence, which was made yet more attractive by his solemn and earnest manner, added to great personal beauty.

Proclus combined all former philosophies, religions, and theologies, into one eclectic amalgamation; and brought them to the illustration of Plato, as interpreted by Plotinus, and religionized by Porphyry and Iamblichus. In his hands the harp of every school is vocal with the divine philosophy of Plotinus. We still hear discourses of the One and the many; the sterility of the One without the many; and the lifelessness of the many without the One. We still hear how the all is both One and many; and how existence springs from the multiplication of unity. The universe, says Proclus, is constituted by harmony, and what is harmony but variety in unity. In the mind of the great Architect, ideas exist as one and many. He Himself is the One—the highest Unity which embraces the three divine unities, essence, identity, variety. This is the first Triad, which Proclus repeats in all forms, and with which repeated he fills all conceivable voids and vacuums in the universe of being. From this first Trinity proceed all others; as simple being is three in one, so are all other beings; each having two extremes and an intermediary. If we realize the Triad; essence, identity, variety, the result is—being, life, mind. Every unity, which is also a trinity, proceeds from the Trinity; and each is of the multiplicity which belongs to the supreme One, the prime Unity, who is Non-Being, because He is above Being. But the necessities

and limitations of our reason require us to speak of Him as Being. He is therefore called Being absolute, of whose divine substance all things are full. Could we conceive a pyramid of beings, of which, each is a trinity in unity, we might have a conception of the favorite ærial image of the brain of Proclus. But as the pyramid of our imagination is finite, we must not think that it truly represents all being, for that is infinite. One moment we may say Non-Being is at the head of it, for the primal One is above being, and nothing is at the base of it, for beneath it is that which is below all being; but the next moment we must declare that being has no bounds, nor boundary walls, that there is no "beyond" outside the all of the universe; and therefore it is that God who is beyond being, whom we cannot by reason understand, can yet be known as infinite Being. We must then think of a pyramid from the summit of which supreme perfection descends to the lowest degree of being; constituting, preserving, adorning all things, and uniting them to itself. First, we may think of it as descending to beings truly existing, then to divine genii, then to divinities which preside over the human race, then to human spirits, at last to animals, plants, and the lowest forms of matter—that which borders on nothing. In such an image we may have an idea of the eternal procession from Him who is super-essential, and therefore most truly essence, to that which is non-essential and no kind of essence. In the primordial One all things have their existence and unity. They derive their multiplicity by a progression which originates in the separating of the One in the same way that rays diverge and proceed from a centre. So that though in nature there be many forms, and in the universe there be many gods, and in waste places many genii, and in heaven many spirits, and in hades many heroes, there is but one essence to all. It is everywhere the same. That essence is in us; God is all; and we and all existence are but the expressions of the One ineffable and supreme.

Proclus was a genuine Platonist. He began and ended with God. He saw all things in God, and God in all things. The world is before us a thing of change, its phenomena are ephemeral. We are spectators of the drama. Is our being only phenomenal? Are we but a part of the world, or is there in us anything of the One, the Eternal? Our feet are in the mire and our heads among the clouds. Our first thoughts reveal to us our greatness and our nothingness; our exile and our native land; God who is our all; and the world through which we

must pass and rise to God. This triad is the foundation of philosophy, the indisputable data from which we must begin. That the most perfect exists, Proclus did not stop to enquire. Our reason proves, clearly and distinctly, that it does. As little does he ask if the world exists, it is before us; we can see it and feel it. Man by his passions and the wants of his body, is drawn to the earth; by philosophy, inspiration and divination, he is elevated to God.

The contradiction involved in the identity of the One and the many was not less for Proclus than it had been for his predecessors. The One is perfect, the many are imperfect. The One is eternal, the many are temporal. The One existed alone, it is necessary to His perfection that He be alone, and thus truly the *All* before the imperfect was made; but it is also necessary to His perfection that He be not alone; He must have thought, and thought must have an object; God must be the absolute Unity, and yet God creating; the One of Parmenides, the "immoveable Mover" of Aristotle and yet the mind or Demiurgus of Plato; the one is God in Himself, the last sanctuary of the Divinity, the other is the God of creation and providence, the Lord and ruler of the world. Hence a Trinity which did not differ from that of Plotinus. The super-essential One, mind or the most perfect form of being and soul, which is necessary to the existence of mind, and preserves its immoveability while it unites it to the world. "From the hands of Proclus," says M. Simon, "we receive the god of experience, and the god of speculation separately studied by the ancient schools, reunited by the Alexandrians in a Unity as absolute as the God of the Eleatics, and mind as free, as full of life and fecundity as the Demiurgus of Plato."

* This Chapter is founded on the work of M. Jules Simon *Histoire de l'Ecole d'Alexandrie*; with the help of Plotinus' *Enneads*, Porphyry's life of Plotinus, Proclus on the theology of Plato, his Commentary on the Timæus, his Orphic Verses, and the *Historics* mentioned at the end of the Chapter on Greek Philosophy.

CHAPTER VI.

THE CHURCH.

The reader who remembers the first paragraph of this book, will not be startled to find the Church in this connection. We do not here enter into controversy, we only give the record of beliefs. The Neo-Platonist school began with Philo the Jew, and ended with Proclus. This is one account. Another is, that it began in a very different quarter, and is not ended yet. In reality, there were three kinds of Neo-Platonism; one allied itself with the old Gentile religion, another with Judaism, and a third with the new religion of the Crucified. It had formerly been disputed whether Plato or Moses was the founder of Greek philosophy, and now it is disputed if the Neo-Platonic philosophy was borrowed from Christianity, or if the philosophical Alexandrian fathers borrowed their philosophy from the Pagan Neo-Platonists.

The New Testament authors in whose writings we find definite manifestations of acquaintance with Greek philosophy, are S. John and S. Paul; indeed John's gospel is so marked by Greek doctrine and philosophical speech, as to have led to the supposition that it could not have been written by the fisherman of Galilee. This hypothesis loses its ground when we remember that John lived to a great age, and that the latter years of his life were spent in Asia Minor, where he must have come in contact with every form of philosophy then known in the Greek world. It may be true that he did not find the Logos in Plato, but we know from Philo Judaeus, and some of his contemporaries, that the Logos in a sense nearly allied to that of S. John's was in common use among the Alexandrian Jews. The Logos was in the beginning. It was at once with God, and it was God. John's Logos had the same relation to God as in Plato's theology "Mind" had to "Being," only S. John's went beyond the philosopher. He said that the Logos was incarnate in Jesus of Nazareth, thus elevating Jesus to equality with God.

S. Paul's writings have more of a Hebrew than a Greek character. His illustrations, his logic, his rhetoric, are all Jewish. But S. Paul, confessedly, was familiar with Greek literature.

That he had many thoughts in common with Philo is evident from such passages as that in the Epistle to the Colossians, where he speaks of the Son as "the image of the *invisible* God," and that in the Hebrews, where it is said that the Father made the worlds by the Son, who is "the brightness of His glory, and the express image of His person," and that S. Paul did not regard heathen philosophy as purely darkness is manifest from his address to the Athenians, where he quotes and endorses the favorite doctrine of the Greeks, that we are the offspring of God.

The relation of Christianity to heathen philosophy is more distinctly traceable in the writings of the Christian fathers, and especially those who were educated where philosophy flourished. The oldest and perhaps most remarkable of these writings, is the Apology of Justin Martyr, where Christ is called "the only begotten of God, the very Logos or universal Reason of which all men are partakers," and on this ground the author maintains that all those were Christians who lived by reason, even though they were esteemed Atheists. It is well known that Justin took for models the Apologies of Quadratus and Aristides, as mentioned by Dionysius, of Corinth, in his letter to the Athenians. Quadratus was bishop of Athens and successor of S. Paul's philosophical convert Dionysius, the Areopagite. In his Apology which he presented to Hadrian, he calls Christianity a philosophy, thus clinging to the cloak of the philosopher, even when a Christian Bishop.*

Tatian, who was Justin's disciple, participates in his master's spirit. Before creation, he says, that in a certain sense the Father was alone, but since He had all power, and was Himself the essential Essence of the visible and invisible, He was not alone, but there was with Him the universe, existing by the power of reason. God Himself, and the Logos which was in Him, was the All.

Irenæus says God is wholly reason, and the Son is this reason, mind, or Logos. When we receive Christ we bear God in us, and ere we can see God, we must be "within God." In saying that God is the entire Logos, or the Logos is entire God. Irenæus wished to protest against the higher speculations of

* Dorner says that Justin Martyr was the first of the fathers who used the term Logos in the sense of its being the divine Reason. Hitherto it was simply the creative Word. The seed of reason is in all men; but the all of reason was in Jesus. The soul of man has a natural and essential relation to the Logos. But Jesus is the Logos, the primal reason itself; so that Christianity is a divine philosophy.

philosophy. His complaint against the Gnostics was, that in seeking after the Bythos they float into the Infinite, which is above God. Now, in the Logos we have God. The Gnostics said that the One could not be known. Irenæus said God is perfectly known in the Logos. Irenæus had perhaps as little of the spirit of the Greek philosophers as any of the Christian Fathers; but when he sets forth the unity of the Church with itself and with God, he seems to have something of the mystical feelings which possessed the graver spirits of Neo-platonism. Christ, he says, is in the Church as God-man. The Church is one with Him, as He is one with the Father. Christ is the animating and vivifying principle of the Church; it is His flesh. Again, it is a unity of flesh and spirit, in which the Bishop who is the impersonation of the united will of the congregation, is the animating spirit. In both, Christ lives, and they bear a God-man character; they are 'bearers of Christ and bearers of God' This relation is further illustrated by that of a Bishop to his presbyters, 'They are fitted to him as strings to the lyre.'

The natural development of the doctrine of Irenæus was the Patripassian heresy; for if the Logos is entire God, either there is no God the Father, or if there is, He suffers; and thus God becomes a being subject to suffering and death, consequently to change—an identification of God with the world, more fearful than had been made by any philosophical speculation on the divine Essence. Tertullian refuted the Patripassians, and explained with the help of philosophy, how God was the Logos and yet was not the Logos. God, he says, as the object of His own thought is pre-eminently the Son of God as soon as He attains positive reality in the actual world. He has first a mere ideal existence in the essence of God. He is God's thought—the idea of the world or the sum of the thoughts of the world. In this world-idea is involved, that when it arrives at actuality it will still have the God who was incorporated with its idea, that is, the Word. Thus the manifestation of God Himself is interwoven with the idea of the world, and all the divine thoughts become realities; so that the world is a progressive actualization of the thought to which God gives objective existence over against Himself. Through the incarnation of Christ, is completed the full realization of the world-ideal. The Logos is thus God immoveable and infinite; and yet it is God associated with the world, God moveable and finite. Tertullian had recourse to Aristotle and Plato to refute the

Patricians, and Hippolytus had the same assistance for the same work. 'The fundamental idea of his theology;' says Dorner, 'is chargeable with approximating in another way to Pantheism, through raising a too hasty opposition to Patripassianism. Hippolytus showed how God was once alone and nothing with Him, and how He willed to create the world. This was done by thinking, willing, and uttering the idea of the world. But this solitary existence was not real, for He never was without the Word and Wisdom. 'All was in Him, and He was Himself the All.' 'The Father,' says Hippolytus, 'is over all; the Son is through all; and the Holy Ghost is in all.'

For the best representatives of Christian Neo-platonism, we must turn to the Alexandrian Fathers. Among these the chief is Origen. He was never regarded by the Church as entirely orthodox, but he was in his day the great teacher of Christianity at Alexandria. The Trinity, with Origen, is an eternal *process* in God. In his time, first arose the question of the eternal son-ship of Christ, and no marvel, for, it is a doctrine, purely Alexandrian. Tertullian made the generation of the Son, a divine act, thereby introducing multiplicity into God. Origen made it an act, eternally completed, and yet, eternally continued. 'The Son, was not generated once for all, but is continually generated by God in the eternal *To-Day*.' The Father is the Monad, absolutely indivisible, and infinitely exalted above all that is divided, or multiplied. He is not truth nor wisdom, nor spirit nor reason, but infinitely higher than all these. He is not being nor substance, but far exalted above all being, and all substance. He is the utterly ineffable and incomprehensible One, the Absolute. All truth, goodness and power, are derived from Him, but attributes do not adequately describe Him. We cannot attribute to Him will or wisdom without also ascribing to Him imperfection. The super-essential Monad is above all qualities. The Son is Being, Energy, Soul. Origen wishes to make the Son equal to the Father; but his philosophy compels him to make Him *inferior to the Father as touching His Godhead*. The Son is related to the manifold world. He cannot be directly grounded in God the Father, because of the Father's unity and unchangeableness. As Aristotle would say, the Father is immovable, and the Son moveable; only the Son is not outside of God, but in God; and in God that He may be the medium by which the world outside of God, may be brought into the Divine, for we cannot conceive the world existing independently of unity. Necessarily connected with the

eternal generation of the Son, is the eternal generation of the world; for the Son is its ideal, its eternal unity. He is the world-principle, that which connects together the universe of individuals in all their divergencies from each other. He is the permeating substance of the world, its heart and reason, present in every man, and in the whole world. The Son is the truth, the life, the resurrection of all creatures; the one which is at the basis of the manifold, having objectively different modes of existence for different beings, without therefore ceasing to be one Logos. The human race consists of those souls that through sin have fallen from the union with the Son. He could not forget them, and to restore them, He became incarnate. His soul and ours thus pre-existed together; and as the Logos came upon the man Jesus and united Him to itself, so shall the Logos possess our souls and restore them to itself and God. Origen rivalled Philo Judæus in his subtle interpretations of the sacred writings. "The beginning," in S. John's Gospel, he takes for "the supreme Being." Thus, the Word was in the beginning will signify, it was in God the Father. "Christ is also the beginning, being the wisdom of God and the beginning of His ways." In the first verse of Genesis, the beginning is the Lord Jesus Christ. "In the beginning, that is, in the Word or Reason, God made the heaven and the earth. God is in all respects one, and undivided; but Christ the Logos is many proceeding from the Father as well as from mind."

Clemens, of Alexandria, was not less a philosopher than Origen; nor less imbued with the theology that was taught in the heathen schools. The Father, who is the first Cause of all things, Clemens described as ineffable, not to be denoted by any word or sound, but who is only to be thought, and with silent reverence to be adored. But though God cannot be known or manifested in Himself, it is otherwise with the Son. The Father is being, the Son is "the Idea of ideas in the ideal world, the timeless and unbegun Beginning." Clemens openly defended the truth of Greek philosophy. "I give," he says, "the name philosophy to that which is really excellent in all the doctrines of the Greek philosophers, and above all to that of Socrates, such as Plato describes him to have been. The opinion of Plato upon ideas, is the true Christian and orthodox philosophy. These intellectual lights among the Greeks have been communicated by God Himself."

Not only had the Christian fathers the Logos in common with the philosophers, but the metaphysical questions concerning the

Trinity, which for centuries disturbed the Church, were kindred to the Alexandrian questions on the divine Essence. Plotinus believed one God in three hypostases; but, as he made hypostasis equivalent to nature; he made three gods or three natures in one God. This equivalency of hypostasis to nature, developed in the fifth century into the heresy of Nestorius, who maintained that since there are two natures in Christ there must be two hypostases; which again called forth the opposite heresy of the Monophysites, that the two natures became one by a hypostatical union. The indefinite word, hypostasis, had previously sheltered the heresy of Sabellius, who took it only in the sense of an energy or emanation; so that the three hypostases, Father, Son, and Holy Spirit, were only three powers or modes of the one God. The word, hypostasis, was finally, abandoned by the Latin Church; because, says Gregory of Nazianzen, the Latins could not distinguish hypostasis from essence. The Western mind craved a definite dogma; but had no love for the speculative process concerned in the formation of dogmas. For hypostasis the Latins substituted person; making three persons in one God. This was clear and definite, though involving an irremediable contradiction, for a person is an individual distinct from other individuals. A new heresy lurked under the new word; for if the unity of God is to be preserved, the Son and the Spirit must be inferior to the Father. But the heresy of Arius was not entirely excluded from the theology of Origen. It was one side of it, but this stood corrected by the other side. Arius, though an Alexandrian, had but little of the philosophy of his age and country, he was an anti-speculative common-sense theologian, without the remotest element of Pantheism; the truest disciple of Anaxagoras that had yet appeared in the Church; one whom Aristotle would have pronounced "a sober man." He distinguished broadly and at once between the essence of God and that of creation. He cut down at one stroke all the Alexandrian theories of eternal creation and eternal generation. If, he said, the son is generated, generation is an act; and that implies time, a beginning of existence. If the Son is produced from God, he must be a portion of God; but this cannot be; the Son, therefore, like all created beings, is produced from nothing, and therefore has an essence different from God's.

The Alexandrian philosophy was powerful for the refutation of Arius. Alexander* replied that the Logos or wisdom of God

* Bishop of Alexandria, the opponent of Arius.

must be eternal as God Himself; otherwise there must have been a period when God was without reason or wisdom. But it is impossible that He who is reason itself should not know the Father whose reason He is. The Son is indeed generated, said Alexander, but it is impossible to place any interval between Him and the Father; but the generation of the Son surpassed the understanding of the Evangelists, and, perhaps, surpasses that of angels. The Arians said "There *was*, when the Son was not;" but this, said Alexander, involves the existence of time. Now time is created by Him, and comes into existence along with the world, so that the time, which is said to have existed, must always have existed through Him; which supposes the effect to exist before the cause: and how then could He be the first-born of every creature. The Father therefore must always have been Father, and the Son through whom He is Father must have existed always. "Alexander's aim," says Dorner, "was to establish the closest possible connection between the hypostasis of the Son and His eternal divine Essence. In carrying out this design he decidedly posits a duality in God, and if we may judge from the images employed by him, he conceives the Logos of the Father to be objectified in the Son. His images in themselves would warrant us in concluding that he conceived the Father to have reason and power, not in Himself, but in the Son; and that consequently the Son was the Father Himself under a determinate form or a determination or attribute constituting part of the full conception of the Father. The council of Alexandria, concurring in the doctrine of Alexander, adopted the Neo-Platonic idea of time to reconcile the Sonship of Christ with His eternity."

Athanasius was not less an Alexandrian than Alexander. He refuted Arianism with the same arguments. He distinguished clearly between the Deity and the world; but he did not leave God in His transcendent existence as some of the Heathens had done; he made God also immanent in the world. The Logos dwelt in a body, but the Deity was not shut up in that body. He was at the same time in other places, and as He moved the body with which He was united, so did He move the universe. God in the Logos is in the entire creation, for He is in all its powers, extending His providence to all, giving life to all, and embracing the universe without being embraced by it. He is in all, as well as beyond all; in heaven, in hades, in humanity, and on earth we may see the Deity of the Logos unfolded before us, and at the same time embracing us. On this imman-

ency of the Logos, Athanasius grounded his argument for the divinity of Jesus Christ. If the Logos is in the whole world, yea, in each individual, why could He not also dwell in a man whom He moved, through whom He manifested Himself, even as He manifests Himself in the world. As He is in the sun and moon, so also is He in humanity, which is part of the universe.

Eusebius, of Cæsarea, whose orthodoxy is somewhere between that of Arius, and that of Athanasius is not free from the philosophy of Alexandria. In His inmost essence, says Eusebius, God is one. It is only with an eye to the world and God's relation to it that we can speak of the Trinity. The unity expresses that which is inmost in God. It contains in it no plurality. This one Being is the absolute, the primal Substance. This Monad or Father cannot communicate His being. He cannot enter into any relation with the world. He could not be a Creator. To mediate between Him and the world there was need of the Logos. The Son is grounded in God, and is a copy of God. He connects the world with God, and makes it worthy of Him. He is the bond that passes through the universe—the world soul. The Son was always with the Father, generated out of time, existing before the *Æons*, yet his existence was effected by an act of God.

But more singular than the Neo-Platonism, even of Origen, was that of Synesius, Bishop of Pentapolis. Synesius, however, scarcely professed to be a Christian in any other sense, but as Christianity seemed to him a form of philosophy, nearly related to what he had learned in the schools. When the bishopric was offered to him, "he declared candidly," says Neander, "that his philosophical conviction did not, on many points, agree with the doctrines of the church, and among these differences, he reckoned many things which were classed along with the Origenistic heresies; as for example, the doctrine of the pre-existence of souls, his different views of the resurrection, on which point he probably departed far more widely, than Origen from the view taken by the Church, inasmuch as he interpreted it, as being but the symbol of a higher idea. A few quotations from the Hymns of Synesius will show the character of his theology, and its likeness to that of the schools.

Rejoicing in immortal glory,
God sits above the lofty heights of heaven ;
Holy Unity of unities ;
And first Monad of monads.

A fragment of the divine Parent
 Descended into matter ;
 A small portion indeed,
 But it is everywhere the One in all—
 All diffused through all.
 It turns the vast circumference of the heavens,
 Preserving the universe,
 Distributed in diverse forms it is present ;
 A part of it is the course of the stars,
 A part in the Angelic choir ;
 A part, with an heavy bond, found an earthly form,
 And disjoined from the Parent, drank dark oblivion.
 God, beholding human things,
 Is nevertheless present in them ;

• • •
 Yet a light, a light there is, even in closed eyes,
 There is present, even to those who have fallen hither
 A certain power calling them back to heaven—
 When having emerged from the billows of life,
 They joyfully enter on the holy path
 Which leads to the palace of the Parent.

• • •
 But Thou art the root of things present, past, and future.
 Thou art Father and Mother ;
 Thou art masculine ;
 Thou art feminine :
 Hail ! root of the world ;
 Hail ! centre of things,
 Unity of divine numbers.

• • •
 Father of all fathers,
 Father of Thyself ;
 Fore-father, without father,
 Son of Thyself ;
 Unity before Unity ;
 Seed of beings ;
 Centre of all.
 Presubstantial, unsubstantial Mind,
 Surpassing minds ;
 Changing into different parts,
 Parent Mind of minds ;
 Producer of gods.
 Maker of spirits,
 Nourisher of souls,
 Fountain of fountains,
 Beginning of beginnings,
 Root of roots,
 Number of numbers,
 Intelligence and intelligent ;
 Both intelligible and before intelligible,
 One and all things,
 But the One of all things :
 Root and highest branch.

• • •
 Thou art what produces,
 Thou art what is produced ;
 Thou art what enlightens,

Thou art what is enlightened ;
 Thou art what appears,
 Thou art what is hidden,
 By Thy own brightness.
 One and all things,
 One in thyself,
 And through all things,
 Produced after an ineffable manner
 That Thou mightest produce a son
 (Who is) illustrious Wisdom,
 (And) Maker of all things.

* * *
 Thou art the Governor of the unscen world ;
 Thou art the Nature of natures ;
 Thou nourishest nature.—
 The origin of the mortal,
 The image of the immortal ;
 So that the lowest part in the world
 Might obtain the other life.

The most remarkable resemblance in any Christian writings, to the doctrines of the Platonists of Alexandria, is found in the once famous works of S. Dionysius. This Saint was the Areopagite who adhered to S. Paul after his discourse at Athens. It was not known for three or four centuries after the death of Dionysius that his works were extant, or even that he had ever written any works. They appeared suddenly in the controversy between the Church and the Monophysite heretics, and were quoted in favor of the heretical side. They have never been universally received as genuine, but their sublime speculations and their sweet mystical piety have always procured them admirers, and even advocates of their genuineness.

The favorite doctrine of three orders in the Church ; bishops, priests, and deacons, as the copy and symbol of the three orders in the celestial hierarchy, has always made them dear to churchmen. The Abbé Darboy, in a recent Introduction to the works of S. Dionysius, has shown that their author was indeed the Areopagite converted by S. Paul ; that he lived in the days when S. John was well known as a theologian, apostle, and evangelist in exile at Patmos ; when Timothy and Titus were Bishops of Ephesus and Crete, and when Peter was Pope at Rome. Furthermore that this Dionysius was certainly present at the funeral obsequies of the Virgin Mary, that he was made Bishop of Athens ; but having left his Greek Diocese as a missionary to France, he became the veritable S. Denys, who founded the Church of the Gauls. "He did not borrow from Plotinus," says the Abbé Darboy, "but Plotinus borrowed

from him." Guizot, who is less interested in the advocacy of the "three orders," and not concerned for the admission that the Christian fathers drank of the streams of the Neo-Platonic philosophy, takes a different view from that of the Abbé Darboy; "Neo-Platonism," he says "when forsaken and abandoned by princes, decried and persecuted, had no other alternative than to lose itself in the bosom of the enemy." *Brucker's* opinion is nearly the same. "The works of S. Dionysius introduced Alexandrian Platonism into the West, and laid the foundation of that mystical system of theology, which afterwards so greatly prevailed." He then describes it as "a philosophical enthusiasm, born in the East, nourished by Plato, educated in Alexandria, matured in Asia, and introduced under the pretence and authority of an Apostolic man into the Western Church."

Before the Reformation the genuineness of these writings was an open question in the Catholic Church, and to some extent it is so still. At the Council of Trent they were appealed to as genuine. From that time many Catholic theologians have considered their doctrines in harmony with the teaching of the Church.

We have already seen how Plato's Alexandrian disciples conceived a universe of being, in which were all grades of existence from the primal One to that which was nothing. We have seen how Porphyry and Proclus filled up the immediate spaces between that which was above and that which was below being, with *hypostases* of the Trinity, gods, genii, demons, heroes, men, animals, vegetables and unformed matter; all of which had, in God whatever of true existence they possessed. S. Dionysius, as a Christian, had to expel all the gods and demons from this Pagan totality of being; and, as a good churchman, to fill their places with more orthodox existences. Instead of a chain, beginning at God, or a pyramid of which the top was primal Unity, S. Dionysius conceived a central and special dwelling of the Eternal, around which were arranged, in consecutive circles, all the orders of being from the highest to the meanest. First, there were Cherubim, Seraphim and Thrones. Behind them Dominions, Virtues, Powers. Then Principalities, Archangels, and Angels. Of the heavenly hierarchy, the ecclesiastical was a copy; bishops, priests, deacons. The "*threes*" of Pagan Proclus, were beautiful triads, with the Christian Dionysius. Were not all things trinities in unity? The supreme One was a Trinity. Each grade was a trinity. The ecclesiastical hierarchy a trinity.

Outside of the heavenly that is, immediately behind the angels, is the order of beings gifted with intellect such as men; then those which have feeling but not reason; and lastly, creatures that simply exist. Light and wisdom, grace and knowledge, emanate from the Supreme, and spread through all ranks of being. Divinity permeates all. The supreme One has called them in their several degrees and according to their several capacities to be sharers of His existence. His essence is the being of all beings, so far as they exist. Even things inanimate partake of Divinity. Those that merely live partake of this naturally vital energy, which is superior to all life, because it embraces all life. Reasonable and intelligent beings partake of the wisdom which surpasses all wisdom; and which is essentially and eternally perfect. Higher beings are united to God by the transcendent contemplation of that divine Pattern, and in reaching the source of light they obtain superabundant treasures of grace, and in a manner express the majesty of the infinite Nature. All these orders gaze admiringly upwards. Each is drawn to the Supreme, and each draws towards itself the rank next below it; and thus a continual progress of lower being towards that which is higher, and a continual descent of the Divine, elevating all ranks and helping them in their progress towards God. The Divinity surpasses all knowledge. He is above all thought and all substance. As the sensible cannot understand the intelligible; as the multiple cannot understand the simple and immaterial, as the corporeal cannot understand the incorporeal, so the finite cannot understand the Infinite. He remains superior to all being.—a Unity which escapes all conception and all expression. He is an existence unlike all other existences; the Author of all things, and yet not any one thing; for He surpasses all that is. We ought therefore to think and speak of God only as the Holy Scriptures have spoken, and they have declared Him *unsearchable*. Theologians call Him infinite and incomprehensible, and yet they vainly try to sound the abyss, as if they could fathom the mysterious and infinite depths of Deity. We cannot understand Him, yet He gives us a participation of his being. He draws from His exhaustless treasures and over all things He diffuses the riches of His divine splendors.

S. Dionysius anticipates an objection, that if God thus exceeds words, thoughts, knowledge, and being, if He eternally embraces and penetrates all things, if He is absolutely incomprehensible, how can we speak of the Divine Names? He

answers, first, that in order to extol the greatness of God and to show that He is not to be identified with any particular being He must be called by no name. And then, secondly, we must call Him by all names. I AM, Life and Truth, God of gods, Lord of lords, Wisdom, Being, Eternal, Ancient of Days. He dwells in the heart, in the body, in the soul; He is in heaven and upon earth, and yet he never moves. He is in the world, around it and beyond it. He is above the heaven and all being, yet He is in the sun, the moon, the stars, the water, the wind and the fire. He is the dew and the vapours. He is all that is and yet nothing of it all. In the infinite riches and simplicity of his nature, He has eternally seen and embraced all things; so that whatever reality is in anything may be affirmed of Him. As, by lines drawn from the centre of a circle to the circumference, so are even the meanest existences united to God. "The blessed *Hierotheos*," says S. Dionysius, "has taught that the Divinity of Jesus Christ is the cause and complement of all things. It keeps all in harmony without being either all or a part; and yet it is all and every part, because it comprehends all, and from all eternity has possessed all, and all parts. August Substance! it penetrates all substances, without defiling its purity, and without descending from its sublime elevation. It determines and classifies the principles of things, and yet remains pre-eminently beyond all principle and all classification. Its plenitude appears in that which creatures have not; and its superabundance shines in that which they have." "As in universal nature," says the Areopagite, "the different principles of each particular nature are united in a perfect and harmonious unity—as in the simplicity of the soul the multiplied faculties which serve the wants of each part of the body are united, so we may regard all things, all substances, even the most opposite in themselves as united in the indivisible Unity." From it they all proceed. The Eternal has produced this participation of being. It has an existence which is comprised in Him, but He is not comprised in it. It partakes of Him, but He does not partake of it; for He precedes all being and all duration. From His life flows all life. Whatever now exists has existed in its faithful simplicity in Him. The Areopagite anticipated an objection from the existence of evil. He obviated it, as all his predecessors and successors who felt the same difficulty have done, by denying its existence. Not that he said there was no evil in the world, but that it was not a real being, and, consequently, could not emanate from being. It is only an accident of good, having an existence nowhere.

On the impossibility of knowing the Infinite, S. Dionysius and Plotinus entirely agree. All things speak of God, but nothing speaks the fulness of His perfections. We *know* both by our knowledge and by our ignorance. God is accessible to reason through all His works; and we discern Him by imagination, by feeling, and by thought; yet He is incomprehensible and ineffable, to be named by no name. He is nothing of that which is, and nothing of that which enables us to comprehend Him. He is in all things and yet, essentially, He is not one of them. All things reveal Him, but none sufficiently declare Him. We may call Him by the names of all realities, for they have some analogy with Him who produced them; but the perfect knowledge of God emerges from a sublime ignorance of Him which we reach by an incomprehensible union with Him. Then we feel how unsearchable He is; then the soul forgets itself and is plunged into the eternal ocean of Deity; then does it receive light among the billows of the Divine glory, and is radiated among the shining abysses of unfathomable wisdom. *

The authorities for this chapter are Dörner on the *Person of Christ*, Neander's *Church History*, the works of Origen and Synesius, S. Dionysius on the *Divine Names* and the *Heavenly Hierarchies*, with the Introduction of the Abbé Darboy, and Bunsen's Hippolytus. The reader who is interested in the relations of philosophy to Christianity in the fifth Century will not omit to read Mr. Kingsley's charming Romance *Hypatia*.

* It is not necessary to our argument to follow the history of the Dionysian writings. At the Council of Constantinople, in the year 533, where they were first cited, the Orthodox at once refused their authority. In the seventh century, a Presbyter, named Theodorus, composed a work in defence of their genuineness; but long before this their influence was widely spread, or to speak more correctly, the influence in which they originated. Neander says, "In the last times of the fifth century, a cloister at Edessa, in Mesopotamia, had for its head, an abbot by the name of Bar Sudaili, who had busied himself in various ways with that mystic theology which always formed one of the ground-tendencies of the Oriental Monachism, and from which had proceeded the writings fabricated in the name of Dionysius the Areopagite; as in fact he appeals to the writings of a certain Hierotheos, whom the Pseudo-Dionysius calls his teacher. He stood at first on intimate terms with the most eminent Monophysite teachers, and was very highly esteemed by them. But, as his mystic theology came into conflict with the church doctrine, he drew upon himself the most violent attacks. Espousing the peculiar views of Monophysitism, and more particularly as they were apprehended by the party of Xenayas, he maintained that as Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, are one divine essence, and as the humanity formed one nature with the godhead in Christ, and his body became of like essence to the divinity, (was deified) so through Him all fallen beings should also be exalted to unity with God, in this way would become one with God; so that God, as Paul expresses it, should be all in all. If it is true, as it is related, that on the walls of his cell were found

CHAPTER VII.

HERESY.

BY heresy we are to understand the doctrines of sects outside of the Church ; or doctrines that the Church has openly condemned. Catholic theologians say that Pantheism is the

written the words, 'All creatures are of the same essence with God ;' we must suppose that he extended this assertion so as to include not only all rational beings, but all creatures of every kind, and that his theory *was*—as all existence proceeded by an original emanation from God, so by redemption all existence, once more refined and enobled, would return back to Him. But the question then arises, whether he understood this, after the Pantheistic manner, as a return to the divine essence with the loss of all self-subsistent, individual existence ; (as it has often been observed, that mysticism runs into Pantheism ; or whether he supposed that, with the coming into existence of finite beings sin also necessarily made its appearance, but that by the redemption this contrariety was removed, and now at length the individual existence of the creature should continue to subsist, as such in union with God. Our information is too scanty to enable us to decide this question." In another place speaking of the development of doctrine in the Greek Church Neander says, "The monk Maximus, distinguished by his acute and profound intellect, appeared in the seventh century, as the representative of this dialectic contemplative disposition. It appears from his works, that the writings of Gregory of Nyssa, and of the pseudo-Dionysius, had exercised great influence on his theological views. We may trace the main lineaments of a connected system in his writings. Christianity, as seen in the doctrine of the Trinity, seemed to him to form the right medium between the too contracted view of the idea of God in Judaism, and the too diffuse notion exhibited in the nature-deifying system of Heathenism. He considered the highest aim of the whole creation to be the inward union into which God enters with it through Christ ; whilst, without injury to His unchangeableness He brings humanity into personal union with Himself in order to deify man ; whence God becomes man without change of essence ; and human nature is taken into union with Him without losing aught of its peculiar character. To be able to keep a firm hold of these opinions, it was of importance to him to possess distinct notions on the union of the two natures, still retaining their particular properties unaltered. The object of redemption is not only to purify human nature from sin, but to exalt it to a higher state than that which it originally enjoyed—to an unchangeable and divine life. Thus the history of creation becomes divided into two great parts ; the one exhibiting the preparation for the assumption of human nature by God ; the other, the progressively developed deification of man's nature, commencing with that act, and carried on in those who are fitted for it by a right will, till the end is attained in their perfect salvation. Hence he often speaks of a continued humanizing of the Logos in believers, in so far as the human life is taken into communion with Christ, and is imbued with his own divine principle of life ; and he regards the soul of him who is the source of so divine a life 'a bearer of God.'"

inevitable goal of Protestantism, and therefore they find it among all sects, ancient and modern. But as Catholic theologians are not agreed what Pantheism is, some finding it in books, where others cannot find it, we must, for the present, leave it an open question to what extent and in what way it is the goal either of Protestantism or of Catholicism.

But if the influence of the Greek philosophers and the Oriental religions was so marked among the Greek fathers, and since even the writings of S. Dionysius have found so many admirers in the Catholic church, it will not surprise us that the same or similar doctrines are found in the writings of heretical teachers. As in the first centuries of the Christian era, Judaism, Neoplatonism, and Christianity were all struggling for pre-eminence and mutually influencing each other, it was only to be expected that the doctrines common to them all, would be found under manifold forms. To so great an extent was this the case, that some who wished to be considered Christians, were refused that name, and regarded even by the Platonic fathers as corrupters of the Christian faith.

The heresies of the early church, especially those with which we are concerned here, arose from the predominance of Greek or Oriental speculation over the purely Christian element. Christianity, as taught by Christ and His disciples, was not so much a philosophy as a religion. It led the soul to God by intuition and inspiration, without professing to satisfy the understanding on questions relating to the essence of God, or His relation to the universe. But did it forbid these enquiries? Did it say that they were not proper for man? On this question the fathers were divided; some saying, that we have nothing to do with philosophy, and that the Christian's only business is to learn the doctrines of the Church, others who before their conversion, had been philosophers of the schools, embraced Christianity because it helped them to understand the questions which they had long been studying; and why should they give up the study now?

THE GNOSTICS.—From the speculative side of the Church, sprang the philosophical heretics. The oldest of these were the Gnostics, who are divided into many sects; for Gnostic, which means one that knows, seems to have been applied to all the heretics whose speculations on nature and being did not agree with the speculations approved of by the Church. Perhaps the most marked distinction between the Gnostics and the Alexandrian fathers, is, that the former have more of the Oriental

spirit, the latter more of the Greek. The Gnostics had more theosophy; the Alexandrians more philosophy. Plotinus, who had imported into his system more of Orientalism than any Greek before him, wrote against the Gnostics, charging them with perverting the old philosophy of the Greeks.

The general character of Gnosticism does not differ widely from that of contemporaneous philosophies in the Eastern world. It is occupied with the same questions and comes to nearly the same conclusions. The special heresy of the Gnostics, as professed Christians, was the denial of the humanity of Christ; and this arose from the belief which, as philosophers, they entertained, that matter was connected with evil, and that the body was the dwelling place of sin; and if sin was thus inseparably connected with the material body, they concluded that Christ's humanity must have been illusive—He was man in appearance only. Some of them placed so wide an interval between the invisible and the visible, as to separate between the God of heaven and the God of nature. This indeed had been done by some of the old philosophers, for they would not admit the creating God to be the same with Him who was the immoveable essence. The Demiurgus was the "mind" of God with Plato, and the second hypostasis of the Trinity with Plotinus; but some of the Gnostics went so far as to make the Demiurgus the enemy of God, like the Ahriman of the Parsees, creating a kingdom opposed to God's; yet this dualism again in some way resolved itself into monism; the existence of the opposing god and his world of nature being only a necessary result of the emanations of the supreme God.

Matter, in his *Critical History of Gnosticism*, arranges the Gnostic sects into six classes. The first, comprised of the small primitive schools, which having at their head Cerinthus, and Simon, allied to Christianity doctrines borrowed from Judaism, Greek Polytheism, and the East. The second, consisting of the schools of Syria, joined to Christianity some of the fundamental ideas of the East. The third class, which embraced, the great schools of Egypt, was hostile to Judaism in some of its divisions, but blended in its teaching the doctrines of Asia, Egypt, and Greece. The fourth, that of the small schools of Egypt, did not much differ from the great schools. The fifth class was that of the Marcionites, which carried its hostility to Judaism very far, but added to Christianity some ideas from the East. Another class was composed of those who professed the principles of the *Clementines*, which allied Judaism and Orientalism to Christian doctrines.

Of Simon, the Magician, we know but little beyond the mention of him in the Acts of the Apostles. He was called the "great power of God;" a designation which is supposed to mean that he was an incarnation of God, or one of the divine powers which surrounded the Eternal, and were, in reality, the divine attributes. When he saw the works of the Apostles, he joined himself with them as a disciple of Christianity. For anything we know to the contrary, he may have been a Christian to the end of his life. Tradition makes him an impostor and the head of a Gnostic sect. He supposed that the Holy Ghost could be bought with money; but his answer to Peter, says Matter, established his good faith and his deference for the Apostles—"Pray God for me that none of these evils of which you have spoken happen to me."

Cerinthus, as we learn from Theodoret, was a native of Judea. He lived sometime in Egypt, and became familiar with the allegorical system of Philo. He wished to preserve it in Christianity, but was strenuously opposed by the disciples of S. John. He believed the interval between the supreme Being and the material world to be so great, that he was unwilling to attribute creation to the supreme God. The Creator of the world was an inferior power, separated from the first principle by a long series of *Æons*, or inferior powers, who did not know God, or who, at least, as Irenæus expressed it, had less knowledge of Him than the Logos had. Jesus of Nazareth, the son of Joseph and Mary, in virtue of His great wisdom and goodness, was united to Christ at his baptism in the Jordan, and the object of this union was the manifestation of the supreme God to men.

Saturninus, who represents the first Syrian School, was more related to the disciples of Zoroaster than any of the other Gnostics; that is to say, he was clearer in his enunciation of the doctrine of the two principles. He identified the "I am" of the Jews with the supreme Being of the Zendavesta; calling Him not only Father, as Christians had been taught to do, but the "*Unknown Father*." He calls Him also the source of all that is pure; for the "powers of being" become weak in proportion as they are distant from the first or primitive source. On the last stage of the pure world are seven angels, which represent what is least perfect in the intelligible world; and these seven angels are the creators of the world which is material and visible. This differs, apparently, from the doctrine of Zoroaster. But it is, probably, only another mode of expressing the same thing, creation frequently being but another word for emanation. The angels made the *creature*, man; but the breath of the su-

preme power animated him and elevated him to his position as man. He must be freed from the bondage of matter, and for this work Christ came into the world. He was the first of the heavenly powers; and on earth was without form, without natural birth, and without any material body.

Bardesanes, was the founder of the second school of Syria. He also admitted the two principles; the one the "*Unknown Father*," or the supreme and eternal God, who lives in the bosom of the light, blessed in the perfect purity of his being; the other *eternal matter*, or that inertness, dark and uninformed, which the East reckoned the source of all evil, the mother and the seat of Satan. The eternal God, happy in the plenitude of His life and His perfections, having resolved to spread abroad this life and happiness beyond Himself, multiplied Himself or manifested Himself as many beings, partaking his nature and bearing His name; for the *Æons* were called *El*, or God.

The first being, whom the *Unknown Father* produced, was His syzygy, or companion, whom He placed in the celestial paradise; and who there became, through Him, the mother of THE SON of the living God, Christ. This is an allegory which means that the Eternal conceived, in the silence of His decrees, the thought of revealing Himself by another Being, who was His image or Son. After Christ, comes His sister or spouse, the Holy Spirit, whom the Church itself calls the love of the Son for the Father. Bardesanes admitted seven of these syzygies, or seven emanations of mystical couples. With the help of the four *Æons*, types of the elements, the Son and the Spirit made the heaven and the earth and all that is visible. The soul of man, in the last analysis, was itself an emanation of the supreme Being; one of the *Æons*. It was the breath of God, the spirit of the Spirit that formed the world.

The third class of Gnostics, that of Egypt or Alexandria, is perhaps the most important of all, and the most marked by Alexandrian doctrine. Basilides the head of this school, like all other Gnostics, placed at the head of all, the unrevealed or ineffable God. From Him proceeded emanations, which in their turn were themselves God, for they were in reality but the divine names and attributes hypostasised. With Basilides, the manifoldness of God appears first as an *Ogdoad*, consisting of seven divine powers, and the primal One. This is the first Octave, the root of all existence. From them are evolved other existences; each rank being a copy of the preceeding one and inferior to it. Every rank or series is composed of

seven intelligences, and the total of these three hundred and sixty-five make the intelligible or celestial world. The soul of man is a ray of the celestial light which has been in a perpetual migration since the beginning of the world. Its end is to be separated from the material, that it may return to the source whence it came; and not only is this the destiny of the soul of man, but of all life that is now imprisoned in matter. Christ came to accomplish this deliverance, and for this end he was united to Jesus of Nazareth.

The most significant, according to Baur, and that which represents the first chief form of the Gnosis, is undoubtedly the Valentinian, partly as it is set forth by Valentinus himself, and partly as it is more fully expounded with different modifications by his zealous disciples. Like the system of Basilides, that of Valentinus has a double series of manifestations or of beings, which are all united to a single first Cause. Of these, some are the immediate manifestations of the plenitude of the divine life; others are emanations of a secondary kind. The head of both series, who is the immediate head of the first only, is a perfect Being the *Bythos* or abyss, which no intellect can fathom. No eye can behold the invisible and unspeakable glory in which He dwells, we cannot comprehend the duration of His existence. He has always been and He will always be.

The manifestation of His perfections gave existence to the intelligible world. To this act we cannot apply the word creation, for it was not a production of that which did not exist. The supreme Being put outside of Himself that which was concealed; that which was concentrated in the Pleroma; and the intelligences to which He gave existence, bore the name of manifestations, powers, or *Æons*. The Cabbalists gave to all superior intelligences, and especially to the Sephiroth, the names *El*, *Jehovah*, *Elohim*, and *Adonai*. They wished by this to express that *all that which emanates from God, still is God*. The Gnostics had the same thought, and gave to the intelligences the name *Æon*, which means a world; an age; an eternity. The most characteristic attribute for God was *eternity*; and therefore these emanations of God were called *Æons*. The Valentinians say, according to Irenæus, that there is in the invisible and unspeakable heights, an *Æon* of all perfection, who has been before all things. They call Him also *Bythos*.

The *Bythos* having passed infinite ages in rest and silence, resolved to manifest Himself; and for this He made use of thought, which alone belonged to Him; which is not a manifest-

ation of His being, but which is the source of all perfection—the mother which receives the germs of His creation. The first manifestation which the *thought* of the Supreme Being produced was mind. In the allegorical language of the Valentinians, thought was impregnated by the Bythos, and thus was produced mind the only begotten Son of the Supreme. Bythos is thus masculine; at other times masculo-feminine, as when regarded as in a state of unity with thought. Bythos and *thought* have their counterpart in the Ammon and Neith of the Egyptians. Mind is the first manifestation of the powers of God—the first of the *Æons*, the beginning of all things. By it Divinity is revealed; for without the act which give it existence, all things would remain buried in the Bythos. The *Æons* are but the more complete revelation of God. They are the forms of the great Being, the names of Him, whose perfections no name can express—the names of the nameless One. Of these *Æons*, some are masculine, and some are feminine. The feminine is the analogue of the masculine; so that the Ogdoad becomes a Tetrad, and can be reduced to these:—Bythos, Mind, Word, Man.

In the Bythos, all things are one. As it unfolds itself there result antitheses, which are formed through all degrees of existence. But these are antitheses of like kinds; syzygies, or unions; copiers of Bythos and *thought*. The one is the complement of the other. The first of the two is the male, the active or forming principle; the second, the feminine, or passive principle. From their union result other *Æons*, which are the images of these. The union of all *Æons* forms the *Pleroma* * or fulness of the divine nature, the plenitude of the

* The Tetrad, consists of the *Bythos* (abyss,) *Nous* (mind,) *Logos* (speech,) *Anthropos* (man.) In the *Bythos*, all is one, its manifestations constitute the degrees of existence; the four which make the Tetrad, with their syzygies, make the Ogdoad. The syzygy of *Bythos* is *Ennoia* (thought,) sometimes call *Sigē* (silence,) and *Arreton* (the unspeakable,) the syzygy of *Nous* is *Aletheia* (truth.) These four, make the first Tetrad of the Ogdoad, the syzygy of *Logos* is *Zōē* (life,) and that of *Anthropos*, *Ekklesia*, (the Church.) These form the second Tetrad. From *Bythos* proceeds *Horos* (limitation,) the *Æon* sent to teach the last of the *Æons*, (*Sophia*), that she could not be united to the *Bythos*. The desire to know the *Bythos*, and to return to it, which had seized *Sophia*, possessed all the *Æons*, which troubled the harmony of the *Pleroma*. To finish the work begun by *Horos*, the *Nous* engendered *Christos*, and His companion *Pneuma* (spirit.) From *Logos* and *Zōē* emanate a decade of *Æons*; *Bythios* (of the nature of *Bythos*), *Ageratos* (the ageless,) *Autophyes*, (self-produced,) *Akinetos* (the immovable,) and *Monogenes* (the only begotten,) with their syzygies, *Mixis* (alliance,) *Henosis* (union,) *Hedone* (pleasure,) *Synkhrasis* (moderation,) *Makaria* (blessedness.) From

attributes and perfections of Him, whom no man can know, save the only begotten Son.

All the manifestations of God were pure, and reflected the rays of His divine attributes. But the Æons were not equal in perfection. The more their rank separated them from God, the less they knew Him and the nearer they were to imperfection; yea, they reached imperfection, and of necessity there was degeneracy, or as it is otherwise called, a fall. The Æons that were distant from God, were animated by a vehement desire to know Him; but this was impossible. Eternal silence, which means an impossibility in the nature of things, prevented their attaining this knowledge. The harmony of the Pleroma was troubled; there was need of a restoration, of a deliverance from the fall. This deliverance was wrought by Christ.

This Pleroma, this fall and deliverance, only concerned the the celestial or intelligible world; but the inferior or terrestrial world is a copy of the celestial; and though outside of the Pleroma what took place in the celestial had its counterpart in the terrestrial. Jesus did for the inferior world what Christ did for the Pleroma, as the only begotten. He was the first-born of creation, and spread throughout all existence placed outside of the Pleroma the germs of the divine life, which He embraced in His own person.

There was a manifest contradiction in speaking of a Pleroma or fulness, which contained the all of being, and then assuming the existence of matter outside of the Pleroma. But the Valentinians had a ready answer. Though the Father of all things, they said, contain all, and nothing is beyond the Pleroma, yet "inside of" and "outside of" are only words adapted to our knowledge or our ignorance, having no reference to space or distance. And when they spoke of matter beyond the Pleroma, they explained matter as the philosophers had done before them; as not a real existence, but the necessary bounds between being and non-being, a negative something between that which is and that which is not. The existence of a purely divine, and a divine mingled with matter, required Valentinus to acknowledge, in the creative wisdom of God, a two-fold being, a higher and a

Anthropos and *Ekklesia* emanate a duodecade; *Parakletos* (comforter,) and *Pistis* (faith,) *Patrikos* (paternal,) and *Elpis* (hope,) *Metrikos* (the metrical,) and *Agape* (love,) *Acinous* (eternal mind,) and *Synesis* (intelligence,) *Ekklesiastikos* (belonging to the church,) and *Makariotes* (the blissful) *Theletos* (will) and *Sophia* (wisdom,) last of all, the Æon Jesus, who united in himself, all the good of all the Æons.

lower wisdom. The latter is the soul of the world, the immature *Æon* in its progress to perfection. From the mingling of this *Æon* with matter, spring all living existences, in gradations without number; higher in proportion as they are free from matter, and lower the more they are in contact with it.

The doctrines of Basilides and Valentinus, under different modifications, were held by all the sects of Egyptian Gnostics, both of the great and the small schools. Neander says "There were some among this kind of Gnostics who carried their Pantheism through with more consistency. They held that the same soul is diffused through all living and inanimate nature; and that, consequently, all, wherever it is dispersed and confined by the bonds of matter within the limits of individual existence, should at length be absorbed by the world-soul or wisdom, the original source whence it flowed. Such Gnostics, said, 'when we take things for food we absorb the soul, scattered and dispersed in them, into our own being, and with ourselves carry them upward to the original fountain.' Thus, eating and drinking were for them a kind of worship." In an apocryphal gospel of this sect * the world-soul or supreme Being says to the initiated, "Thou art I and I am thou; where thou art I am, and I am diffused through all. Where thou pleasest thou canst gather me, but in gathering me thou gatherest thyself." Dorner says, "Epiphanius relates of the Gnostics of Egypt, what proves that they were in part given to a Nature-Pantheism. They called the quickening powers of nature, Christ. Those who believed that they had measured the entire circle of nature-life, and had collected and offered all power, said 'I am Christ.'" †

* The gospel of Eve—The sect, the Ophites.

† The Marcionites who in *Matter's* classification are the fifth group of Gnostics belonged to Asia Minor and Italy. There is nothing in their doctrines to require any particular notice here. The Clementines represented rather the opinions of an individual than a sect. Their fundamental definition of God is that He is a pure Being, rest, and out of Him, is only nothing. As Being He is the all. The world including man stands over against Being as the vacuum which is to be filled by Him who IS. God is good and especially righteous. This imposes the necessity of thinking God as personal. God viewed in Himself is eternally united with wisdom as His spirit and His effulgent body. But His manifestation is a movement of *God Himself* flowing forth in the double act of expansion and contraction of Himself of which the heart of man is the type, the wisdom, the spirit or word of God is the eternally outstretched hand which completes the manifestation and forms the world. The world of revelation is God unfolding Himself. There are six acts of self-expansion which comprehend the six world epochs which, in the seventh, find their point of rest in God. God is the eternal Sabbath and the moveless Centre. But though the world is a communication of His essence a

MANICHÆISM.—After Gnosticism, the other great philosophical heresy was the Church of the Manichees. Manes, the founder of this sect, before he embraced Christianity, had lived long among the Persian Magi, and had acquired a great reputation for all kinds of learning. "The idea," *Matter* says, which governs all his system, is Pantheism; which, more or less, pervades all the schools of the Gnosis; which he however derived from other quarters; doubtless, from its original source in the regions of India and China, which he had visited, in order to satisfy his ardor for theological speculation." According to Manes, the cause of all that which exists is in God; but in the last analysis, God is all. All souls are equal. God is in all. This divine life is not limited to man and animals, it is the same in plants. But the Pantheism of Manes was modified by the dualism of Zoroaster. The kingdoms of light and darkness, spirit and matter, had long contended. Each had its *Æons* or demons, under the leadership of their chief, as in the kingdoms of Ormuzd and Ahriman. At one time, the kingdom of darkness seemed likely to overcome; but the chief of the kingdom of light, seeing the danger, created a power which he placed in the front of the heavens, to protect the *Æons*, and to destroy the kingdom of darkness or evil. This power was *the mother of life*—the soul of the world—the divine principle, which indirectly enters into relation with the material world, to correct its evil nature. As a direct emanation of the Supreme, it is too pure to come into contact with matter. It remains on the bounds of the superior region. But the mother of life bore a Son, who is her image; this Son is the first or celestial man. He fights with the powers of darkness, but he is in danger of being conquered and of falling into the empire of darkness; but the ruler of the light kingdom, sends the *living spirit* to deliver him. He is delivered; but part of his armour or light which, in the Eastern allegory, is called *his son*, has been devoured by the princes of the kingdom of darkness.

The succession, then, of the first beings of the empire of light, is this;—The good God, the mother of life, the first man the *son of man* or Jesus Christ and the living spirit. The Mother of life, who is the general principle of divine life, and the first man are too elevated to be allied with the empire of

momentum of the Monad God in His inner Being remains unchanged. He is personal but He is also Being. Christ, the eternal prophet of truth, is manifested in Adam, Enoch, and Jesus.

darkness. The Son of man is the germ of the divine life which according to the language of the Gnosis enters the empire, and ends by tempering it or purifying it from its savage nature. The deliverance of the celestial ray which is in the empire of matter and its return into the bosom of perfection constitute the end and destiny of all visible existence. This end once reached, the world will cease to be.

The visible Adam was created in the image of the first man. His soul was light and his body matter and thus he belonged to both kingdoms. Had he obeyed the commandment not to eat of the forbidden fruit, he would have been freed ultimately from the kingdom of darkness, but an angel of light tempted him to disobey. The demons produced Eve whose personal charms seduced him from the spiritual and plunged him into the sensual. What happened at the creation of the world is repeated by the generation of every human being. The blind forces of matter and darkness are confounded, and enchain the soul which seeks deliverance. Man is enchained of fate by this act which has given him existence, and which always gives him up weaker to the powers of sense and the charms of the terrestrial world.

JOHN SCOTUS ERIGENA.—It is not with the full permission of the Catholic Church, that we place among heretics the name of John Scotus Erigena. Until the year 1583, both the French and English martyrologers celebrated him as a holy martyr, and since the republication of his works in Germany, many Catholic theologians of that country claim him as a sound Catholic. He certainly lived and died in the communion of the Church of Rome—was perhaps an Abbot and therefore probably a priest, though evidence is wanting to establish the certainty of this. He first appears in history in a controversy on predestination. Godescalcus a Saxon monk, had incurred the displeasure of the Archbishop of Rheims, by teaching that God's predestination was two-fold; one of the good to eternal blessedness and the other of the reprobate to eternal condemnation. Erigena espoused the side of the Archbishop, maintaining that God out of His everlasting love had predestined all men to eternal life. The controversy became so important that an appeal was made to Rome. Nicholas I. approved of the doctrine of Godescalcus and tried to check the "poisonous" dogmas of Erigena; "nevertheless" adds his German Catholic biographer with a feeling of triumph, "Erigena himself was not condemned." At the request of Charles the Bald, Erigena translated into Latin the works of S. Dionysius the Areopagite. This again exposed him to the

Papal displeasure; Nicholas blamed him for translating, without the approbation of the Court of Rome, a book so liable to be mis-interpreted. His work on the Eucharist, in reply to Radbertus was condemned and burnt by the Council of Versailles in the eleventh century, but his Catholic advocates in Germany say this book was not written by Erigena, but by Ratramnus. His great work "on the Division of Nature" seems to have passed without censure till the thirteenth century when Honorius III. finding it had leavened the sect of the Albigenses who boasted of their argeement with so great a man as Erigena, ordered all his works to be collected and burnt. In the seventeenth century they were republished at Oxford, and immediately after catalogued at Rome in the index of books forbidden. To what extent Erigena is a heretic the infallible Church has not decided. He believed his speculative theology to be in perfect harmony with the theology of the Church. This has been maintained by some modern Catholic theologians, but denied by others. It is convenient here to place him among heretics, and yet it is improper to separate him from the author of the Dionysian writings.* Erigena's great work, we have said, is "on the Division of Nature." By "Nature" he understands not only all being, but all non-being; things which are, and things which are not. These two are necessary to constitute absolute Existence, for being is not the all so long as non-being stands opposed to it, this however is but the ground of a further division into four kinds.

* Of the history of this remarkable man, very little is known. To his name, John Scotus, was added Erigena or the *Irish-born*. Tradition brings him from the Irish monasteries, where it is said philosophy and the Greek language flourished long after they had fallen into neglect in other parts of Europe; but Scotland and Wales dispute with Ireland the honor of being the country of his birth. He found a liberal patron in Charles the Bald, who made him Director of the University of Paris. His rare acquaintance with the Greek language; his familiarity with the doctrines of Plato, and his Alexandrian disciples, seem to have constituted his chief claim to regal patronage and to Papal censure. According to one account he died in France. According to another, he found a second royal protector in Alfred the Great, who made him teacher of Mathematics and Dialectics at Oxford, and then Abbot of Malmesbury. He suffered death at the hands of his scholars. A wonderful light shone over the place where his body lay, till it was buried near the altar in the great church of Malmesbury. He was henceforth enrolled in the list of saints and martyrs. Like nearly all great metaphysicians, he was little of stature, and endowed with great subtlety of intellect. Dr. Christlieb enters at some length into the question of Erigena's return to England giving the evidence on both sides, and he concludes that the probability is in favor of the belief that Erigena did come to England. The authorities are Simeon of Durham; William of Malmesbury, and Matthew of Westminster. The objection is, that these authors confounded Erigena with some other Scotus.

1. Nature which creates and is not created.
2. Nature which creates and is created.
3. Nature which is created and does not create.
4. Nature which is not created and does not create.

These four divisions are purely speculative, starting with the idea of existence in which being and non-being, subject and object, God and the world are all one. The Dualism is only apparent, the Monism is real. On the human side, that is, in our subjective contemplation "Nature" is two-fold and manifold. On the divine side, *all* is one. The four divisions are justly resolved into two. The first is manifestly, God in the Word, as the Original of all things. The second is things in their ideals, which in Plato's sense are the realities. The third is what some would call the reality in the ideals but, in Platonic language, the phenomenal world. The fourth is God in Himself as the source of all things, and as the goal to which all things return. Reduced to two, these four divisions are God from whom all emanates and the things emanating from Him; but as the latter have no reality except so far as they derive it from Him from whom they emanate, we come back to the Pantheistic formula—God is one and all things.

Erigena dwells much on the incomprehensibility of God. He is so overwhelmed with the thought of the divine infinitude, that he does not imagine God to be known by any created beings. Even to expect to know God as He is, is as unwise as the demand of Philip "Shew us the Father." And Christ's answer to Philip, is the only answer that will ever be given to our expectations of seeing God. We shall behold Him in His theophanies; in the manifestations of Himself in creation, but above all, shall we know Him in His Son. We know that God is, and that He is the highest reality; the essence of all which is, but what that essence is, we know not. It remains above all human thoughts and all human conceptions of being. God alone creates, and is alone un-created, He is created by no other, because He creates *Himself*. But if thus above us, how can we think of Him? How can we speak of Him? If we cannot know Him, is theology possible? This is a question with which we are still familiar. The different answers to it, and the conclusions from these answers are interesting, when we compare them with the answers and conclusions that were made in the days of Alfred the Great. Erigena did not despair of theology, though he declares God to be the absolutely unknowable and unknown. We can think and speak of Him in two ways, negatively and posi-

tively. We first deny that God is anything; any of those things which can be spoken of, or understood. Then we predicate of Him all things, but affirming that He is not any one of them, and yet that all are by and through Him. We can say of God that He is being, but that is not properly being to which non-being stands opposed. He is therefore above being. We can say, He is God. If we take the Greek word for God, as derived from the Greek verb *to see*, then darkness is opposed to vision, and God being more than light, is above God; if from the verb *to run* then not running is opposed to running, and He is, in this sense too, more than God. It is written "His word runneth very swiftly," which means that He runs through all things which are, in order that they may be. In the same way He is more eternal than eternity, wiser than wisdom, better than goodness, and truer than truth. These attributes are transferred from the creature to the Creator, from the finite to the Infinite. They exist in Him, but in a manner so transcendent that we speak most reverently of Him when we deny Him all attributes, lest we should associate with them anything that is human or finite. Only by predicating all things of God, and at the same time denying Him the possibility of these predicates being applied to Him, can we speak truly of God. There is more truth in the negation than the affirmation. We know Him best, by feeling our ignorance of Him. This is true divine knowledge to know that we do not know Him. The highest name by which He can be called is to call Him by no name, and our highest conception of Him is not as in reality a being, but as the *Absolute Nothing* who is above all being.

But Erigena cannot stop here. The dread of limitation accompanying the knowledge of the divine Being, is thus the ground of the denial of that knowledge. But another question immediately arises. Does God know Himself? If He does is not that a limitation, as well as human knowledge of Him? If He knows Himself, He must become an object of His own knowledge, and as such He is no longer the Infinite and the Inconceivable. Erigena comes boldly to the legitimate conclusion of his rigid Dialectic. God does not know Himself. He knows that He is, but He does not know what He is. If He knows not Himself, how are we to know Him? Wherefore need we ask His name since it is so wonderful? God cannot be known as anything determined, and yet this divine ignorance is in truth the most inexpressible wisdom. And so it is with God's unconsciousness of Himself. We

say He does not know Himself because if He did He would be limited. This attribute like the others must be both affirmed and denied of Him; so as to express that His knowledge of Himself is like Himself, above all that is being or essence, transcendently divine.

Erigena divided nature, or the all of being and non-being, into four divisions. These, as we have seen, were reducible to two, and these again to one, in the identity of God and creation. But this identity may be understood in two ways, either that the essence of God goes out entirely into the being of the universe, or that though all things partake of His being, and are manifestations of it, yet, He Himself transcends all. It is in the latter sense, that we are here to understand the identity of God and the universe. He creates all things, and His essence is in all things. It is manifested in every creature, and yet God remains One in Himself. He never gives up the simplicity of His being. God moves and extends Himself, and therefore the universe, as a visible phenomenon, appears. All is His extension, because all arises from this, that God extends Himself; but in this extension He does not give up His being. He still exists, separate from all, just as our spirits exist separate from our thoughts as expressed in words or in writing. His presence in all things does not hinder that He remains one in Himself. The universe has no existence independent of God's existence; it is therefore God, but not the whole of God. He is more than the universe, yet the divine nature is truly and properly in all things. Nothing really is, in which the divine nature is not. God and the creature then do not differ in their essential nature; they are both divine. The creature subsists in God; and God after a wonderful manner is created in the creature.

Erigena uses the word creation, and his Catholic advocates plead this as a proof of his orthodoxy; but we must not be misled by words. Creation, with Erigena, is emanation. His arguments lose their meaning the moment we forget this. Emanation is the chain which unites the created to the uncreated; the invisible bond which makes Creator and creature one. As the second of the four divisions, we had "That which creates and is created." This represents the ideals which constitute the realities of all created things, which the Greeks called prototypes, species or eternal forms according to which, and in which, the visible universe was created. These ideals are God's thoughts. His conceptions of things before the

beginning of time. They are identical with His spirit and will. God cannot exist without creating, for creation is His necessary work. The divine attributes of being, wisdom, goodness and truth require that God create—and these are themselves one with the ideal principles of creation. These ideals thus become the bridge between the Infinite and the finite. As God's attributes they participate in God, and at the same time they are the realities of the phenomenal universe. To understand this we must dismiss our ordinary conception of a thought, as something in the mind distinct from the outward reality. All God's thoughts, it is maintained, have a real objective existence in the Logos, which, as Scripture teaches, existed in the beginning or first principle, the primordial cause of the heaven and earth. He formed in His Word, which is His only begotten Son, all the things which He wished to create, before they came to phenomenal existence. The Word thus is the unity of the ideals; the original form of all things, which in an eternal and unchangeable manner are represented in Him, and subsist by Him.

Whilst the ideals were regarded as the divine attributes, or God's necessary thoughts, Erigena found it easy to identify these with God through the Word. But how is he to bridge the separation between the ideal and phenomenal universe—between the second and third divisions of nature—"That which creates and is created;" and "That which is created and does not create?" The ideas are co-eternal with God. This is settled; but could they be objective realities until they passed into the phenomenal state? In other words—can there be a cause until it makes good its existence by an effect? Is the phenomenal universe co-eternal with the ideal; or did it take its origin in time? If the latter, then creation was not eternal, unless there can be a cause without an effect. But creation is eternal—the ideal universe is eternal, the phenomenal being necessary to its completion, it too must be eternal. Logically, the effect follows the cause; the creature must come after the creation; so that here we are compelled to distinguish between the eternity of God who has His beginning in Himself, and the eternity of things created, which have their beginning in Him. Yet, when He was, they were; the primordial causes are co-eternal with Him, because they always subsisted in Him. What then is matter, time, and space? As realities they disappear. Time is but the continuance and motion of things mutable. The cognition of it, precedes everything known or belonging to time.

Space is a limitation of sensible and intelligible objects. It is not perceivable by sense. It can only be thought in the reason. Time and space are merely subjective existences. Nearly the same is said of matter. It comes to appearance within the bounds of time and space, flowing out from the primordial causes. So far as it has form, it is corporeal, but so far as it is formless it is incorporeal, and can be known only by reason. Aristotle regarded matter as mere potentiality; and form as the actuality which brought the indefinite material to be a *something*. Erigena's doctrine does not much differ from this. Matter is to him only the participation of form and shape. Whatever wants these is nothing actual. But form and shape are in themselves incorporeal, and can only be known by the reason. It follows then that things formed as well as things formless are originally and essentially incorporeal. The latter, through the want of form, the former, not in themselves, but through the form. But that which is in itself incorporeal becomes corporeal by its participation with another incorporeal; and thus bodies are produced by the coming together of two incorporeals. If so, they can be again resolved into their original states and cease to be bodies. What then is matter? Nothing—or something next to nothing; the mutability of things mutable; the “without form and void;” the nonentity of a body which remains when deprived of all its qualities—the mere reflection, echo and shadow of true being.

Man visible has his place at the head of the “nature which is created and does not create.” As the essence of God is the one substance of all beings, as the *Logos* is the unity of all the primordial causes, so is man the mediating point of the opposites and differences of the phenomenal world. His being contains all created natures in itself; since in the spirit and reason of man God has created the invisible and intelligible world; and in his body, the visible and sensible. Man is contained in the hidden original cause of nature according to which he was created; and in him is contained the whole creation, so that he has been called, not improperly, “the work-shop of all other creatures.” He understands as an angel; reasons as a man; feels as an animal; lives as a plant; consists of body and soul; and is akin to every creature. He was created in God's image, that in Him every creature, both intelligible and sensible, might form an undivided unity. Need we marvel then, that if in his suffering, creatures suffer, and that all creation is groaning and travailing together with him, and with him waiting for deliverance?

The fourth division of nature is, "That which does not create and is not created." This, as we have already seen, is God in Himself. The difference is, that in the first, God is the Creator—the Word—the Being from whom creation emanates. In this He is the Being to whom creation returns. This is God in our highest conception of Him; God without attributes; God in His super-essential essence, neither creative nor created; God as the original Monad, which not being any *one* thing, is yet more than all things, and of whom we speak most reverently and most truly, when we call Him the absolute Non-being.

We have reserved hitherto the application of Erigena's philosophy to the interpretation of Scripture and church dogmas. This arrangement is of our own making. It has no place in the "Division of Nature." There—Scripture, church doctrine and philosophy are brought together to explain each other—the perfect harmony of all these being previously assumed. Erigena was a Christian and a Catholic. Let us see how he understood Christianity.*

The Catholic faith is, that we worship one God in Trinity and Trinity in Unity. This is a true doctrine. We may object to the contradictory and hard dogmatic form which it takes in the Latin phrases of the creed of S. Athanasius; but in substance it is true. There are not three persons in the Godhead; but substitute the Greek word, which we translate person, explain that the Latin word means no more than is intended by the Greek word, and then the creed of S. Athanasius may be

* The prevailing bent of the theological spirit of that age was to cling, as we have remarked before, to the authorities of the church tradition: but as he was founding a system of truth, which should repose entirely on rational insight, approve itself as true by an inner necessity of reason. Yet even according to his apprehension, the rational and the church-traditional theology, faith and knowledge by reason, philosophy and religion did not stand in contradiction, but in perfect harmony with each other. For, said he, a man can elevate himself to the knowledge of God, which is the end of true philosophy, only by following the mode and manner in which God, who in His essence is incomprehensible and unknowable, letting Himself down to the condition and wants of humanity which is to be educated, has revealed Himself;—God in His forms of revelation, in His theophanies. After this manner God presents Himself in the historical development of religion, through the authority of the church; but true philosophy, which rises above the theophanies to the Absolute itself, which soars beyond all conceptual apprehension, gives insight into the laws according to which God must be known and worshipped. True philosophy and true religion are therefore one. Philosophy veiled in the form of tradition, is religion; religion unveiled from the form of tradition by rational knowledge is philosophy. Philosophy is the theoretic side of religion, religion the practical side of philosophy.—*Neander*.

allowed to pass. The Trinity is not so much a God in three persons, as God in three operations. God is one, and yet one in three self-subsisting hypostases or existences. He is one cause subsisting by itself, and yet in three self-subsisting causes. The Father is the cause of the Son, not as to nature, for both are of one essence; but according to the relation of him who begets, to him who is begotten, or of the cause that precedes, to that which follows. The Holy Spirit proceeds from the Father, not from but through the Son, for one cause cannot have two causes. Light proceeds from fire by the medium of a ray, but not from both, for the fire is the original cause both of the light and the ray. The ray produces the light, but not as if it were in itself a self-subsisting cause; for it can never be thought of, as separated from the fire from which the ray proceeds and which is incessantly present in the ray, and suffers the light to go forth from itself. So also the Father is the producing cause of the Son. And He is the essence of all causes which are created in Him by the Father; and the Father Himself is the cause of the Spirit proceeding *from* Him, but *through* the Son. The Spirit again is the cause of all division, multiplication and distribution of all the things, which are made in the Son by the Father, in the general and special workings both in the kingdoms of nature and of grace. Thus the Holy Spirit proceeds from the Father by the medium of the Son; and, again, the Son is begotten of the Father through the grace of the Holy Spirit. These forms and modes of representing the Trinity were common among the Greek fathers. How far they are orthodox is not our present business. With Erigena the "three" that form the Trinity never appear as persons, but only as powers, names, relations or operations of God. The Father is essence; the Son is wisdom; the Spirit is life. The Father is being; the Son is might; the Spirit is energy. The Father is mind; the Son self-knowledge; the Spirit self-love. As Abraham was not a father in himself, but in relation to Isaac, nor Isaac a son but in relation to Abraham, so God is not a father in Himself, nor Christ a son in himself; but the one a father and the other a son in relation to each other; the substance of both being the same. Though the operations are different, it is one God who works through all. The Father creates. Through the Son all is created. By the Spirit, as the differential principle, the creation is wrought out into the manifold. The Father wills; the Son creates; the Holy Spirit brings the work to completion. But for the Father to will is

to do, so that the working of the Son and the Spirit is but the willing of the Father. The Father is the principle of the substance of things—the Son, of their ideal causes—the Spirit, of their actual manifestation in time and space. The operations of the triune three are different, and yet the Worker is One. This great doctrine of the Church points to moments in the becoming of nature. It is a theophany of the truth, nothing more. God is neither a Trinity nor a Unity. He is something more than either three in one or one in three.

The creation of man too, like the being of God, is altogether transcendental. Man existed in the divine mind from all eternity. Of old "the delights of wisdom were with the sons of men." The ideal Adam was completely happy in paradise; he had a spiritual body like that of the angels. S. Paul discourses of glorified bodies and shows by his language that body and spirit are essentially of one substance. This primordial Adam was taught to love the spiritual and the invisible; but he desired the visible and the sensual, and as a punishment he was clothed with this present body of death. Then being subject to passions and the viler affections he was driven from paradise—that is, he was sent forth from the spiritual to the material world; he was no more like the angels. Eve was created. Marriage was instituted, and man was doomed to perpetuate his race in the same way as the beasts of the field. This may seem to contradict the narrative in Genesis; but in reality it does not, for the ideal Eve previously existed in the ideal Adam, and represented that principle of sense which seduced him from the spiritual life. In this expulsion from Eden, and this separation of the sexes, the phenomenal world, to speak humanly, has its origin. Man passes from the ideal and spiritual to the phenomenal and material, and as in him are contained all forms and ranks of creatures, these take their beginning as he begins his material existence. In this fall we learn what sin is. It is no real being, but only a privation of good—an accident of being. It was nothing which happened to man in time, but an original infirmity of his nature. The seed of sin or the possibility of willing evil was always in man. It was suffered by God to be in him. Indeed, the fall was predestined, that out of this seeming evil might be brought a greater good. It is impossible that God could be disappointed, or that any event should arise which He had not pre-ordained. The fall of the ideal Adam, and the creation of this phenomenal world, are but steps in the divine procedure—parts of an eternal working which, in the end, shall

contribute to the greater glory of God, and the higher blessedness of all the universe.

And the incarnation of Christ, that too is out of time. It must be, for the thought of it is co-existent with the thought of infirmity in man. As he was predestined to pass the material stage, so was he predestined to return to the spiritual or rather to pass on to it, for the fall and the incarnation are together processes in the history of the creature's progress towards the Creator. The subject of the Incarnation is the eternal *Logos*; the first principle, in and by whom all things were made. In the *Logos*, man had his being. He fell by the love of the sensual. He participated in the material. It was necessary that the *Logos* in order to restore man, should descend in like manner and participate of the material, therefore He took upon Him humanity in its fallen state; a body of sense with soul and spirit, and thereby He united in Himself the whole sensible and intelligible creation. In taking man's nature He took all the natures below man's for it includes them all, and thus He is the Redeemer of the whole creation. The *Logos* or eternal cause of all, descended as in His Godhead into the effects of which He is the cause, that is into the sensuous world that He might save according to His humanity the effects of the causes, which he already had eternally in Himself. The Incarnation was no matter of choice. It was necessary for the cause of all things, thus to make good the effects by descending into them. This was done by the *Logos*, who in this incarnation became man, and thereby manifested the eternal self-subsisting unity of the spiritual and the phenomenal; the infinite and the finite—the eternal immanency of God in the universe. As man is the content of all effects produced by the ideal cause, so the *Logos* is the unity or content of the causes themselves. In Scripture the incarnation is necessarily represented as taking place in time, but like the creation, and fall of man, it is in reality eternal.

The final and complete restitution of man, is the inevitable result of the incarnation of the *Logos*. The universe has proceeded from God. It is but the extension of His being; the manifestation of Himself; therefore must it return again to Him, not in part, but as a whole. The predestination of anything to destruction is but a figure of speech. All men shall be saved. Their return to God is necessary, yea it is not a thing of time, not an event of which we can speak, as past or future. It is something actual. In the contemplation of God it is eternally realized, but to man the *Logos* became incarnate in Jesus of

Nazareth, who by His death, resurrection and ascension completed the salvation of men, and angels.

ERIGENA'S DISCIPLES.—Erigena left no school, and if he had any immediate followers, nothing is known of them. "The century," says Neander, "in which he lived was not prepared for his system; but the speculative spirit which passed over from the twelfth to the thirteenth century prepared the way for its acquiring an influence which it was unable to do on its first appearance." We are without data for any sufficient history of the heresies of the thirteenth century; but we have intimations that they were numerous, and so widely spread as to alarm the authorities of the church. The chief of these heresies were various forms of what we call Pantheism. In the year 1204, the University of Paris condemned the doctrines of Amalric de Bena,* Professor of Theology in the University. As we have none of Amalric's writings, we only know his doctrines from passages preserved by other authors. These agree so entirely with Erigena's doctrines, as to leave no doubt as to the source from which they come. That God alone truly exists,—all else being merely phenomena,—that God and the creature are one and the same, and that all things will finally return to God, are the chief points in the heresy with which he is charged. Then we have in detail the Platonic doctrine of ideas and primordial causes—the forms and patterns which, like the second division of nature, create and are themselves created. They exist in God, and what God is they are. As Abraham is not of one nature and Isaac of another, but both one and the same, so all things are one—all are divine, God being the essence of all creatures. We have the repetition of Erigena's doctrine concerning the fall of man, and the result of that fall in the production of the sensuous body, and the origin of the two sexes. Amalric was removed from his professorship. He appealed to Innocent III., but the sentence of the University was confirmed. Thus condemned by the Roman See, he acknowledged his errors, signed a recantation, and soon after died.

* Amalric of Bena, was so called from his birth-place in the diocese of Chartres. In the beginning of the thirteenth century, he taught at Paris. After gaining a high reputation by his lectures on dialectics, he passed over to theology, and now created a great sensation by many of the opinions he advanced; among which may be mentioned in particular, the following: "As no man can be saved without believing in the sufferings and resurrection of Christ, so neither can he be saved without believing that he himself is a member of Christ."—*Neander*.

But Amalric's doctrines had taken deeper root than either the Pope or the University of Paris was aware of. His disciple, David of Dinanto, was not less formidable than Amalric had been. To refute David of Dinanto was the work of the theologians of this century, and to extirpate his followers the special vocation of the church. David wrote a book "On Divisions," which, from the portions of it preserved by Albert the Great, seems to have been an imitation of Erigena "on the Division of Nature." He is said to have gone beyond his master, in having defined God as "the *material* principle of all things, which was a substitution for Amalric's more idealistic phrase, "the formal principle." But the difference appears to be in words more than in meaning. What is "formal" in the Platonic philosophy is essential, and perhaps "material" is but another name for the same thing. Matter, as such, had no more existence for him than it had for Erigena or Amalric. Whatever he meant, we may safely conclude he did not think that God is material. This distinction between the theology of Amalric and David of Dinanto was first made by Thomas Aquinas, who describes the latter as having taught that God was the first matter; that is, that God is the one substance, essence or matter which constitutes the universe. He divides the "all" into "three indivisibles;" the substratum of the corporeal world; then, that out of which spirit proceeds; and lastly, that of the ideas or eternal substances. The first is called matter, the second spirit, and the third God. But the three are one; they are only different designations of the divine Essence according as we consider it in its relation to the corporeal, the spiritual, and the ideal worlds. God alone is true being, the only substance, of which all other beings are but the accidents.

So widely did this speculative theology spread itself both among the clergy and the lay people, that the University of Paris prohibited the reading of all metaphysical books. Aristotle, and books ascribed to Aristotle, which had hitherto been read in the University were publicly condemned. The body of Amalric was ordered to be dug up and burned, or at least cast out of consecrated ground. The work of David of Dinanto was proscribed, with the commentaries of the Arabian Averroes, and the writings of some other Pantheistic heretic, who is called "the Spanish Maurice;" nor was the opposition of the church confined to proscriptions of books, and anathemas against their authors. The stake was kindled, and all metaphysical priests and laymen who would not recant their faith in the doctrines of

Aristotle and Amalric were consumed. "But you cannot burn me," cried Bernard, a brave priest of the Pantheistic sect; "you cannot burn *me*, for I am God." This, however, did not overawe his enemies. They kindled the faggots which they had gathered round him, and soon the *phenomenal* Bernard disappeared.*

A leaven of the heresy of Erigena and Amalric is supposed to have made considerable progress among the order of S. Francis. Abbot Joachim, of S. Floris, a fervent advocate of the speculative and mystical doctrines condemned by the University of Paris, was in great reverence among the Franciscans. Joachim had written a commentary on the Apocalypse. He was a prophet, and an interpreter of prophecy. Among other predictions, he foretold the great success of the order of S. Francis; and among his interpretations of prophecy, he supposed that he had discovered the law of God's progressive revelation of Himself in the world. There was first the age of the Father. With the incarnation, was that of the Son; and now the age of the Holy Ghost was about to begin. This age was to be marked by such an increase of light and grace, as to supersede the necessity of a church and priesthood such as then existed. All men were to be equal, free from the cares of the

* Pantheism, with all the practical consequences that flow from it, was more boldly and abruptly expressed than perhaps the original founders of this school had intended. That distinction of the three ages which had attached itself to the doctrine of the Trinity, and which we noticed in the doctrines of the Abbot Joachim, was employed by this sect also, after their own peculiar manner. As the predominant revelation of God the Father, in the Old Testament, was followed by the revelation of the Son, by which the forms of worship under the legal dispensation were done away; so now the age of the Holy Ghost was at hand,—the incarnation of the Holy Ghost in entire humanity, the being of God under the form of the Holy Ghost after an equal measure in all the faithful; that is, the dependence of the religious consciousness upon any one individual as a person in whom God is incarnate would cease, and the consciousness of all alike, that God exists in them, has in them assumed human nature, would come in place of it. The sacraments, under which the Son of God had been worshipped, would then be done away; religion would be made wholly independent of ceremonies; of everything positive. The members of this sect are the ones in whom the incarnation of the Holy Ghost has begun, the fore-runners of the above-described period of the Holy Spirit. Several other opinions are charged upon members of this sect, which certainly accord with their general mode of thinking; as, for example, that God had spoken in Ovid as well as in Augustine; that the only heaven and the only hell are in the present life; that those who possess the true knowledge no longer need faith or hope; they have attained already to the true resurrection, the true paradise, the real heaven; that he who lives in mortal sin has hell in himself. These people opposed the worship of saints as a species of idolatry. They called the ruling church Babylon; the pope, antichrist.—*Neander*.

world, and filled with the Spirit of God. This millennium of blessedness was called "the eternal gospel," and the order of S. Francis were to be the chief heralds of its approach.*

Nearly allied to these zealous Franciscans were the Albigenses who, as we have already mentioned, claimed discipleship from Erigena, and appealed to his works in vindication of their doctrines. Of the tenets of the Albigenses we know nothing, except from their enemies. They are represented as Manichæans and Arians. Many wild doctrines are charged upon them, but with what amount of accuracy we cannot determine.

An affinity of doctrine has also been shown between the "Division of Nature," and the book "on the Nine Rocks" which, it is said, was the secret oracle of the "Brothers and Sisters of the Free Spirit." There are, however, extravagances in this book, which are not to be found in the works of Erigena. The existence of the universe is denied because of its identity with God. It is an emanation from Him, and to Him it shall return. The soul of man is declared to be uncreated and a part of the divine Being. To abstract ourselves from the finite, is the way to realize our union with the Infinite—to feel that we are God. What the Scripture says of Christ is true of every godly man—he is the son of God, and God.

* As the strict Franciscans entertained a special reverence for the Abbot Joachim, who had foretold their order and the regeneration of the church, of which they were to be the instrument, and occupied themselves a good deal with the explanation of his writings, the interpretation and application of the current ideas in the same, so a great deal was said among them about a new everlasting gospel. The idea of such a gospel belonged really among the characteristic and peculiar notions of Joachim; and we have seen, how by this expression, borrowed from the 14th chapter of the Apocalypse, he had understood, following the view of Origen, a new spiritual apprehension of Christianity, as opposed to the sensuous Catholic point of view, and answering to the age of the Holy Spirit. A great sensation was now created by a commentary on the eternal gospel, which, after the middle of the thirteenth century, the Franciscan Gerhard, who, by his zeal for Joachim's doctrines, involved himself in many persecutions, and incurred an eighteen years' imprisonment, published under the title of "*Introductorius in Evangelium æternum*." Many vague notions were entertained about the eternal gospel of the Franciscans, arising from superficial views, or a superficial understanding of Joachim's writings, and the offspring of mere rumour or the heresy-hunting spirit. Men spoke of the eternal gospel as of a book composed under this title and circulated among the Franciscans. Occasionally, also, this eternal gospel was confounded perhaps with the above-mentioned *Introductorius*. In reality, there was no book existing under this title of the *Eternal Gospel*; but all that is said about it relates simply to the writings of Joachim. The opponents of the Franciscan order objected to the preachers of the eternal gospel, that, according to their opinion, Christianity was but a transient thing, and a new, more perfect religion, the absolute form, destined to endure for ever, would succeed it.—*Neander*.

Under the shelter of these doctrines, if history speaks what is true, "the Brothers and Sisters" justified practices which are not considered commendable by Catholic Christendom. If, they said, the soul is one with God, then those acts which appear sinful cease to be so, they are essentially acts of God. If God wills that we sin, why should we will not to sin? And if we have sinned a thousand times, why should we repent? The sins we commit are parts of the divine plan, which brings good out of evil and makes use of partial ill for the universal well-being of the world. There is often but a narrow line between truth and error, between a man's own doctrines, and the sense in which others understand them and yet that line is itself a world. S. Jude condemned those who by apparently legitimate reasoning, turned the grace of God into lasciviousness and so doubtless, if these things are true, would John Scotus Erigena have rebuked and condemned the "Brothers and Sisters of the Free Spirit."

* This account of the Gnostics and the Manichees, is chiefly from *Matter's Histoire Critique du Gnosticisme* and *Baur's Die Christliche Gnosis*. The Authorities for the rest of the chapter are *Erigena, de Divisione Naturae*; *Dr. Christlieb's Leben und Lehre des Johannes Scotus Erigena*; and *Hahn's Geschichte der Ketzer im Mittelalter*. *The Gnostics and their Remains*, by C. W. King, is an interesting work on Gnostic Art.

CHAPTER VIII.

SCHOLASTICISM.

THE church doctors of the middle ages were called Scholastics, either because they were the learned men of these ages, or because of their connection with the schools that were established by Charlemagne. Philosophy found a home in Paris after its course was run at Athens and Alexandria. Erigena may be considered either as the forerunner of Scholasticism, or as the first of the Scholastics. M. Rousselot speaks of him as wandering on the mountains of Scotland, or by the banks of the sea which washes the Hebrides, embracing in himself all that the solitary Iona had been able to preserve of philosophical antiquity from the ignorance of barbarians; and, at the same time, concealing in his bosom the fruitful germ of the future.* The discussions of the Scholastics were but a continuation of the discussions of the philosophers. Two centuries had elapsed after the death of Erigena, before the great controversies of the middle ages; but there is evidence that in these two centuries the cultivation of philosophy was not neglected. M. Cousin has shewn by a passage in the glosses of Raban Maur, who wrote in the ninth century, that the difference between Nominalist and Realist had already begun. Idealism, as the doctrine of Plato, had always been more or less the philosophy of the church. The wisest, and as we now reckon the most orthodox of the fathers, S. Augustine was an Idealist, believing that ideas are realities—the original types of things and existing before the things themselves. Realism was but another name for Idealism, and as such had been inherited from Plato. The first intimation of the rise of Nominalism in the church, is found in this passage of Raban Maur. Boethius, in his Introduction to Porphyry's *Isagoge*, had said—"The intention of Porphyry in

* M. Rousselot has no facts to support him in making Scotland the native country of Erigena; but he has many probabilities. It seems natural to believe that so great a metaphysician belonged to the race which is pre-eminently metaphysical.

this work, is to facilitate the understanding of the categories by treating of *five things or names*—genus, species, difference, property, accident." Porphyry was raising no ontological question, nor expressing any doubt about the nature of the categories, whether they were names or things; but his commentators supposed he was raising such a question, and tried to answer it. Raban Maur said they were only names, and that Boethius had shewn this in his first commentary on the categories.

But Nominalism does not appear to have been much in favor till the eleventh century, when Roscellin carried the Nominalist principle so far as to come in collision apparently with the doctrine of the church. Parts, qualities, relations, universals, are they realities or names? Names, said Roscellin. But the Trinity is a universal. It is then merely a name, and the three persons in the Trinity can only be three parts of one, said Roscellin, and as parts, do not exist, such ideas as "a whole," or "a part," not having any real existence. There is only one person or there are three; if one, only one God—if three, three Gods; or if the three be only one reality, then the Father and the Holy Ghost must have become incarnate as well as the Son. Abelard's argument against Roscellin, that when Christ ate "part" of a fish, He could only have eaten a name, must have been meant for a jest. It was just the existence of abstractions that Roscellin denied—not the existence of an individual thing as a whole, or part of anything as a part. The doctrine of Nominalism was but a renewal of the one substance of the Ionics, confining reality to things perceived by the senses. We do not know to what extent it was carried by Roscellin; but we do know that its spirit is alien to Christian theology.

Roscellin was condemned by the council of Soissons, 1093, and was driven from France. He came to England, then under the sway of the Normans. About the time of his arrival, his great opponent, S. Anselm, arrived too—Roscellin comes as a fugitive, quitting his native land to save his life—Anselm to have placed on his head the mitre of the Archbishop of Canterbury. Roscellin is the more complete philosopher. Anselm has the better philosophy. Roscellin teaches Nominalism at Cambridge. * Anselm replies from Canterbury. Anselm had the better philosophy, and he was by nature a better philosopher; but the bent

* This is only a conjecture of M. Rousselot's. There is no clear evidence that Roscellin ever taught at Cambridge.

of his mind was checked by the necessity of his being an orthodox bishop. He was a profound metaphysician, essaying boldly the most exalted questions, but he recoiled before the conclusions to which philosophy led him. He made reason the servant of faith, but when reason asked concerning the ground of faith, Anselm checked the enquiry. Belief should accord with reason, and reason with belief. Only on this assumption is philosophy possible in the church. But Anselm's philosophy was only Erigena's restrained by the dogmas of the church, whenever these dogmas seemed opposed to it. In his "Dialogue on Truth," says M. Rousselot, "he plunges into the metaphysical abyss; into what is true in itself, leading back all to unity. This unity is for him reality. The true is that which is, and all that which is, is good. Then the good and the true are identical, and form only one and the same thing, whence it follows, that in the ontological point of view, evil is not, it is only a negation. It exists only in the acts of men, and in consequence of human liberty. The true, or that which is truth, is being; then beings or individuals are parts of being, as particular truths are parts of truth."

The ontological argument for the being of God, which is ascribed to Anselm, can only be understood by its connection with his philosophy. "It is impossible," he says, "to think that God does not exist, for God is when defined, such a Being that we cannot conceive one superior. Now, I can conceive a Being whose existence it is impossible to disbelieve; and this being is evidently superior to one whose non-existence I am capable of imagining. Therefore, if we admit the possibility of supposing that God does not exist, there must be a being superior to God, that is to say, a being superior to one than whom we cannot conceive a greater, which is absurd." There cannot be a question about the conclusiveness of this argument. It is an absolute demonstration of the being of God. But what God? The God of ontology; the *One* of Parmenides—*infinite Being*. Plato, as we have seen, saved his theology from this purely dialectical God, by adding the "mind" and the "Demiurgus." Anselm, by adhering to the faith of the Catholic church.

Roscellin's disciple, William of Champeaux, united with Anselm in opposing the Nominalism of Roscellin, yet he barely escaped the fate of his master. He was not indeed condemned by the church, but if judged as some judge him, he might have been. Bayle describes the Realism of William of Champeaux as

"a Spinozism not yet developed;" and even the Abbé Maret says, "that from this opinion to Pantheism there is but one step." Nominalism denied the Trinity because it did not admit the reality of the universal. Realism did not admit the reality of the individual, and therefore involved the denial of the distinction of the three persons. The conclusion was the same; unity of substance—with only this difference—the "substance" of the Nominalist was matter; that of the Realist, spirit. The Nominalists were Ionics, the Realists were Eleatics. The Nominalists were natural philosophers; the Realists were metaphysicians.

Peter Abelard appeared as the opponent both of Nominalism and Realism, but in no better harmony with the Church than Roscellin or William of Champeaux. His condemnation at Rome may have been unjust, having been made on the representation of an open adversary, but though his philosophy was different from the two antagonistic schools, his theology is reckoned equally unsound. Abelard saw in Nominalism the negation of philosophy. It limited knowledge to the senses, excluding even the common sense of reason. In Realism he saw the other extreme, the tendency to exclude the senses, and to find reality only in abstractions of the mind. Speaking of his master William of Champeaux, he says, "I then returned to him to study rhetoric and among other matters of dispute, I set myself to change, yea, to destroy by clear arguments his old doctrine concerning universals. He was of this opinion concerning the identity of substance that the same thing, essentially and at the same time, was with the individuals it produces. The difference between the individuals does not then come from their essence, but from variety of phenomena." Abelard took up intermediate ground, allowing reality both to universals, and to individuals. Genus, species, difference, property, accident, what are they? Things, said the Realist. Words, said the Nominalist. Both, said Abelard. Every individual has matter and form, the first from the universal, the latter is its individuality. Humanity, as Anselm said, is a reality apart from the individuality, and yet the individuals partake of it, and are themselves each a particular reality besides. Between this theory and orthodox theology, there was no necessary discord, but Abelard was a philosopher. He did not depart from the principle of Anselm, that faith precedes reason, but unlike Anselm, he forgot the boundaries within which the church wished to confine philosophy. Bishop Hampden, while vindicating the orthodoxy of the Realists, refuses to do

the same for Abelard. "His expressions in his Introduction to theology" says Bishop Hampden, "are decidedly Pantheistic identifying the Holy Spirit with the *Anima Mundi* of the Stoics."

The later Schoolmen were more orthodox. They were not consistent Realists, though they did not entirely forsake Plato. A leaven of the experimental philosophy of Aristotle guarded them from the legitimate results of pure Realism; yet in their reasonings the Platonic element is predominant. By the *a priori* method of tracing up all existences to the Being of God they virtually admitted the material was only the phenomenal. All power, wisdom and goodness in the universe, were emanations of the power, wisdom and goodness of the divine Being. All earthly relations are copies of archetypes in God. Fatherhood and sonship were of heavenly origin. God is the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, and from Him all *fatherhood** in heaven and earth is named. The analogies of the physical universe were positive participations of the divine nature. The purified intellect, that could see God in the manifestation of creation, knows Him not in a figure, but in reality. All that was real in nature, was to them truly God. Albertus Magnus is the first of the five, in whom according to Dean Milman, the age of genuine Scholasticism culminates. He undertook to reply to Amalric de Bena, and yet he differs from him only in degree. He affected to reconcile Plato and Aristotle; Philosophy and Christianity, yet he leans more to Plato than to Aristotle. On most of the peculiar doctrines of Christianity he is silent, some of them such as creation and redemption he expounds after the manner of Erigena. Creation is God's eternal work, and Redemption is the advancement of man to a higher state of being. Time and space have no real existence. The ideas of them eternally in the mind of God are their realities. Albertus was ever repeating the doctrine of the development of the Unity into the manifold, and yet ever struggling to establish a real difference between them, "He accepted," says Dean Milman, "a kind of Platonic emanation theory of all things from the Godhead; yet he repudiated as detestable or blasphemous the absolute unity of the divine Intelligence with the intelligence of man. He recoils from Pantheism with religious horror." And yet as Dean Milman further shows, in crying out against what he conceived to be blasphemy he was but crying out against the doctrine which in substance he was advocating and defending.

Latin, *Paternitas*.

Nor does Thomas Aquinas, "the angelic doctor," the greatest of the Scholastics, the recognised interpreter of Catholic theology entirely escape the danger of this "blasphemy." As if armed against it, he sets forth with all explicitness the absoluteness of God, and His entire separation from all that is created. No Eastern Anti-Materialist ever guarded the primal Godhead more zealously from any intrusive debasement. But this guarding is no sure protection. If, as Aquinas asks, it is the essence of God "to be," what is the essence of things created? He answers that it is not being. His world of angels and demons, which corresponds to that of the Dionysian writings has no being, it is finite. This must be the line which separates it from the Godhead, and yet he admits it has being, and is on one side infinite. The visible world was created according to the ideas existing eternally in the Divine mind. These ideas, as Plato and all his true disciples had taught, were the types of the world that appears to our senses. They are parts of God's infinite knowledge; they are the essence of God—they are God. Aquinas' theology was a compromise—an eclectic gathering. His design was to separate God from His creation; but the interests of theology demanded that the separation be in some way abandoned—the chasm bridged over; and this Aquinas did, though contrary to his own design. "There have been," he says, "some, as the Manichees, who said that spiritual and incorporeal things are subject to divine power, but visible and corporeal things are subject to the power of a contrary principle. Against these we must say that God is in all things by His power. There have been others again who, though they believed all things subject to divine power, still did not extend divine Providence down to the lower parts, concerning which it is said in Job, 'He walketh upon the hinges of heaven, and considereth not our concerns.' And against them it is necessary to say, that God is in all things by His presence. There have been again others, who, though they said all things belonged to the Providence of God, still laid it down that all things are not immediately created by God, but that He immediately created the first, and these created others. And against them it is necessary to say that He is in all things by His essence." On the existence of evil, Aquinas made some refined distinctions, the simple meaning of which is, that evil has only a negative and not a positive existence. He did not affirm the eternity of creation; but he said it was impossible to refute it, for a beginning of creation was so opposed to reason that it could only be an object of faith.

Bonaventura, "the seraphic doctor," was the farthest removed from philosophy of all the Schoolmen. For Plato and Aristotle; he substituted the life of S. Francis and apocryphal legends of the history of Christ. He exchanged dialectics for contemplation and meditation on the way of man's return to God. Yet that thought of Plato's, that the being of God is the essence of all created beings, lay at the basis of his aspirations after the Divine. "His raptures," says Dean Milman, "tremble on the borders of Pantheism,"

Nor can Duns Scotus, "the subtle doctor," the great antagonist of Aquinas, be excluded from the category that contains the seraphic and the angelic doctors. The direction, says Ritter, which he gave to philosophy was throughout ecclesiastical. "He is," says Dean Milman, "the most sternly orthodox of theologians." And yet Duns Scotus is so much a Rationalist as to have denied the necessity of revelation, because of the abundance of knowledge attainable by natural reason. And when he comes to discourse of the relation of God to creation, he falls back on the ultra-Platonic argument of Plotinus, that matter is in its essence but another form of spirit. To call matter immaterial may seem a paradox; but with this definition, how easily does the orthodox Duns Scotus shake hands with the heretical David of Dinanto, and agree to call God the "material" principle of all things. God is indeed the single Monad above all creation both in earth and heaven. To this dogma of the church, as a churchman Duns Scotus was pledged, but his philosophy cannot rest here. The primary matter, which is God, must in some way, be throughout all things. This is accomplished by its being divided into three kinds. The universal, which is in all things, the secondary which partakes both of the corruptible and the incorruptible; and the tertiary which is distributed among things subject to change. The schoolmen repudiated the consequences which we draw from their theology. They were the men pre-eminently orthodox—the true sons of the church—the genuine defenders of the faith; but their history only adds a few more names to the large list of theologians who destroyed what they sought to establish; and established what they sought to destroy. It is satisfying to find the view of Scholastic Theology here advanced, sanctioned by the great names of Dean Milman, and Bishop Hampden. "In this system," says Bishop Hampden, "neither was the Deity identified with the individual acted upon, nor was the individual annihilated in the Deity. The distinctness of the

divine Agent, and the human recipient, was maintained in accordance with the Scripture revelation of God, as a sole Being; separate in His nature from the works of Providence and grace. Still, the notions of Him as an energy—as a moving power—entered into all the explanations of the divine influence on the soul. So far they were strictly Aristotelic; but with this exception, the Platonic notion of a *real participation* of Deity in the soul of man pervaded their speculations. Aristotle's idea of human improvement and happiness, was rather that of a mechanical or material approach to the divine Principle—an attainment of the Deity as our being's end and aim. We see a great deal of this in the Scholastic designation of the progress of man in virtue and happiness. Plato's view on the other hand, was that of assimilation or association with the Divinity. This notion more easily fell into the expressions of Scripture, which speak of man as created in the image of God, and which holds out to us an example of Divine holiness for our imitation. The Pantheistic notion then, of a participation of Deity, or the actual deification of our nature is the fundamental idea of the co-operation of grace according to the Schoolmen. The Aristotelic idea of motion, of continual progress, of gradual attainment of the complete form of perfection, is the law by which this operation of grace is attempted to be explained. This system, made up of Platonic and Aristotelic views, was regarded as sanctioned by the Apostle, in his application of that text of philosophy, 'In Him we live, and move, and have our being.' "

The works referred to in this chapter are *M. Rousselot's Etudes sur la Philosophie dans le Moyen Âge*. *Bayle's Dictionary*. *Mare's Essai sur le Pantheisme*. *Dean Milman's History of Latin Christianity*, and *Bishop Hampden's Bampton Lectures*.

CHAPTER IX.

THE ITALIAN REVIVAL.

WE have already seen how Aristotle agreed with Plato in the transcendentalism of his theology, though he reached that transcendentalism by an entirely different method. There were in fact, as M. Rousselot says, two Aristotles in the middle ages, Aristotle the logician, who narrowly escaped being canonized, and without whom as an Italian Cardinal said "the church would have wanted some of the articles of faith." The other was Aristotle the metaphysician, proscribed and persecuted, the author of all heresy.

The knowledge of Aristotle came to the schoolmen through a Latin translation, * and the commentaries of the Arabian Averroes. That these commentaries did not agree with the text is now generally admitted, but what Averroism is, is a question as wide as what Aristotelianism is. † At one time it is the bulwark of heresy, at another time the refuge of the defenders of the faith. The later schoolmen, particularly Albertus Magnus and Thomas Aquinas, know no greater enemy of the church than Averroes. The Mediæval painters gave him a place in *Inferno* with Mahomet and Antichrist. Dante is more tolerant, having placed the philosopher among great men, in a region of peace and melancholy repose. His works had been translated into Latin about the end of the twelfth or the beginning of the thirteenth Century, and had found so many advocates in the University of Paris as to provoke a host of opponents, and to bring down the censure of the church. In a former chapter we classed such heretics as Amalric de Bena, with the Brothers and Sisters

* D'Herbelot says, that the Latin version used by the Scholastics was translated from the Arabian version of Averroes. This error is repeated by all writers since.—RENAN.

† The printed editions of his works offer only a Latin translation of a Hebrew translation of a Commentary made upon an Arabian translation of a Syrian translation of a Greek text.—RENAN.

of the Free Spirit, as disciples of John Scotus Erigena. Three centuries had intervened, all traces of genealogy were lost, yet the similarity both of words and sentiments made the classification reasonable. There was however at work a powerful and living element, and it would be no idle enquiry to examine how far they might be considered children of Averroes. It is certain that most of the heretics of the middle ages sprang from the Franciscans, almost every great movement for reform, for freedom of speech or thought, had its origin in the bosom of this order. They were the preachers of the "Eternal Gospel," the bold spirits that most rebelled against the Court of Rome, the prophets who, not without a mingling of enthusiasm, proclaimed the approach of a spiritual reign. Now the leaders of the Franciscan school favored the philosophy of Averroes. "Alexander of Hales" says M. Renan, "the founder of the Franciscan school, is the first of the Scholastics who had accepted and propagated the influence of the Arabian philosophy. John of Rochelle his successor, follows the same tradition and adopts for his own almost all the psychology of Avicenna. M. Haureau has justly observed that most of the propositions condemned at Paris by Stephen Templier in 1277, belonged to the Franciscan school, and that they had been borrowed by the boldest of Alexander de Hales' disciples, from the long ill-famed glosses of Avicenna and Averroes. The same year the Dominican, Robert of Kilwardby, Archbishop of Canterbury, in the council held at Oxford, the centre of the Franciscan school, condemned propositions almost identical, and in which the influence of Averroes could not be ignored. We may then believe that some of the philosophers against whom William of Auvergne, Albert and S. Thomas express themselves with so much severity, belonged to the order of S. Francis."

But the history of Averroism culminates at the University of Padua. It appears there first as a kind of free belief, embraced chiefly by physicians and men devoted to natural studies. From being in disgrace with the church, it comes into favor. It then provokes opposition both from the side of philosophy and orthodox theology. It mingles its influence with the revival of letters, and then disappears as the morning star before the sun. Plato comes back and Scholasticism vanishes. Aristotle is read in Greek and his Arabian commentator seeks the shade. Cardinal Bembo celebrates in verse the great event. The morning dawns and the shadows flee away.

Nearly all the great men of the Universities both of Padua

and Florence in the time of the Revival are called Averroists ; but this only in a very wide sense. They all exhibit in some way the influence of philosophy in its contact with the new direction which had been given to the physical sciences. They are all either metaphysicians or naturalists, or both combined. Of those who are known as Pantheists, the most celebrated is Giordano Bruno, whom we may take as the representative of the Italian school proceeding from Averroes. It has been said above that most of the heretics and Averroists belonged to the Franciscans, but Bruno was a monk of the order of S. Dominic. His history is well known, having been frequently recorded as that of one of the martyrs of philosophy and freedom of belief. With the zeal of a propagandist he travelled through Europe to disseminate his doctrines. Rome and Geneva expelled him as a dangerous teacher, but England and Protestant Germany permitted him to dispute in their Universities. He was favored by Queen Elizabeth and her court, but as the extravagances of his doctrine became better known he was compelled to leave our hospitable shores. At Florence he fell a victim to the Inquisition. After an imprisonment of six years, he expiated his heresies at the stake in presence of the Cardinals and the most illustrious Theologians of Rome. Bruno was wholly occupied with what Erigena called the higher speculation. At Oxford he declared himself the teacher of a more perfect theology and a purer wisdom than was then taught there. Like Erigena he essayed to harmonize this "more perfect theology," with the popular theological teaching. "I define" he says "the idea of God, otherwise than the vulgar, but it is not for that reason opposed to that of the vulgar. It is only more clear, more developed." Judged merely by his theology Bruno's title to be called a Christian is not less than Erigena's, but he is not so reverent. The great *Erin*-born never forgets that he is a Christian as well as a philosopher, but the Neopolitan is simply a speculator, aiming apparently at little more than the reputation of ingenuity and making a parade of his learning.

The starting point of his philosophy is the infinitude of the universe. A disciple of Copernicus, he denied the immobility of the earth, and with that perished every thought of the universe, having either a centre or a circumference. The saying of Hermes Trismegistus sometimes applied to God and sometimes to the world, is continually on his lips. "The centre is here the circumference nowhere." Bruno applies it to God, just because it is applicable to the universe. The Infinite is

realized in this visible creation in the immensity of celestial spaces. Wherever we are, wherever we go we are surrounded with the infinite, a boundless material is forced upon us. There is a unity, but it cannot be the primitive Infinite. He cannot be an effect, He must be mind and a cause, yea, the Cause of causes. Nature is but a shadow, a phantom, the mirror in which the Infinite images Himself. The basis of all things is mind, not matter. It is mind that pervades all. We ourselves are mind, and what we meet in creation is a corresponding mind. Creation does not present mere traces, or foot prints of the Deity, but the Deity Himself in His omnipresence.

We are compelled to believe that God is. This is a primal truth so obvious to reason, and so overwhelming in its evidence, that we cannot escape receiving it. The visible universe is an effect, it must have a cause. These worlds are all composed, and they can be dissolved. As they could not give themselves existence there must be a first principle from whence they come. This principle must be infinite, and yet one. Reason is impelled to the conclusion that there is a God, but it cannot stop there. It must ask what God is? how He is? and how He is related to the visible infinite? There are here two terms logically different, the primitive Unity, and manifested nature, or the visible creation. In popular speech these are pure spirit, and matter, but these in their essence, so far as matter has an essence, are only one. The interval between them is filled up by an intermediary. This is the world-soul, which is God, and which yet mingles with matter. As a voice that fills the sphere where it resounds without being lost, so this world-soul becomes the essence of matter without ceasing to be God. It is the source of the general life of the world manifested in different degrees according to the rank of the creatures, the highest form being that of mind or soul. God transcends the world. To behold Him in His transcendental character is the object of religion, but to find Him in the forms and existences of the universe is the vocation of philosophy. There He is reflected in all His perfection, so that the contemplation of the infinite universe is of necessity the contemplation of God.

To understand this fully we must enquire into the nature of a principle and a cause. A principle is the intrinsical foundation; the eternal reason of a thing—the only source of its potential existence. Cause is the exterior basis the source of the actual and present existence of an object. The principle remains bound and inherent to the effect, and preserves the

essence of the object. For example, matter and form are united together in the way of mutually sustaining each other. Cause on the contrary is, exterior to the effect and determines the external reality of the object. What an instrument is for a work, or means for an end, that is a cause for its effect. Causes are of three kinds, the efficient, the formal and the final. The efficient cause of the universe is the Being which acts ever and everywhere, the universal intelligence, or chief faculty of the soul of the world. It is this inconceivable power which fills and enlightens all, which guides nature in the productions of all her works. What the faculty of thinking is in man to the generation of ideas, that is the world-soul to works of nature. It is what Pythagoras called the Mover of the world; Plato the Architect of the universe; the Magi the seed of seeds, that which by its forms impregnates and fructifies matter. Orpheus called it the Eye of the world because it penetrates all things, and because its harmonies and skilful proportions are found on all sides. Empedocles called it the Discerner because it develops what is confused and enveloped in the bosom of matter and death. For Plotinus it was a Father, a Generator, since it distributes germs and dispenses the forms of which the field of nature is full and by which it is animated. "We," says Bruno, "call it the interior Artist. It is He who from within gives form to the matter, He sends out from the root and grain, the trunks and shoots; from the shoots, the branches; from the branches, the twigs. He disposes and finishes within, the tender tissue of the leaves, the flowers and the fruit. Again from within He calls back the juices from the fruits, the flowers, and the leaves to the branches, from the branches to the trunks and from the trunks to the roots. That which the interior Worker performs in the plants, He does also in animals. The works of nature more manifestly than ours are the works of intelligence. We practise upon the surface of nature. We can produce any work or invention just so far as there is a mind working within us. Now if for our works we need intelligence, how much more is an intelligence needed, for the living works of nature?"

Intelligence is of three kinds. That of God which is everything. That of the world-soul which does everything and that of the particular intelligences which constitute everything. Here are two extremes and a middle. The world-soul is the truly effective cause of things purely natural at once external and internal. It is the external cause since it must be considered as external to these objects. It cannot see itself as a part or as

an element of anything that is composed, and yet it is the internal cause since it neither acts upon matter nor outside of matter, but from within, from the centre and the bosom of the material. We have next, the formal cause. This is united directly to the efficient, and cannot be separated from the final or ideal. Every reasonable act supposes a design; now design is nothing more than the form of accomplishing the act. We conclude then, that the Intelligence which is capable of producing all things, causes them in itself in virtue of the final reason and its power of realizing the potentiality of matter. We have thus a double form; cause which is not effective and that which really gives birth to material objects, which are the end of the efficient cause. The end of the efficient cause is the final, the perfection of the universe which consists in this, that all forms in different regions of matter come to a real existence. The efficient cause is universally present in each particular being, and in each of its parts, every being too has a formal and a final cause, and since intelligence is the peculiar faculty of the world-soul, that which creates all things, it is impossible that the formal be absolutely distinct from the efficient. In the interior principle they are one. The world-soul is then at once interior and exterior, reason, principle, and cause at the same time. A pilot in a ship follows the movements of the ship. He is part of the mass which is in motion; and yet as he is able to change the movement he appears an agent who acts by himself. So it is with the world-soul. It penetrates and vivifies the universe. It constitutes the universal life. It appears but a part; the interior and formal part of the universe. But as it determines all forms and organisations with their changing relations, it assumes the rank of a cause. Every form is the effect of soul. It is the soul's living expression. We cannot conceive anything which has no form. Mind alone is in the state of forming. There is nothing so sensual, nor so vile, that it does not contain mind. The spiritual substance in order to become a plant or an animal needs only a proper relation. It does not however follow though soul is the essence of all things, and though life permeates all, that everything is therefore a living creature. The product of our arts for instance are not living forms. A table so far as it is a table is inanimate, but since it derives its matter from nature, it is in consequence composed of living parts. All material things have form in them, which is the abiding essence, though they themselves are subject to continual change.

“Democritus and the Epicureans,” says Bruno, “pretend that form does not exist. They regard matter as the only reason or principle of creation. They even call it the Divine nature. The Cyrenaic school, the Cynics and the Stoics also take forms as accidental dispositions of matter, but Aristotle more correct than they, believed in two kinds of substances, form and matter. We must acknowledge sovereign power, the source of all energy. We must also believe in the corresponding object, a something which may be acted upon. The one determines, the other suffers itself to be determined.”

The relation between matter and form may be understood by works of art—the joiner operates on the wood—the smith on the iron—the tailor on the cloth, and from these materials by means of intellect they produce a variety of objects. The form, species, character, and use of these objects, derive their nature, and property from a given matter; and do not exist by themselves nor merely by the intellect of the artist. So it is with nature, making only this difference that art receives its matter already formed; the substance of this matter it has only to modify. But nature acts from the centre of its object, which is unformed matter. To this simple and unique matter, nature gives forms and diversities. It may be objected that this matter being invisible, we have no right to assume its existence; to which the answer is that though it transcends the senses it is within the cognisance of the eye of reason.

The relation which exists between the form of art and its matter resembles the relation which unites the form of nature, to its matter. Art accomplishes a multitude of transformations upon the same material. From the trunk of a tree it produces valuable furniture—the ornament of a magnificent palace. Nature shows metamorphoses analagous to those of art. That which at first is a seed, becomes an herb, then an ear, then bread, chyle, blood, seed, embryo, man, corpse, then earth, stone or some other body; and thus the same round is repeated. Now we have here in these objects something which changes and something which yet remains unchanged—natural forms and a substratum. How then are these related? Many philosophers have held that the substratum was matter, and that it alone deserved the title of the first Principle; the form being but its accidents and fortuitous arrangements. If this be so, it is reasonable to deify matter, and there is no escape but in admitting form to be necessary and eternal. The source of the form is the world-soul, the all life of the universe.

The first and absolute principle comprehends in itself all existence. It can be all, and it is all, active force, possibility, reality; everything in it is one and indivisible. There is then doubtless no other substance which can be, and cannot be; which can be determined in such a way or such another way. Every man is in each moment that which he can be in that moment but he is not all that which he can be in general, and according to his substance. The Being who is all that which He can be, constitutes only a single whole, embracing the all of His existence in the actual and present existence. Other beings are only that which they are and can be at each moment individually, separately, and in a given order of succession.

Universal nature is equally all that which it can be in reality and at the same time, because it embraces all matter at once as the eternal and invariable form of all the changing forms. But in its successive developments, in its different parts, in its accidents, circumstances, particular substance and diverse movements, in a word—in its exteriority, nature is no longer that which it is or can be. It is then only a shadow, an image of the first principle in which form potentiality and reality are one.

This matter—the common source of all things that are material is a being both multiple and uniform. In itself it is absolutely simple and indivisible; but it embraces a multitude of forms. It is all that which can be, and because it is all, it is not any one particular being. Doubtless it is difficult for us to conceive how anything can possess all properties, and yet have no property—the formal reality of all and yet not any one form. But we see continually that matter is all, and becomes all, and yet we cannot give it the name of any particular composition. We cannot say of it, that it is such a form. If we descend to the last orders of the individual, and the simple forms of art, it is air, fire, water; but taken in the largest conception matter affects all forms while it is represented by none. *It has no dimensions just that it may have all.* It does not affect this infinity of forms by a foreign impulse from without, but it produces them from its own depth. It is not the *prope-nihil* of certain philosophers who so contradict themselves. It is not a pure void, naked power, without effect and without perfection. It may have no form by itself and yet it is not destitute of form, for from itself it sends forth all forms.

We cannot indeed by this idea of matter rise to that of the Supreme Being, for the latter idea is formed outside the reach of our intelligence; but we can arrive at comprehending in what

way the world can be all and can produce all, and how the infinity of particular things constitutes, in itself and by itself, only one and the same being.

To know this unity is the end of all philosophy. Nature produces, not only by retrenchment, by addition, by combination, but in a way peculiar to itself, by distinction and separation, by analysis and development; such is the opinion of the sages of Greece and of the East. Moses himself in relating the origin of creation, introduces it by the words "Let the earth bring forth," "Let the seas bring forth." Matter according to Moses was a creative, producing power. The material principle of all things for him was water, and the active intelligence, spirit. This is that Spirit which brooded over the waters from whose bosom all things insensibly came forth by means of separation.

This unity of all things is the result of the proof of the identity of matter and form, cause and principle. The universe is one, infinite and immovable. There is but one absolute potentiality; one reality; one activity. Form and soul are one; matter and body are one. There is but one being; one unity, one perfection. Its character we cannot comprehend. It has no limit, no bound, no definite determination. Being is one. It is infinite, and without measure; and therefore it is immovable. It cannot change its position, for outside of it is no place. It is not begotten, for all existence is its existence. It cannot perish, because it cannot suffer, nor can it be transformed into anything. It cannot increase nor diminish, because the infinite is not susceptible of increase or of diminution. It is subject to no alteration from without, for there is nothing outside of it; nor from within, for it is at once all that which it can be. Its harmony is eternal, for it is unity itself. It is not matter, for it has neither figure nor limit. It is not form, for it is all isolated existences, as well as the whole of existence. It cannot be measured, nor can it make use of measure. It does not comprehend itself. It cannot grasp itself, for it is not greater than itself, nor can it be grasped or understood, for it is not less than itself. It neither compares itself, nor can it be compared, not being such and such a thing—neither a *this* nor a *that*—but a being, one, unique and ever the same.

It is easy to see that Bruno only repeats Aristotle as he had been interpreted by the Averroists.* He opposed himself

* Bruno is generally represented as the forerunner of Spinoza; but there is

to the professed disciples of Aristotle in his time; but these were the disciples of Aristotle "the logician," not of Aristotle "the metaphysician."

OTHER ITALIAN PHILOSOPHERS.—Bruno's doctrines were received with more or less addition or modification by many eminent Italians of the sixteenth century, especially in Padua and Florence.† It is impossible to classify them as Averroists, or as opposed to Averroism; for some taught the Arabian philosophy while they declared themselves opposed to it; and others avowed themselves Averroists, meaning only that they were students of the commentaries on Aristotle. M. Renan enumerates among those who were Averroists in the wide sense of sceptics or enemies of Christianity; Cisalpini, Cardan, Bengard and Vanini. Of the first, he says, "that his mind was too original to be confounded with a school that wanted originality." In some points of his doctrine he is related to Averroes; but in his spirit and manner he in no way belongs to Paduan Averroism. Nicholas Taurel, his adversary, finds his doctrine "more absurd and more impious than that of Averroes." Cisalpini says, "there is but one life, which is the life of God, or the universal soul. God is not the efficient, but the constituent cause of the universe. Divine intelligence is unique, but human intelligence is multiplied according to the number of the individuals, for human intelligence is not actual, but potential." Cisalpini was physician to the Pope, and was present at the burning of Bruno. He escaped the Inquisition, not because his doctrines were approved, but by the convenient method of professing to renounce philosophy as dangerous. "I well know," he said, "that all these doctrines are full of errors

nothing in his works to entitle him to this distinction. A more just view is to look upon him as a reviver of old doctrines, which he reproduces with vivacity—and sometimes with eccentricity—but with little originality.

* Any classification of the eminent Italians of this period must be arbitrary. They mostly wished to adhere to the Catholic church, yet many of them had embraced opinions in entire opposition to Christianity. When Sabinus, a friend of Melancthon's, was at Rome, he visited Cardinal Bembo, who asked him what Melancthon thought of the resurrection of the body and the life-everlasting? Sabinus answered, that it was evident from the Reformer's writings, that he held these doctrines. "Ah," said the cardinal, "I should have thought Philip a wise man if he had not believed these things." When Vanini was in England, his zeal against the Reformation earned him a year's imprisonment. The famous Campanella too, amid all his troubles, still tried to cling to the church. But the church condemned most of them as Atheists, and Protestantism approved the condemnation. "Modern Atheists," says Archbishop Tillotson, "came first from Italy. They crossed the Alps into France, and from thence they came into England."

against the faith, and these errors I regret ; but to refute them is not my business. I leave that task to theologians more profound than myself."

The doctrine of Cardan is not without analogy to that of Cisalpini. All particular souls are virtually included in a universal Soul, as the worm in the plant by which it is nourished. In one of the first treatises which he composed, Cardan admits, without restriction, the Averroëist hypothesis of the unity of intellect. In a later book he retracted his first sentiment, and acknowledged expressly that there could not exist a single intelligence for all animated beings, or for all men. He maintains there that this intelligence is to us as personal as sensibility; and that souls are distinct here below, and will be in another life. In a third writing, Cardan undertook to reconcile these two antagonistic opinions. Intelligence, he said, is single, but can be regarded from two points of view—either in its relation to eternal and absolute existence, or in relation to its manifestation in time. Single in its source, it is multiple in its manifestation.

On the individuality of the human soul, Bengard is more orthodox than either Cisalpini or Cardan. His claim to be considered an Averroëist is limited to his being in some measure an unbeliever in Christianity.*

To fix Vanini's place is not easy. Like Bruno, he was eccentric, and not over-reverent in his discourse ; with a love of paradox, and a talent for disputation, he had enemies everywhere, and was never anxious to make friends. In one of his *Dialogues* he records an example of his preaching, which shows at once his character and the theology in which he delighted. Preaching on the subject—Why did God create man?—he resolved the question by *that famous scale of Averroës*, according to which it is necessary that there be a kind of gradation from the lowest of all beings to the most exalted, which is God, or the *first matter*. At Genoa, Vanini wished to teach according to this doctrine ; but, says his biographer, "the people there were not prepossessed in favor of Averroës, and he was obliged to depart." These intimations would justify us in classing Vanini with Bruno. But his published works present some

* The want of the spirit of Christianity among the learned Italians of the time of the Revival, was that which prevented them being among the great Reformers of the church. It was seriously proposed to the Pope that the best way of putting down the Reformation in Germany was to circulate the writings of the Neo-Platonists.

difficulties. He professed to refute the doctrines which it is believed he adopted as his own creed. His *Amphitheatrum* was a defence of Christianity and the Catholic church against ancient philosophers, Atheists, Epicureans, Peripatetics and Stoics. As such it was published with the approbation of the divines of the Sorbonne.* He expressly refutes the Averroecist theories of the eternity of the world, of intelligence, providence, and the unity of souls; but the Inquisition thought they discovered that he had not used the best arguments in defence of the Christian doctrines; and they suspected too, perhaps not without cause,

* Vanini was surely the most unfortunate of men. No author seems to have a word of sympathy for him; and yet science has rarely had a more ardent votary, or theology a more zealous student. When a young man at the University of Florence, though struggling with the hardships of poverty, he was not content with what learning was simply necessary to obtain Orders, but devoted himself to physic and the natural sciences. Before he was of age to be admitted to the priesthood, he rejoiced in being "Doctor of both Laws." He travelled through Europe, defending the Catholic faith against all "Atheists, Infidels, Protestants, and other Heretics." But Vanini himself was at length suspected of something worse than heresy. Though the Doctors of the Sorbonne had pronounced his great work "skilful in argument, and well worthy of type," the inquisition condemned it. When the inquisitors examined his property, they found among his possessions a crystal glass containing a *live toad*. This was proof to demonstration, not only that he denied the existence of God, but that he was in league with some other existence. No protestations of orthodoxy; no confessions of his faith could convince his enemies. They loaded him with insult calling his confessions, hypocrisy. The judge asking what he thought concerning the existence of God, Vanini answered—"I believe with the church, one God in three persons and that nature evidently demonstrates the existence of the Deity." Seeing a straw on the ground, he took it up, and continuing to address the judge, he said—"This straw obliges me to confess that there is a God;" and, after a long and beautiful discourse on Providence, he added—"The grain being cast into the earth, appears at first to be destroyed; but it quickens, then it becomes green and shoots forth, insensibly growing out of the earth. The dew assists it springing up, and the rain gives it yet a greater strength. It is furnished with ears, the points of which keep off the birds. The stalk rises and is covered with leaves. It becomes yellow, and rises higher. Soon after it withers and dies. It is threshed, and the straw being separated from the corn, the latter serves for the nourishment of man, and the former is given to animals created for man's use." It seems as if those who write about Vanini, and profess to have read his books, are not yet agreed as to their meaning. The following judgment, in an article on Vanini, in the *Imperial Dictionary of Universal Biography*, is in curious contrast with M. Renan's judgment. "He published at Lyons, in 1615, a work entitled—*Amphitheatrum aeternae providentiae adversus veteres Philosophos, Atheos*," &c.; and in the following year he published at Paris four *Dialogues, De admirandis Naturae, Reginae Deaeque Mortalium Arcanis*. The first of these works is quite unexceptionable in point of orthodoxy; but the latter is decidedly materialistic in its philosophy, and Pantheistic in its theology." This article was written by the late Professor Ferrier, a man who generally read the books he spoke about. The present writer found the *Dialogues* quite as harmless as the *Amphitheatrum*.

that what he professed to refute was always the doctrine he wished to inculcate. M. Renan, who is severe on Vanini, thinks that in this interpretation of the *Amphitheatrum*, the Inquisition were not wanting in discernment. They found him guilty of the charge of Atheism, for which, like his brother priest and philosopher, he was burnt at the stake.

The authorities are M. Renan's *Averroes et l'Averroïsme*; M. Bartholmess' *Giordano Bruno*; Bruno's works, especially *De la Causa, Principio ed Uno*, and *De l'Infinito, Universe e Mondi*; Vanini's chief work is the *Amphitheatrum*: it is very scarce; the writer found a copy of it in the King's Library, in the British Museum.

CHAPTER X.

MYSTICAL DIVINITY AND PHILOSOPHY.

UNDER the head of Mystics, we might class many names that have been already disposed of. All religion is more or less mystical, that is to say, it is an inward intuition; a divine sentiment in the soul. The Brahmans; the Budhists; the Alexandrians, Jewish, Heathen, and Christian, were all Mystics. In some, this spirit has been so largely developed that they have been called pre-eminently Mystics. Such were Plotinus and S. Dionysius; his successor, Maximus, and his mediæval disciples. Every great religious movement has been connected directly or indirectly with some Mystic or some unusual manifestation of the mystical spirit.

GERMAN MYSTICS.—The most important of modern Mystics who have been called Pantheists, are those of Germany. Dr. Ullmann traces their origin to the societies of the Beghards, Beguines, and the Brethren of the Free Spirit. If this be correct, and there seems no reason for doubting it, we have all the links of the succession established from Dionysius and the early Mystics, through John Scotus Erigena down to the Reformation. "The basis of their doctrines (the Beghards)," says Dr. Ullmann, "was *Mystical Pantheism*, as that is to be found principally among the Brethren of the Free Spirit."

"Inasmuch however, as during the whole of the middle ages, the chief object of interest was not nature, but more predominantly man, contemplation was then directed less to the Divine Being in the general universe, and almost exclusively to God in mankind; the former being adduced merely as a consequence or supplement of the latter. The great thing was God in the mind, or the consciousness of man. Hence, the Pantheism of these parties was not materialistic but idealistic. The creatures, so they supposed, are in and of themselves a pure nullity. God alone is the true Being; the real substance of all things. God, however, is chiefly present where there is mind, and consequently in man. In the human soul there is an uncreated

and eternal thing, namely, the *intellect* ; that is, the divine principle in man, in virtue of which he resembles, and is one with God. Indeed, in so far as he purely exists, he is God Himself ; and it may be said, that whatever belongs to the divine nature belongs likewise, and in a perfect way, to a good and righteous man. Such a man works the same works as God. With God he created the heavens and the earth, and with God he begat the Eternal Word ; and God without him can do nothing. Such a man was Christ. In Christ, as a being both of divine and human nature, there was nothing peculiar or singular. On the contrary, what Scripture affirms of Him is likewise perfectly true of every righteous and good man. The same divine things which the Father gave to the Son, He has also given to us ; for the good man is the only begotten Son of God, whom the Father has begotten from all eternity. Man becomes like Christ when he makes his will conformable in all respects to the will of God, when forsaking all things and renouncing all human wishes, desires, and endeavours, he so completely merges himself in, and gives himself up to the Divine Being, as to be wholly changed, and transubstantiated into God, as the bread in the sacrament is into the body of Christ. To the man who is thus united with God, or to speak more properly, who recollects his primeval unity, all the differences and contrarieties of life are done away. In whatever he is or does, though to others it may seem sin and evil, he is good and happy. For the essential property of the divine nature is, that it excludes all differences. God is neither good nor bad. To call Him good, would just be like calling white black. His glory is equally revealed in all things ; yea, even in all evil, whether of guilt or penalty. Hence, if it be His will that we should sin, whatever the sin may be, we ought not to wish not to have committed it, and to be sensible of this is the only true repentance. But the will of God is manifested by the disposition which a man feels towards a particular action. Hence, though he may have committed a thousand mortal sins, still supposing him to have been disposed for them, he ought not to wish not to have committed them. Neither, to speak strictly, has God enjoined external acts. No external act is good or godly ; and on such an act no influence is exerted by God ; but all depends upon the union of the mind with Him. That being the case, man ought not to desire or pray for anything, save what God ordains. Whoever prays to God for a particular blessing, prays for a wrong thing, and in a wrong way ; for he prays for a thing contrary to God's nature.

For this reason a man ought well to consider, whether he should wish to receive any boon from God, because in that case he would be His *inferior*, like a servant or slave; and God, in giving it, would be *something apart* from him. But this should not take place in the life eternal; there we should rather reign with Him. God is truly glorified, only in those who do not strive after property; honor or profit; piety or holiness; recompensa, or the kingdom of Heaven; but who have wholly renounced all such things."

This account of the doctrine of the Beghards, has the disadvantage of coming from enemies; by whom it may have been exaggerated, and perhaps the meaning perverted. The source of it is the Bull of Pope John XXII., by whom the Beghards were condemned. Dr. Ullmann has used the terms in which the propositions ascribed to them were set forth, admitting their general accuracy, yet willing to make allowance for the difference between a doctrine in itself and the representation of it by an enemy. But whether the extravagances were in the Beghards' teaching, or only in the Papal representations need not concern us much; for we can see in the general features the re-appearance of doctrines which we have already met, clothed in more moderate language, and in a more interesting form. Ruysbroek, who was himself a Mystic, gives a description of the Beghards, which corresponds generally with that of the Papal Bull. He divides them into four classes, ascribing a peculiar form of heresy to each, while he accuses them all of the fundamental error of making man's unity with God to be a unity of nature and not of grace. The godly man, he admitted, is united to God, not however in virtue of his essence, but by a process of re-creation and regeneration. The first class he calls heretics against the Holy Ghost, because they claimed a perfect identity with the Absolute, which reposes in itself and is without act or operation. They said that they themselves were the Divine Essence, above the persons of the Godhead, and in as absolute a state of repose as if they did not at all exist; inasmuch as the Godhead itself does not act, the Holy Ghost being the sole operative power in it. The second class were heretics against the Father, because they placed themselves simply and directly on an equality with God; contemplated the *I* as entirely one with the Divinity so that from them all things proceeded, and being themselves by nature God, they had come into existence of their own free will. "If I had not so willed," one of them said, "neither I nor any other creature would ever

have existed at all. God knows, wills, and can do nothing without me; heaven and earth hang upon my head. The glory given to God is also paid to me, for I am by nature essentially God. There are no persons in God. But only one God exists, and with Him I am the self-same one which He is." The third class were heretics against Christ, because they said, that in respect of their divinity they were begotten of the Father, and in respect of their humanity begotten in time. What Christ was they were; and when He was elevated in the host, they too were elevated with Him. The fourth class were heretics against the church, for they despised not only all its ordinances, but set themselves above knowledge, contemplation, and love. They despised both the finite and the infinite; the present life and the eternal. They soared above themselves, and all created things; above God and the Godhead, maintaining that neither God nor themselves, neither action nor rest, neither good nor evil, blessedness nor perdition has any existence. They considered themselves so lost as to have become the *Absolute Nothing* which they believed God to be. Dr. Ullmann, though far from sympathising with the Beghards, considers even Ruysbroek's delineation as half apochryphal. Eckart,* the leader of the German Mystics, is supposed to have been a Beghard; but there is no evidence beyond the likeness of his doctrines to the propositions condemned by the Bull of John XXII., and the fact that the Beghards, who were numerous in Germany in his time, appealed to his writings as confirming their doctrines. Eckart had been a professor in Paris, where the influence of Abelard, William of Champeaux, and Amalric de Beaumont could scarcely have been ended. He was familiar with the works of the Areopagite and Scotus Erigena; the Neo-Platonist philo-

* John Eckart, commonly called "Master Eckart," was a monk, of the order of S. Dominic. In his youth he was a teacher or professor in the College of S. Jacques, in Paris. He was afterwards made Doctor of Theology at Rome, and was elected Provincial of his Order in Saxony. Three years later he was appointed Vicar-General of Bohemia. Soon after he appears at Strasburg, preaching in the convents of the nuns, and then in Frankfort-on-the-Maine, as Prior of the Blackfriars of that city. He was suspected of heresy, and was accused of being in communication with "the Brethren of the Free Spirit." In 1326, he was deposed from his office of Provincial of the Dominicans. As his doctrine had spread widely among his order, the Archbishop of Cologne accused the whole brotherhood of heresy. Eckart was summoned to appear before the Pope, at Avignon. He was condemned on the charge of heresy. His doctrines were so widely spread through Germany, Switzerland, Tyrol and Bohemia, that they required to be condemned a second time. This was in 1430, by the University of Heidelberg.

sophers; and, above all, of Plato, whom he often quotes, and whom he calls "the great clerk." He was not aware that he taught anything different from the doctrines of the Catholic church, supposing Platonism and Neo-Platonism to be compatible with Christianity. In this belief he clung to the Catholic faith to his last hour, though he had been condemned at Cologne by the Archbishop, and though this condemnation was afterwards confirmed by the Pope.

Of the writings of Eckart, we have little more than fragments, but these are sufficient to acquaint us with the character of his theology.* "All that is in the Godhead," he says, "is one; thereof we can say nothing. It is above all names and above all nature. The essence of all creatures is eternally a divine life in Deity. God works but not the Godhead. Therein are they distinguished in working and not working. The end of all things is the hidden darkness of the eternal Godhead; unknown, and never to be known." Here we have that hidden darkness which is the same as the Dionysian Abysses of light; and that Godhead, who is above being, and only becomes God as He works, and creates. In the Godhead, Creator and creature are one; but when the creature becomes a creature, God becomes God. "In Himself," says Eckart in another place, "He is not God, in the creature only doth he become God. I ask to be rid of God, that is, that God by his grace, would bring me into the essence; that essence which is above God, and above distinction, I would enter into that eternal Unity which was mine before all time, and when I was what I would, and would what I was; into that state which is above all addition or diminution, into the Immobility whereby all is moved."

To be rid of God, in order to blessedness is an expression apparently in contradiction to the system which makes man one with God; but Eckart's meaning is never obscure. He longs for a return to that fountain of the Godhead, when as yet God was not separated from the creature. In another passage he expresses the same doctrine with the opposite words, "In every man," he says, "who hath utterly abandoned self, God must communicate Himself according to all His power, so completely that He retains nothing in His life, in His essence, in His Godhead. He must communicate all to the bringing forth of fruit." Again, "when the will is so united that it becometh a one in oneness,

* Professor Pfeiffer, in his work on the German Mystics, has collected one hundred and ten sermons; eighteen tracts, and seventy single sayings, which he ascribes to Eckart.

then doth the heavenly Father produce His only begotten Son in Himself and me, I am one with Him. He cannot exclude me. In this self-same operation doth the Holy Ghost receive His existence, and proceed from me, as from God. Wherefore? I am in God, and if the Holy Ghost deriveth not His being from me, He deriveth it not from God. I am in no wise excluded."

In other places he declares his oneness with Deity, "God and I, are one in knowing, God's essence is His knowing, and God's knowing makes me to know Him. Therefore is His knowing my knowing. The eye whereby I see God is the same eye whereby He seeth me, mine eye and the eye of God are one eye, one vision, one knowledge, and one love."

"There is something in the soul which is above the soul, divine, simple, an absolute Nothing; rather unnamed than named; unknown than known. So long as thou lookest on thyself as a *something*, so long thou knowest as little what there is, as my mouth knows what color is, or as my eye knows what taste is. Of this I am wont to speak in my sermons, and sometimes have called it a power, sometimes an uncreated light, sometimes a divine spark. It is absolute and free from all names and forms, as God is free and absolute in Himself. It is higher than knowledge higher than love, higher than grace, for in all these there is still distinction. In this power doth blossom and flourish God with all His Godhead, and the Spirit flourisheth in God. In this power doth the Father bring forth His only begotten Son, as essentially as in Himself, and in this light ariseth the Holy Ghost. This spark rejects all creatures, and will have only God, simply as He is in Himself. It rests satisfied neither with the Father, nor the Son, nor the Holy Ghost, nor with the three persons, so far as each exists in its respective attributes. I will say what will sound more marvellous still. This light is satisfied only with the super-essential Essence. It is bent on entering into the simple Ground, the still Waste wherein is no distinction neither Father, Son, nor Holy Ghost; into the Unity where no man dwelleth. Then is it satisfied in the light, then it is one; then it is one in itself—as this ground is a simple stillness, in itself immovable, and yet by this Immobility are all things moved."

"God is a pure good in Himself, and therefore will dwell nowhere, save in a pure soul. There He may pour Himself out; into that He can wholly flow. What is purity? It is that man should have turned himself away from all creatures, and have set his heart so entirely on the pure good, that no creature is to him a comfort; that he has no desire for aught creaturely,

save as far as he may apprehend therein, the pure good, which is God. And as little as the bright eye can endure aught foreign in it, any stain between it and God. To it all creatures are pure to enjoy, for it enjoyeth all creatures in God, and God in all creatures. Yea, so pure is that soul, that she seeth through herself. She needeth not to seek God afar off, she finds Him in herself when in her natural purity she hath flown out into the supernatural of the pure Godhead. And thus is she in God, and God in her; and what she doeth she doeth in God, and God doeth it in her."

"I have a power in my soul which enables me to perceive God. I am as certain as that I live, that nothing is so near to me as God. He is nearer to me than I am to myself. It is a part of His essence that He should be nigh and present to me. He is also nigh to a stone or a tree, but they do not know it. If a tree could know God and perceive His presence, as the highest of the angels perceive it, the tree would be as blessed as the highest angel. And it is because man is capable of perceiving God, and knowing how nigh God is to him that he is better off than a tree."

"The words *I am* none can truly speak but God alone. He has the substance of all creatures in Himself." "He is a Being that has all being in Himself." "All things are in God, and all things are God." "All creatures in themselves are nothing; all creatures are a speaking of God." "Dost thou ask me what was the purpose of the Creator when He made the creature. I answer, repose. Consciously, or unconsciously, all creatures seek their proper state. The stone cannot cease moving till it touch the earth; the fire rises up to heaven; thus a loving soul can never rest but in God, and so we say God has given to all things their proper place. To the fish, the water; to the bird, the air; to the beast, the earth; to the soul, the Godhead. Simple people suppose that we are to see God, as if He stood on that side and we on this. It is not so—God and I are one in the act of my perceiving Him." Concluding a sermon, in a lofty flight of impassioned eloquence, Eckart cries, "O noble soul! put on thou wings to thy feet, and rise above all creatures, and above thine own reason; and above the angelic choirs; and above the light that has given me strength, and throw thyself upon the heart of God, there shalt thou be hidden from all creatures."

Eckart might well ask his hearers, as it is said he used to do at the end of his sermon, if they had understood him, telling

those who did not, not to trouble themselves, for only those who were like the truth could know it. It was not something to be thought out by the reason, but something to be received in the soul's intuition, for "it came directly out of the heart of God."

When the Beghards had brought down upon themselves the opposition of the church, their existence as societies was no longer possible. At Cologne, their head quarters, many were cast into the Rhine, and some burned at the stake; while throughout Germany and the Netherlands the church waged against them a war of extermination. From their embers arose a new fraternity, mystical as they had been, and like them also celebrated for their pious and benevolent labours. This was the fraternity of the "Brethren of the Common Lot." But between the Beghards and this new Brotherhood there was a famous Mystic, whom Dr. Ullmann regards as "a transition link between them." This was John Ruysbroek, who has been already mentioned. He was by birth a Belgian, but in his mind and character a German. He was destined to exercise a great influence on the mystical writers who immediately preceded the Reformation. Ruysbroek's first appearance was as an opponent of the extravagances of the Beghards, from whom, as we have already intimated, he differed materially. Eckart said that, God and man were one "by nature." Ruysbroek would not admit this, but tried to show how man might become one with God through contemplation and purification of the soul; but this union, he continually repeated, was of such a character that man did not lose his independent existence, or dissolve into Deity. "God," he said, "is the super-essential Essence of all being, eternally reposing in Himself; and yet, at the same time, the living and moving principle of all that He has created. In respect of this substance He is everlasting rest, in which there is neither time nor place, neither before nor after, neither desire nor possession, neither light nor darkness. This God is one in His nature and triune in His persons. The Father is the eternal, essential, and personal principle. He begets eternal wisdom—the Son; His uncreated and personal image. From the mutual intuition of the two, there flows an everlasting complacency, a fire of love, which burns for ever between the Father and the Son; this is the Holy Spirit, who continually proceeds from the Father and the Son, and returns into the nature of the Godhead. This triune Godhead is transfused in a threefold way into the human soul, which is its image. The deepest root and the proper essence of our soul, which is this eternal image of God rests for ever in Him. We all possess it, as eternal life,

without our own agency; and prior to our creation in God. After our creation however, three faculties take their rise in the substance of our soul; shapeless vacuity by which we receive the Father; the highest intellect, by which we receive the Son; and the spark of the soul, by which we receive the Holy Ghost, and become one spirit and one love with God."

Man having proceeded from God, is destined to return and become one with Him again. But this takes place in such a way that God never ceases to be God, nor the creature a creature. This is a sentiment often repeated; but the intenseness with which Ruysbroek expresses this union often leads him, as it were unconsciously, into the language of the Beghards. He has admitted, as we have seen above, that man has the root of his being in God, and speaking of the return of the soul to the divine fountain, he says, "The spirit becomes the very truth which it apprehends. God is apprehended by God. We become one with the same light with which we see, and which is both the medium and object of our vision."

Dr. Ullmann, while admitting the doubtful meaning of some passages like this, yet contends earnestly that Ruysbroek was no Pantheist. The ground of his argument is, that Ruysbroek while recognising the immanence of God in the world, never fails to assert that He also transcends the world. He overflows into the universe; dwells ever originally in all created minds, and unites Himself in the closest manner to the pious soul; yet He rests eternally in his own essence, and, independently of the world, possesses and enjoys Himself in His Godhead and its persons.

To the practical side of Ruysbroek's Mysticism, Dr. Ullmann traces the establishment of the "Brotherhood of the Common Lot" and in the other side, the contemplative, he sees the continuation of the Mysticism which had reached its culminating point in Eckart.

The mystical succession was continued at Cologne by *John Tauler*, a monk of the Dominican order.* Tauler was a great

* John Tauler was a native of Strasburg. He studied at the University of Paris, and after his return to Strasburg he became acquainted with Master Eckart. This part of Germany was then under the sentence of excommunication, but Tauler preached in spite of the Papal interdict, and great crowds of people flocked to hear him. While the Black Death was raging in Strasburg, Tauler and two other priests were the only ministers of religion who administered the sacraments to the sick and the dying. He was finally banished from Strasburg for his bold words against the Pope. He repaired to Cologne, where he preached for some years in the cloister of S. Gertrude. He afterwards returned to his native town, where he died in 1361.

favorite with the German Reformers. Luther and Melancthon often speak of him. His sermons and religious discourses are devoted chiefly to the points most dear to all Mystics—God in His being; our origin in and from Him, and our return to Him again. His words have the ring of the often condemned speculation, but it is urged for him as for Ruysbroek, that the union with God of which he speaks, is rather religious and moral, than a oneness of essence; that while Eckart was a bold speculator, “rearing a system which, like the dome of the Cathedral of the city in which he lived, towered aloft like a giant, or rather like a Titan assailing heaven” Tauler was more a man of sentiment, expressing the deep feelings of an overflowing soul. There may be truth in this distinction, but it may be urged on the other side, that the difference is less in the doctrines than in the mental character of the men, which to the same doctrine gives different forms. “Godly men,” says Tauler, “are called God-like, for God lives, forms, ordains and works in them all His works; and doth, so to speak, use Himself in them.” Here we have God’s immanency in man. Human life is God’s life, for God lives in man. He exists in the human soul, for he uses Himself there. This, however, is spoken only of the godly, and must be understood with this limitation. Other passages illustrate the advantages of the annihilation of self that God may become all. “The created nothing,” says Tauler, “sinks in the uncreated, incomprehensibly, unspeakably. Herein is true what is said in the Psalter—‘Deep calleth unto Deep’ for the uncreated Deep calls the created, and these two Deeps become entirely one. There hath the created spirit lost itself in the Spirit of God; yea, is drowned in the bottomless sea of God-head.” “God,” he says again, “is a Spirit, and our created spirit must be united to and lost in the uncreated, even as it existed in God before creation. Every moment in which the soul re-enters into God, a complete restoration takes place. If it be done a thousand times in a day, there is each time a true regeneration. As the Psalmist saith, ‘This day have I begotten thee.’ This is when the inmost of the spirit is sunk and dissolved in the inmost of the divine nature; and is thus new-made and transformed. God thus pours Himself out into our spirit, as the sun rays forth its material light, and fills the air with sunshine, so that no eye can tell the difference between the sunshine and air. If the union of the sun and air cannot be distinguished, how far less this divine union of the uncreated spirit. Our spirit is received and utterly swallowed up in the

abyss which is its source. Then the spirit transcends itself and all its powers, and mounts higher and higher towards the *Divine Dark*, even as an eagle towards the sun." "Let man simply yield himself to God; ask nothing, desire nothing, love and mean only God, yea, and such an *unknown* God. Let him lovingly cast all his thoughts and cares, and his sins too, as it were on that unknown Will. Some will ask what remains after a man hath thus lost himself in God? I answer, nothing but a fathomless annihilation of himself; an absolute ignoring of all reference to himself personally; of all aim of his own in will and heart, in way, in purpose, or in use. For in this self-loss, man sinks so deep, that if he could out of pure love and loveliness sink deeper, yea, and become absolutely nothing, he would do so right gladly. O, dear child! in the midst of all these enmities and dangers, sink thou into thy ground and nothingness, and let the tower with all its bells fall upon thee; yea, let all the devils in hell storm out upon thee; let heaven and earth and all their creatures assail thee, all shall but marvelously serve thee; sink thou only into thy nothingness, and the better part shall be thine."

Tauler speaks of this ground of the soul as that which is inseparable from the divine Essence, and wherein man has by grace what God has by nature. He quotes Proclus, as saying, "that while man is busied with images which are beneath us, and clings to such, he cannot possibly return into his ground and essence." "If," he says, "thou wilt know by experience what such a ground truly is, thou must forsake all the manifold and gaze thereon with intellectual eye alone. But wouldst thou come nearer yet, turn thine intellectual eyes right therefrom, for even the intellect is beneath thee, and become one with the One, that is—unite thyself with the Unity. This unity, Proclus calls 'the calm, silent, slumbering and incomprehensible divine darkness.' To think, beloved in the Lord, that a heathen should understand so much and so far, and we be so behind, may well make us blush for shame. To this our Lord Jesus Christ testifies, when He says 'the kingdom of God is within you.' That is, this kingdom is born in the inmost ground of all, apart from all that the powers of mind can accomplish. In this ground the eternal, heavenly Father doth bring forth His only begotten Son, a hundred thousand times quicker than in an instant, according to our apprehension, ever anew in the light of eternity, in the glory and immutable brightness of His own self. He who would experience this, must turn himself

inward, far away from all working of his outward and inward powers and imagination—from all that ever cometh from without, and then sink and dissolve himself in the ground. Then cometh the power of the Father, and calls the man into Himself through the only begotten Son, and so the Son is born out of the Father and returneth unto the Father, and such a man is born, in the Son, of the Father, and floweth back with the Son unto the Father again, and becomes one with them."

Dr. Ullmann says that Tauler, in respect of doctrine, kept apparently within the limits assigned by the church, and though he raised against him ecclesiastical opposition, it was less for what he taught than for his inward piety and his zeal against the sins of the clergy.

Heinrich Suso, a disciple of Master Eckart, was another of the celebrated Mystics of Cologne. Dr. Ullmann says, that though he embraced the principle of union with God by self-annihilation, yet he never entirely occupied the ground of Pantheism on which his master speculated. Suso was a monk of the Dominican order; famous as a preacher and distinguished for his piety and benevolence; an ardent lover of the monastic life, and a great enemy to the corruptions of the church. His definition of God is purely Dionysian—Being which is equal to non-being. "He is not any particular being, or made up of parts. He is not a being that has still to be, or is capable of any possibility of receiving addition; but pure, simple, undivided universal Being. This pure and simple Being is the supreme cause of actual being, and includes all temporal existences as their beginning and end. It is in all things, and out of all things, so that we may say 'God is a circle whose centre is everywhere, His circumference nowhere.'" On the union of man with God he speaks with the same guarded expressions as Ruysbroek, maintaining the unity, yet holding the creature to be still a creature. Man vanishes into God. All things become God, yet in such a way that the created is the created still. "A meek man," he says, "must be *deformed* from the creature, *conformed* to Christ, and *transformed* into the Deity; yet the divine *Thou* and the human *I* continue to exist." "The soul," he says again, "passes beyond time and space, and with a loving inward intuition is dissolved in God. This entrance of the soul banishes all forms images and multiplicity. It is ignorant of itself and all things. Reduced to its essence it hovers on the brink of the Trinity. At this elevation there is no effort, no struggle; the beginning and the end are one. Here the divine

nature doth as it were embrace and mildly kiss through and through the soul that they may be one for ever. He who is thus received into the eternal Nothing is in the everlasting *now*, and hath neither *before* nor *after*. Rightly hath Dionysius said that God is non-Being; that is, above all our notions of being. We have to employ images and similitudes, as I must do in setting forth such truths, but know that all such figures are as much below the reality as a blackamore is below the sun. In this absorption of which I speak, the soul is still a creature; but, at the same time, hath no thought whether it be a creature or no."

The THEOLOGIA GERMANICA, a pious mystical book, the author of which is unknown, belonged to the age of Tauler, and was probably written by some of the Mystics of his brotherhood. It begins with an ontological application of S. Paul's words, "When that which is perfect is come then things which are in part shall be done away." The *Perfect* is that Being "who hath comprehended and included all things in Himself and His own substance, and without whom and beside whom there is no true substance, and in whom all things have their substance, for He is the substance of all things, and is in Himself unchangeable and immovable, yet changeth and moveth all things." The things which are in part, are explained as those things which may be apprehended, known and expressed; but the Perfect is that which cannot be known, apprehended, or expressed by any creature. For this reason the Perfect is nameless. No creature as a creature can name it or conceive it. Before the Perfect can be known in the creature all creature qualities such as *I* and *self* must be lost and done away.

God, or the eternally good, is that which truly exists. Evil has no real being, because it does not really exist. Anything exists just in proportion as it is good. The author of the *Theologia Germanica* does not hesitate to carry this principle to its utmost extent, even saying that the devil is good, so far as he has being.

Submission to eternal goodness is described as the soul's freedom. He is not free who looks for a reward of his well-doing, or who does what is right through fear of hell punishment. He alone is free who loves goodness for its own sake, and does what is right because in well-doing is blessedness. "What is Paradise," the author asks, and he answers, "All things that are, for all are goodly and pleasant, and therefore may be fitly called a paradise. It is said also that paradise is

an outer court of heaven. Even so this world is verily an outer court of the eternal, or of eternity, and specially whatever in time or any temporal things or creatures manifesteth or remindeth us of God or eternity, for the creatures are a guide and a path unto God and eternity. Thus the world is an outer court of eternity; and, therefore, it may well be called a paradise, for it is such in truth; and in this paradise all things are lawful save one tree and the fruit thereof—nothing is contrary to God but self-will; to will otherwise than as the Eternal Will would have it."

This book was a great favorite with the Reformers. Luther edited it and recommended it to the people. Spener says "that it was the Holy Scriptures, the *Theologia Germanica* and the sermons of Tauler, that made Luther what he was." From the title of it the German Mystics were called "German Theologians." Anticipating the reproach of thus identifying himself with Eckart and Tauler, Luther said, "We shall be called German Theologians" and he answers, "Well, German Theologians *let us be*."

Of all the German Mystics, Dr. Ullmann considers Eckart alone to be a decided Pantheist. He classes all the others as Theists, except the author of the *Theologia Germanica*. Of this book, he says that it contains the *elements* of Pantheism, yet a Pantheism not of speculation, but of the deepest and the purest piety. He had difficulty, as others before him, in drawing the lines of distinction. This book which, before the Reformation, had great influence among the Catholics of Germany, has since been placed in the index of books forbidden; but among the Lutherans it is still in high esteem.*

* Sebastian Frank, a contemporary of Luther systematized the speculations of Eckart and Tauler, and reduced them to definite forms of logic. "Starting," says Mr. Vaughan, "with the doctrine of the *Theologia Germanica*, that God is the substance of all things, he pushes it to the verge of a dreary Pantheism, and even beyond that uncertain frontier." In his system the universe passes through the process of a divine life. First there is the divine substance, or abstract unity, which produces all existence. This substance appearing as an opposite to itself, becomes subject and object. This opposition is absorbed in the consciousness of man when he is restored to the Supreme Unity, and is rendered divine. The fall of man is a fall from the Divinity within him, a fall from that reason which is the Holy Ghost; that reason in which the Divine Being is supposed first to acquire will and self-consciousness. Christ is the Divine element in man. The work of the historical Christ is to make us conscious of the ideal and inward, and we thus arrive at the consciousness of that fundamental divineness in us which knows and is one with the Supreme by identity of nature.

Luther retained much of the spirit of the German Mystics, but neither he nor his immediate followers seem to have adopted their theology. The mystical succession was broken in Germany for more than a century. It was then taken up by Jacob Böhme, the philosophical shoemaker of Görlitz. Böhme was a member of the Lutheran church, the authorities of which treated him as the Catholic church did Eckart and Tauler. Böhme's meaning is often obscure. He had not the learning of the pre-Reformation Mystics, but what he wants in learning he amply makes up for in originality.

We can either, he says, begin at man and reason up to God, or we can begin at God and reason down to man; the conclusion either way will be the same. To know ourselves is to know God, for we are a similitude of the Deity—a living image of the eternal divine nature. That which is in the triune God is manifested in nature, and creation; and of this entire nature and creation, man is the epitome.

Beginning with the consideration of the Infinite Being, we can contemplate Him as He is in Himself; as He is in His Word or eternal nature; and as He is in the visible creation, "the out-spoken or visible word." In Himself, God is an eternal Unity; an eternal Nothing; an Abyss without time or space. He needs no habitation, for He is without and within the world equally alike; deeper than thought; higher than imagination; no numbers can express His greatness, for He is endless and infinite. He manifests Himself in His word, eternal nature—the All of the universe. He fills all things, and is in all things. "The Being of God is like a wheel in which many wheels are made one in another, upwards, downwards, crossways, and yet continually all of them turn together." The whole of nature; heaven, earth and above the heavens is the body of God. The powers of the stars are the fountain veins in this natural body, which is the world or universe.

The process of the Divine going forth from nothing to something is on this wise. In the abyssal Nothing there is an eternal Will, which is the Father; and an apprehending mind, which is the Son. From the will and mind there is a procession which is the Spirit. The Father eternally generates the Son. The Son is the wisdom in which all things are formed. The Spirit expresses the egress of the will and mind; "standing continually in the flash wherein life is generated." This triune Being is yet but one essence, which is the Essence of all essences. It is enough to name Him God, but with the very conception of God

there is introduced that of eternal nature. Of this nature God is the root and the ground; but He is not before it, for it is co-eternal with Him. The external world is the out-birth of this nature. In the one are all the principles that are found in the other. But though eternal nature is divine, for into it God enters as He is in Himself an eternal Good, yet the external world cannot be so unreservedly called divine, for into it He enters both as wrath and love. God is in all things as the sap in the green and flourishing tree. He lives in the stars and the elements of nature. He is present in the meanest of insects, and the tiniest of herbs. By His wisdom, and of His essence is all creation made. In the stillness of the evening twilight we may feel the presence of the Holy Spirit, in whose kingdom all creatures rejoice to live. If our eyes are purified we may see God everywhere. He is in us, and we are in Him, and if our lives are holy we may know ourselves to be God. All lies in man, he is the living book of God and all things.

These doctrines are repeated in Böhme's writings times without number, and with so many modifications, and further developments, as to make it difficult to set them forth definitely as constituting an harmonious system. The root idea seems to be a dualism, like what is found among the Gnostics, but with this difference, that Böhme receives no principle as independent of the being of God, but posits a duality of principles in the very essence of God.

In this essence is an opposition of darkness and light, fierceness and tenderness, and from this proceeds all opposition in the life of nature and of spirit, and even the opposition of good and evil. There is a duality of principles of which the first which is dark, fierce, and astringent, is not God in His highest Being; yet it is God, or at least it belongs to the essence of God. "Since man knows that he is twofold, possessing both good and evil, then is it highly necessary to him that he know himself; how he was created; whence his good and evil impulses; what is good and evil and on what they depend; what is the origin of all good and of all evil, how or when evil came into the devil, or men, and all creatures; if the devil was a holy angel, and man too was created good, why such misery is found in all creatures, and why every one is biting, beating, pushing, and crushing each other, and there is such opposition not only in living things but in stones, elements, earth, metals, wood, leaves, and grasses: in all is poison and wickedness, and it must be so, otherwise there would be neither life, nor movement, nor

color, nor virtue, nor thickness, nor thinness, nor perception of any kind, but all would be a *nothing*. In such a high consideration we find that all such comes from and out of God, and that it is of His substance, and evil belongs to formation and movement, and good to love, and the severe or counter-willing to joy." This opposition which Böhme found in all nature, he was compelled to carry up to God; for following the analogy he had laid down, what he saw in the creature he must posit in the Abyssal Deity. Though God, in the first conception, is a simple Unity in whom difference is not supposed to exist; yet when we enquire into the origin of love and anger, we find that they come from the same fountain, and that they are the children of one parent. We cannot say that the dark, fiery, astringent principle is *in* God any more than earth, air, or water, and yet these have all come from God. Sorrow, death, and hell, cannot be *in* God, and yet they have their origin in the divine Nothing. The enquiry must be into the cause of the evil not only in creatures but in the divine Essence, for in the root or original all is one. All comes from the essence of God considered in His threefold nature. God in the first principle is not properly God, but wrath and terror, the origin of bitterness and evil. Though this is not God it is yet the innermost first fountain which is in God the Father, according to which He calls Himself an angry and a jealous God. This fountain is the first principle and in it the world has its origin. It is the principle of severity and anger, resembling a brimstone-spirit, and constituting "the abyss of hell, in which Prince Lucifer remained after the extinction of his light." This dark principle is not God, yet it is the essence out of which God's light and heart are eternally produced. In it is the eternal mind which generates the eternal will, and the eternal will generates the eternal heart of God, and the heart generates the light, and the light the power, and the power the Spirit, and that is the Almighty God, who is in an unchangeable Will. The Godhead is thus:—God the Father, and the light makes the will-longing power, which is God the Son, since in the power the light is eternally generated; and in the light out of the power proceeds the Holy Spirit, which again in the dark mind generates the will of the eternal Being. "See now, dear soul," says Böhme, "this is the Godhead and contains in itself the second or middle principle, therefore God is alone good; He is love, light and power. Consider now that there would not have been in God such eternal wisdom and knowledge had not the mind stood in the darkness."

Such is the eternal birth of the divine Essence. By this, God Himself realizes the eternal idea of His Being. The moments of the eternal birth are differently set forth in Böhme's writings, according as the Divine Being is considered in Himself, or in His relation to Satan, the world, or man. Again, in the first relation, there are different points of view under which we may regard the eternal birth of the Deity.

The life process in God constitutes a Trinity, which is the eternal and necessary birth of God, who produces Himself, and without this life-process could not be thought of as a living God. Böhme says, "When we speak of the Holy Ternary we must first say there is one God—He who is called the Father and Creator of all things, who is therefore Almighty, and all in all. All is His. All has originated in Him, and from Him, and remains eternally in Him. Then we say He is threefold in persons and has from all eternity generated His Son, who is His heart, light, and love, so that the Father and the Son are not two beings, but only one. Then we say from the Holy Scriptures, that there is a Spirit who proceeds from the Father and the Son, and is one essence in the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost. "See then," says Böhme, "since the Father is the most original Essence of all essences, if the other principle did not appear and go forth in the birth of the Son, then the Father would be a dark valley. You see now that the Son, who is the heart, life, light, beauty, and gentle beneficence of the Father, discloses in His birth another principle, and reconciles the angry terrible Father, and makes Him loving and merciful, and is another person than the Father, since in His *centre* is nothing but pure joy, love, and delight. You may now see how the Holy Spirit proceeds from the Father and the Son. When the heart or light of God is begotten in the Father, there arises in the kindling of light, in the fifth form, out of the water-fountain or gentleness, in light, a very loving, pleasant, and agreeable spirit, that is the spirit which in the original was the bitter sting in the astringent mother, and which now makes in the water fountain many thousand, yea innumerable *centres*. You may now understand that the birth of the Son is originated in the fire, and He receives His personality and name in the kindling of the soft, white, and clear light which is Himself, and which makes the sweet odor, savor and gentle beneficence in the Father, and is most truly the heart of the Father, and is yet another person, since it bears and unfolds the other principle in the Father, and is His being, form, and light, therefore is it rightly

called the power of God. The Holy Spirit was not known in the original of the Father before the light but when the soft fountain rises to the light, then it issues forth as a strong Almighty Spirit, with great joy, out of the water-fountain and light, and is the power of the water-fountain and light. It now makes forms and figures, and is the *centre* in all essences where the light of life originates in the light of the Son, or heart of the Father. The Holy Ghost is therefore called a separate person, because it goes forth as the living power of the Father, and the Son, and confirms the eternal birth of the Trinity." The Holy Spirit is in the manifold what the Son is in the Unity. It is the creative power of God; the formative principle which moves the power of the Father and unfolds the immeasurable and innumerable *centres* in the birth of the heart of God.

As the Ternary of the Divine Nature may be reduced to a unity or a duality, so may it be increased to a Septenary of powers or principles—the ground relationship remaining the same. God the Father is all power, He is the well-spring of all—"in Him is light and darkness, air and water, heat and cold, hard and soft, thick and thin, sound and tone, sweet and sour, astringent and bitter." The properties or fountain spirits in God, are divided into seven kinds. The first is the astringent; a property of seed or concealed essence, a sharpness, contracting or penetrating of the sharp and bitter *nitre*, which produces the heat and the cold, when it is kindled it produces the salt-like sharpness. The other property, or spirit of God, in the divine *nitre* or in the Divine Power, is the sweet property which works in the astringent and softens it so that it becomes entirely loving and soft. It is then a conquering of the astringent; the fountain of the mercy of God, which overcomes wrath. The third property is the bitter: a penetrating and compressing of the sweet and astringent. The fourth is the heat: it is the proper beginning of life, and also the right spirit of life, it kindles all the properties, for when the heat works in the sweet moisture it produces the light in all qualities so that everyone sees the other; therein arises sense and thought, in this light arises the flash of life. The fifth property is the blessed, friendly, and joyful love. When the heat arises in the sweet property and kindles the sweet fountain, then arises the friendly love-light-fire in the sweet property, and kindles the bitter and the astringent, and eats and drinks them with sweet love-juice, and refreshes them, and makes them loving and friendly, and then when the sweet light love-power comes to them that they taste of it, and receive

life, then is a friendly meeting and triumphing, a friendly saluting, and a great love; yea a friendly and blessed kissing and tasting—then the bridegroom kisses his bride. The sixth fountain spirit in the Divine Power is the sound and tone which everything has, whence arises speech, and the difference of all things, with the music and songs of the holy angels, and herein too stands the forming of all colors and beauty, and also the heavenly kingdom of joy. The seventh spirit of God is the *body*, which is produced out of the other six spirits. In it are all heavenly figures, in it everything is formed and imaged, and in it arises all beauty and gladness. This is the right spirit of nature; yea nature itself, in which all creatures in heaven and earth are formed, yea heaven itself, and in this spirit consists all naturalness in the entire of God. But for this spirit there would neither be angel nor man, and God would be an unsearchable Being, who existed only in unsearchable power. All these seven spirits live and move in each other. They are all together God. Since there is no one spirit outside of another, but all the seven produce each other, so the one is not without the other. But the light is another person since it is continually generated out of the seven spirits, and the seven spirits continually arise in the light, and the powers of these seven spirits proceed continually in the glare of the light into the seventh nature spirit, and in it they fashion and form all things, and this procession into the light is the Holy Spirit.

The first four of these fountain spirits or properties, express the being of God the Father. The fifth, that of the Son, which is light, and this light is the heart of the seven spirits. The two last which give the spirits their definite and concrete form, represent the being of the Holy Ghost. Out of the seventh fountain spirit, which is nature, or holy heaven, God created the angels. Through the rising of the seven spirits, the light in them, the Holy Spirit which proceeded from them was moved, and they became creatures, so that every angel has the power of all the seven spirits; but in each, one property predominates. But here again the prevailing ground-form is the triad of the divine essence, and that in a manifold sense. Every angel is created as the entire Godhead—as a little God—because God created the angels out of Himself, and He is everywhere the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost. There is no difference between the spirits of God and the angels, but only this that the angels are creatures, and their corporeal essence has a beginning, but their power wherein they were created,

is God! Himself. Now the same triad which is the essence of every individual angel is found also in the three angelical kingdoms. God created these angel princes, each of which is the Lord of an angelic host, and is united to the Creator as a soul is to a body. The first is Michael, who is called the strength of God. He bears this name because he is formed out of the seven spirits, and stands in the place of God the Father. The second is he who is now called Lucifer, because he was expelled from the light of God. As Michael was created after the image of God the Father, so Lucifer was created after the beautiful image of God the Son; and, as a dear son, was united in love to Him. His heart stood in the centre of light, as if it had been God Himself, and his beauty was resplendent over all, for he was the son of the Son of God, and even as God the Father was united in great love to God the Son so also was Lucifer united to Michael as one heart or one God, for the well-spring of the Son of God had reached to the heart of Lucifer. The third angelical king is called Uriel, from the light, lightning, or outgoing of the light. He is created in the image of the Holy Ghost, and is the Holy Ghost. These are the three princes of God in heaven. "Since now the flash of life, that is the Son of God, arises in the middle circle among the fountain spirits of God, and shows itself triumphing, and the Holy Spirit raises itself triumphing over it, so also arises to this elevation in the hearts of the three kings the Holy Trinity and thus all the heavenly hosts are triumphant and full of joy."

Böhme has to struggle with the same difficulty that beset all other philosophers who have tried to resolve the all of being into one. There is obviously the perfect and the imperfect; the infinite and the finite. A way of uniting these opposites must be found—some device must be formed which, while admitting the existence of the imperfect and the finite, will yet eliminate all imperfection and finitude from the perfect and the infinite. Böhme essays the solution of the problem in two ways. At one time by the idea of a fall. At another time by the supposition of a duality of principles. In the one case he follows the Scriptures, in the other he approaches Manichæism, with this difference that the Manichees placed one principle outside of God, but Böhme posits both in the Divine Essence; and yet he contends that, though evil has this origin, God is not its author. As to the fall, it began with Lucifer, whose kingdom was originally created "in the royal, lovely and heavenly

nitre* of the divine properties." Lucifer was the most beautiful prince in heaven, adorned and clothed with the most resplendent beauty of the Son of God. Why he fell rather than the others Böhme scarcely knows. Indeed he carries back into the very creation of Lucifer the necessity of a fall, for those attributes with which Lucifer was endowed seem to have been his only potentially. He would have possessed them, had he with the other spirits taken his direction to the heart of God. It was intended that the seven spirits in an angel should be as God was, but the fountain spirits in Lucifer seeing that they sat supreme, moved the astringent and produced a fiery spirit which rose up in the heart like a proud virgin. By thus acting contrary to the law of nature, and otherwise than God their Father, there was a fountain against the entire Godhead. They kindled the *nitre* of the body, and then was produced a son, entirely unlike the son or heart of God such as the fountain spirits would have brought forth had they not stirred the astringent. "He," says Böhme, speaking of Lucifer, "was created like the other angels, out of eternal nature, out of the eternal indissoluble bond and has stood in Paradise. He has also felt and seen the birth of the Holy Godhead, the birth of the second principle, the heart of God, and the confirmation of the Holy Spirit. His nourishment would also have been from the word of God, and he would have remained an angel. But because he saw that he was a prince, standing in the highest principle, he despised the birth of the Son of God and His gentle loving qualities, and determined to be a very powerful and terrible lord in the first principle, and as he wished to qualify himself in the five powers, and despised the gentle disposition of the heart of God, he could not be nourished by the word of God, and his light was extinguished. He lost God and the kingdom of Heaven, and all the delights and joys of Paradise, and remained in the dark valley of the eternal original, always shut up in the first principle as in eternal death. He raises himself continually trying to reach the heart of God and rule over it."

Lucifer first kindled the fiery principle in God whereby He became an angry and a jealous God; that is, first showed His wrath, which is in reality His righteousness. And this fire which burns in God is manifest in nature too, for the whole of nature is set on fire by Lucifer. He could not enter into the

* The *nitre*, *sal nitrum*, *Salitter* or *saltpetre* is one of Böhme's Alchemico-mystical marks of the divine Essence.

two births, that of the Son and that of the Holy Ghost, but heremained in the birth of God, and was cast out with air and fire into the outermost nature wherein he had kindled the fire-anger. This nature indeed is the body of God, in which the Godhead produced itself; but the devil could not touch the gentle birth of the Son of God, which rises in the light. As God finished the creation of this world after the fall of Lucifer, so was everything created out of the *nitre* wherein Lucifer was placed, and this fire-anger of God is still in the body of the god of this world, and will be till the end.

The dualism or opposition of principles is between Lucifer and God the Son; but in the deeper ground of the Deity this dualism vanishes. It is in the Son that God is first truly God, but that same separation of powers and principles in virtue of which God manifests Himself as Father and Son, also gives being to Lucifer, and the same principle which in unity with the Son is the Father, in its *for-its-self-being*, in its full antithesis to the Son, is Lucifer. But this antithesis or difference which in Lucifer comes to its full development, is one which again is entirely removed. Therefore, into the place of fallen Lucifer, the eternal only-begotten Son has directly entered. On the kingly chair of expelled Lucifer now sits our King. The kingdom of Lucifer has become the kingdom of Christ.

In his interpretation of Scripture Böhme is more mystical than all the Mystics. With the revelation within, he made all external revelation to agree. God, he says, made all things out of His own essence, because there was no other essence from which they could be made. The Spirit of God indeed moved upon the water in forming the world, but this is the Spirit's eternal work. In the birth of the Son of God, it moveth upon the water, for it is the power and outpouring of the Father out of the water and light of God. Man is made in the image of the Trinity. Like the Father, he has mind; like the Son, he has light in that mind; like the Holy Ghost, he has "a spirit which goes out from all the powers." His fall was a necessary event, for in Adam were contending principles under the dominion of the more hurtful of which he could not but fall. Like the angels, he was created with a spiritual body, and would have multiplied his kind as they do. But he fell, and then Eve was created, that his posterity might be continued, as they now are. This may not accord with the letter of the Scripture narrative, according to which Eve sinned first and then Adam; but that is only a mystical representation, of which the sense is, that

Adam sinned by desire. He fell into a deep sleep, the death of his soul. When he awoke he found Eve. They both knew that they were naked—the sensual had eclipsed the spiritual, and they were ashamed of their material bodies.*

* Böhme's representations of the Trinity are not always verbally consistent, and this is one of the things which make him difficult to be understood. The following passage from the book on the *Three Principles* seems a definite expression of his conception of God, though in some points it does not agree with what is quoted in the text—"The seven spirits are God the Father, the life of the seven spirits is the *light* which subsists in the centre of the seven spirits, and is generated by them; this *light* is the Son, flash, stock, pith, or heart of the seven spirits. The splendor, or glance in all the powers which goes forth from the Father and the Son, and forms or images all in the seventh nature spirit; this is the Holy Ghost. Thus, O blind Jew, Turk, and Heathen, thou seest that there are three persons in the Deity, thou canst not deny it, for thou livest, and art, and hast thy being in the three persons, and thou hast thy life from them, and in the power of these three persons thou art to rise from the dead at the last day, and live eternally.

The following exposition of Böhme is from his commentator Freher. It is taken from Mr. Walton's *Memorial of William Law* :—"After the three first properties, called by Böhme the triangle in nature, and referring distinctly to Father, Son, and Spirit, in the generation of the fourth, which is the fire, the first Abyssal Will is opened as an eternal nothing, consuming, melting down, turning, and transmuting, in one sense, into nothing, but in another into something better and more noble, all what by the three first properties in their fighting and whirling was made up. And this is the Father, whom the Scripture also calleth a consuming fire. If then this first abyssal will is God, viz. the Father, considered as in Himself only without all nature, this same abyssal will, now opened in the generation of this fourth form, is *God in nature*.

"From this first manifestation which is the *Father's* in the fire, the second, viz. the *Son's* in the light, is all inseparable. And so is also from these two the third, which is the *Spirit's*, called or compared, as in the Scripture, so by Böhme also, to a wind or air, not only proceeding forth from fire and light, but also keeping them both in union, according to that outward representation thereof in temporal nature, wherein we see, that without air proceeding from [and with] the fire, no fire can burn and consequently no light can shine."

Mr. Walton gives the following exposition :—"What is the Abyss of All things where there is no creature, viz. the Abyssal No-thing ?

"Answer. (1.) It is a habitation of God's Unity, for the opening, or the something of the nothing, is God himself. The opening is the *Unity*, viz. an eternal life and desiring, a mere *velleity* or *will*, which yet hath nothing that it can desire, but itself. Therefore is the will a mere desirous love-longing delight, viz. an exit of itself to its perceptibility or inventibility.

"(2.) This will is first, the eternal *Father* of the bys or ground; and secondly, the *perceptibility of the love* is the eternal *Son*, which the will in itself generateth to a perceptible love-power; and thirdly, the exit of the desirous perceptible Love is the *Spirit* of the Divine life.

"(3.) And this is the eternal Unity, or threefold, unmeasurable, unbeginning Life, which standeth in mere desiring; in conceiving, comprehending and finding of itself, and in an eternal exit of itself.

"(4.) And that which is gone forth from the Will, from the Love, and from the Life, the same is the *Wisdom* of God, viz. the Divine vision, contemplability, and joy of the Unity of God, where the Love eternally introduceth itself into powers, colors, wonders, and virtues."

The poems of Angelus Silesius published in the seventeenth century were the last manifestation of the mystical German Theology, excepting, of course, the Transcendentalists, who shall be mentioned in a subsequent chapter. Silesius was long confounded with John Scheffler, who is said to have been a follower of Jacob Böhme, but who was at last a priest of the Catholic Church. It is now considered as proved that they were two different persons. The following verses will be sufficient to show the character of the theology of Silesius:—

"God never yet has been, nor will He ever be ;
But yet before the world, and after it, is He.
What God is no one knows, nor sprite nor light is He,
Nor happiness, nor one, nor even Divinity,
Nor mind, love, goodness, will, nor intellect far seeing,
Nor thing, nor nought, nor soul, nor yet essential being,
He is what I and thou, may vainly strive to learn,
Until to Gods like Him, we worldly creatures turn."

"God in my nature is involved, as I in the Divine,
I help to make His being up, as much as He does mine.
As much as I to God, owes God to me,
His biasfulness and self-sufficiency.
I am as rich as God, no grain of dust
That is not mine too—share with me He must.
I am as great as God, and He as small as I ;
He cannot me surpass, or I beneath Him lie."

"God cannot without me endure a moment's space ;
Were I to be destroyed He must give up the Ghost,
Naught seemeth high to me, I am the highest thing,
Because even God Himself is poor deprived of me."

"While aught thou art, or know'st, or lov'st, or hast,
Nor yet believe me is thy burden gone.
Who is as though he were not, ne'er had been ;
That man oh joy ! is made God absolute,
Self is surpassed by self annihilation—
The nearer nothing, so much more divine.
Rise above time and space, and thou can'st be,
At any moment in eternity."

"Eternity and time, time and eternity,
Are in themselves alike, the difference is in thee ;
'Tis thou thyself tak'st time, the clock-work is thy sense,
If thou but dropp'st the spring the time will vanish hence ;
You think the world will fade, the world will not decay,
The darkness of the world alone is swept away."

"I bear God's image, would He see Himself ;
He only can in me, or such as I."

"I see in God, both God and man,
He man and God in me ;
I quench His thirst, and He, in turn,
Helps my necessity."

* In Angelus Silesius we reach the culmination of mystical extravagance :
" the fotsam and jetsam " of Pantheism. Of the same kind are two books,

FRENCH MYSTICS.—The chief Mystics of France are Fenelon

which we shall not have an opportunity of mentioning in the text. One is John Toland's *Pantheisticon*. Toland was a man of great reading and great intellectual powers, but deficient in the ordinary wisdom of the world. The publication of this book was simply a freak of his erratic genius. It meant nothing except perhaps to confound and horrify the advocates of Christianity, who looked upon Toland as an unbeliever of the worst kind. In the introduction he quoted *Thomas Aquinas* as saying that "they did not contradict the Mosaic account of creation, who taught that God was the eternal cause of the eternal world, and that all things from all eternity flowed from God without a medium," and S. Jerome as saying that "God is interfused and circumfused both within and without the world." "The seeds of all things," Toland says, "begun from an eternal time, are composed out of the first bodies, or most simple principles, the four commonly received elements being neither simple nor sufficient, for in an infinity all things are infinite, nay even eternal, as nothing could be made out of nothing. To illustrate this, the seed of a tree is not a tree in mere potentiality as Aristotle would say, but a real tree, in which are all the integrant parts of a tree, though so minute as not to be perceived by the senses without microscopes, and not even then but in a very few things." The *Socratic Society*, which indulged in these deep speculations is represented as singing in alternate parts, after the convivial fashion of a Masonic Lodge, some verses of which the following are a specimen:—

"*President*.—Keep off the profane vulgar.

Respondents.—The coast is clear, the door is shut. All safe!

P.—All things in the world are one,

And one is all in all things.

R.—What is all in all things, is God;

Eternal and immense—

Neither begotten nor ever to perish.

P.—In Him we live, we move, and have our being.

R.—Every thing has sprung from Him, and shall be reunited to Him,

He Himself being the beginning and end of all things.

P.—Let us sing a hymn

Upon the nature of the universe.

"*P. & R.*—Whatever this is it animates all things,

Forms, nourishes, increases, creates,

Buries, and takes into itself all things,

And of all things is itself the Parent

From whom all things that receive a being,

Into the same are anew resolved."

Sometimes they sing this hymn—

"All things within the verge of mortal laws

Are changed, all climates in revolving years

Know not themselves, nations change their faces,

But the world is safe, and preserves its all,

Neither increased by time, nor worn by age;

Its motion is not instantaneous,

It fatigues not its course, always the same

It has been and shall be, our fathers saw

No alteration, neither shall posterity,

It is God immutable for ever."

Toland professed to refute the blasphemies of Spinoza! He also translated into English Giordano Bruno's *Spaccio della Bestia trionfante*, but the translation was as destitute of meaning as the original. The other book is Edgar Poe's *Eureka*, in which the author derives all things from an original unity. It is called a *prose poem*, but it has not the merit either of Poe's prose or his poetry.

the Archbishop of Cambray, and Madame Guyon. They were accused by Bossuet of teaching doctrines that led to Pantheism. The inference may have been correct, but Fenelon and Madame Guyon would have recoiled not only from the bold speculations of Erigena and Eckart, but even from the more modified doctrines of the other German Mystics. Their mysticism was practical rather than speculative. They were more anxious to be able to love God than to explain His essence. But like all great religious souls when they did speak of God their language overflowed the bounds of the prescribed theology, and wandered into a kind of religious Pantheism. "What do I see in all nature," cried Fenelon, "God—God is everything, and God alone." Fenelon may have paused to explain what he meant; so did Erigena and Eckart; and so did even Spinoza; but the explanation was either at war with the original statement, or it went to establish it. If the former, there was a manifest contradiction, if the latter Pantheism was openly espoused.

From Madame Guyon's writings a few similar sentences might be gleaned, but they are not numerous, and they never express more than that ineffable union of the soul with the Deity, which in some way or other is the hope of every Christian. Her deep piety, and the warmth and earnestness of her spirit may have led to the use of language which reminds us of Brahmanical absorption; but we may plead for her, as Dr. Ullmann did for some of the Germans, that the union of which she spoke was not one of essence, but only moral or religious. In this verse, from one of her hymns, we have an instance of this language, and with it a guide to the meaning

"I love the Lord—but with no love of mine,
For I have none to give;
I love the Lord—but with a love divine,
For by thy love I live.
I am as nothing, and rejoice to be
Emptied and lost, and swallowed up in Thee!"

Again, in describing the mode of the soul's union with God, she says, "The soul passing out of self, by dying to itself necessarily passes into its Divine Object. This is the law of its transition. When it passes out of self, which is limited, and therefore is not God, and consequently evil, it necessarily passes into the unlimited and uncreated, which is God, and therefore the true and good.*"

* Under the head of French Mystics we might have mentioned the French disciples of Jacob Böhme, the chief of whom was Saint-Martin, but they were mostly employed in translating and expounding the works of Böhme.

ENGLISH MYSTICS.—The mystical spirit has not been fruitful in England. The writings of Jacob Böhme were translated into English in the time of the Puritans by some zealous disciples, but his followers in this country do not appear ever to have been numerous. In the middle of the last century he found an eloquent expounder of his doctrines in William Law, a non-juring clergyman of the Church of England. Bishop Warburton charged Law with teaching Spinozism, to which his only answer was that "Spinoza made God *matter*, and that it surely could not be supposed that he could be capable of any belief so absurd." Law did not understand Spinoza, but he made no secret of his agreement with Jacob Böhme.

Perhaps the best text for an exposition of Law's Theology, is the following passage, "Everything that is in being, is either God, or nature, or creature; and everything that is not God is only a manifestation of God; for as there is nothing, neither nature nor creature, but what must have its being in and from God, so everything is and must be according to its nature more or less a manifestation of God. Everything, therefore by its form and condition speaks *so much* of God, and God in everything *speaks* and manifests so much of Himself. Properly and strictly speaking nothing *can begin* to be. The beginning of everything is nothing more than its beginning to be in a new state." Whatever separation may be afterwards made between God and the creature, we see in this passage in what sense they are one. All things live, and move, and have their being in God. This is true of devils, as well as of angels, and of all beings in the ranks between devils and angels. The happiness or misery of every creature is regulated by its state and manner of existence *in God*. He is all in all. We have nothing *separately* or at a *distance* from Him, but everything *in Him*. Whatever He gives us is *something* of Himself, and thus we become more and more partakers of the Divine nature.

Man was created with an angelic nature. It was intended that he should be the restoring angel who was to bring back all things to their first state as they were before the fall of Lucifer. He was placed in this world which had formerly been the place of the fallen angels. He was in a paradise which covered that earth which is now revealed by sin. He was to keep that paradise, but after his fall he was sentenced to till the ground which now appears, for this world and all that we see in it are but the invisible things of a fallen world made visible in a new and lower state of existence. The first creation which was perfect, spiritual,

and angelical, is represented by the sea of glass which S. John saw before the throne of God. That sea is the heavenly materiality out of which were formed the bodies of the angels, and the angelical Adam. In this sea of glass all the properties and powers of nature moved and worked in the unity and purity of the one will of God. Perpetual scenes of light and glory and beauty were rising and changing through all the height and depth of this sea of glass, at the will and pleasure of the angels who once inhabited the region which is now this earth. But these angels rebelled, and by their rebellion this sea of glass was broken to pieces and became a black lake; a horrible chaos of fire and wrath; a depth of the confused, divided, and fighting properties of nature. The revolt of the angels brought forth that disordered chaos, and that matter of which this earth is now composed. Stones and rocks, fire and water, with all the vegetables and animals that arise from the contending and comingling of the elements came into existence through the rebellion of the angels. They exist only in time; they are unknown in eternity. The angelical world or sea of glass had indeed its fruits and flowers, which were more real than those which grow in time, but as different from the grossness of the fruits of this world as the heavenly body of an angel is different from the gross body of an earthly animal. It was the mirror of beautiful figures and ideal forms, which continually manifested the wonders of the Divine nature, and ministered to the joy of the angels.

Adam was created with dominion over the fallen world and all the creatures whose existence was mortal, but he himself was immortal and possessed of a heavenly body. He was placed in paradise till he should bring forth a numerous offspring fitted to inhabit the world that had been lost to the angels. The sea of glass was to be restored. The sun, and stars, the earth, and all the elements were to be purified by fire, and when all that was gross and dead was purged away, the sons of Adam were to inhabit the renewed earth and sing hallelujahs to all eternity.

Adam with the body and soul of an angel in an outward body, was thus placed in paradise. He was put on his trial not by the mere will of God, nor by experiment, but by the necessity of his nature. He was free to choose either the angelic life, in which he could have used his outward body as a means of opening up the wonders of the outward world; or to turn his desire to the opening of the bestial life of the outward world in himself, so as to know the good and evil that were in it. He chose the latter. The moment the bestial life was opened within him he died

spiritually. His angelic body and spirit were extinguished, but his soul being an immortal fire became a poor slave in prison of bestial flesh and blood.

When Adam had thus fallen it was not good for him to be alone, so God divided the first perfect human nature into two parts. Eve was created, or rather taken out of Adam. She led him further astray by eating of the forbidden fruit, and persuading him also to eat of it. He saw that he was naked; that he was an animal of gross flesh and blood, and he was ashamed of his bestial body. That man was created at first male and female in one person, and that his offspring was to be continued after the manner of his own birth from God, Law endeavours to prove not only from the record in Genesis, but from the words of our Lord to the Sadducees that "in the resurrection they neither marry nor are given in marriage, but are as the angels in heaven," or as S. Luke has it, "they are *equal* to the angels of God," which is supposed to mean that the state of angelic being, which Adam had before he sinned, will be again restored to humanity.

That the original substance of humanity was Divine is evident from the record of creation, where it is said that God breathed into man '*the breath of lives*,' and he became a living soul. That soul did not come from the womb of nothing, but as a breath from the mouth of God. What it is and what it has in itself is *from and out of* the First and Highest of all beings. To this record in Genesis S. Paul appeals where he wishes to show that all things, all worlds, and all living creatures were not created *out of nothing*. The woman, he says, was created out of the man, but *all things are out of God*. Again, he says that there is to us but one God, *out of whom* are all things. Creation out of nothing is a fiction of modern theology, a fiction big with the greatest absurdities. Every creature is a birth from something else. Birth is the only procedure of nature. All nature is itself a birth from God; the first manifestation of the hidden inconceivable God. So far is it from being out of nothing, that it is the manifestation of *that* in God which before was not manifest, and as nature is the manifestation of God so are all creatures the manifestation of the powers of nature. Those creatures that are nearest to God are out of the highest powers of nature. The spiritual materiality, or the element of heaven, produces the bodies, or heavenly flesh and blood of the angels, just as the elements of this world produce material flesh and blood. The spiritual materiality of heaven, in the kingdom of the fallen

angels, has gone through a variety of births or creations, till some of it came down to the grossness of air and water, and the hardness of rocks and stones.

A spark of the light and spirit of God is still in man. It has a strong and natural tendency towards the eternal light from which it came. This light is Christ in us. He is the woman's seed who from the beginning has been bruising the serpent's head. He did not begin to be a Saviour when He was born of Mary, for He is the eternal Word that has ever been in the hearts of men; the light which lighteth every man that cometh into the world. He is our Emmanuel, the God *with us* given unto Adam, and through him to all his offspring. To turn to the light and spirit *within us* is the only true turning to God. The Saviour of the world lies hid in man, for in the depth of the soul the Holy Trinity brought forth its own living image in the first created man, who was a living representation of Father, Son, and Holy Ghost. This was the Kingdom of God *within* him, and this made paradise *without* him. At the fall, man lost this Deity within him, but from the moment that God treasured up in Adam the *Bruiser of the serpent*, all the riches of the Divine nature came seminally back to him again, so that our own good spirit is the very Spirit of God.

The Christ within us, is that Christ whom we crucify. Adam and Eve were His first murderers. Eating of the earthly tree, was the death of the Christ of God,—the divine life in the soul of man. Christ would not have come into the world as the second Adam had He not been the life and perfection of the first Adam. God's delight in any creature is just as His well-beloved Son, the express image of His person, is found in that creature. This is true of angels as well as of men, for the angels need no redemption only because the life of Christ dwells in them.

The work of Christ is not to reconcile or appease an angry God. There is no wrath in God. He is an immutable will to all good. The reconciliation is to turn man from the bestial life, from nature which is without God. The effect of the fall of the angels was to deprive nature of God, that is to say, angels and fallen man turned to nature without God. Nature in itself is a desire, a universal want, which must be filled with God who is the *Universal All*. In this desire is a will to have something which it has not, and which it cannot seize. In the endeavour after what it seeks, it begets resistance. From these two properties arises a third which is called the 'wheel' or 'whirling

anguish of life.' These three great laws of matter and nature are seen in the attraction, equal resistance, and orbicular motion of the planets. Their existence as pointed out by Jacob Böhme has since been demonstrated by Sir Isaac Newton. These three properties were never to have been seen or known by any creature. Their denseness, and strife, and darkness were brought forth by God, in union with the light, and glory, and majesty of heaven, and only for this end, that God might be manifested in them. Nor could they have been known, nor the nature of any creature as it is in itself without God, had not the rebel angels turned their desire backward to search and find the original ground of life. This turning of their desire into the origin of life was their turning from the light of God. They discovered a new kind of substantiality; *nature fallen from God*. To these three properties are added other four; fire; the form of light and love; sound or understanding; and the state of peace and joy into which these are brought, which state is called the seventh property of nature. The fourth, fifth, and sixth, express the existence of the Deity in the first three properties of nature. Böhme explains the first chapter of Genesis, as a manifestation of the seven properties in the creation of this material temporal system; the last of which properties is the state of repose, the joyful Sabbath of the Deity. As Adam failed to be the restoring angel it was necessary that God should become man, "take a birth in fallen nature, be united to it and become the life of it, or the natural man must of all necessity be for ever and ever in the hell of his own hunger, anguish, contrariety, and self-torment; and all for this plain reason, because nature is and can be nothing else but this variety of self-torment, till the Deity is manifested and dwelling in it."

From this doctrine followed of necessity the perpetual inspiration of the human race. God lives and works in man. It is by His *inspiration* that we think those things that be good. It is not confined to individuals, nor given only on special occasions. The true Word of God is not the sacred writings, but the *in-spoken* living Word in the soul. The law was the schoolmaster to bring us to Christ, and the New Testament is but another schoolmaster—a light, like that of prophecy, to which we are to give heed until Christ the dawning of the day, or the day star, arise in our hearts. The sons of wisdom in the heathen world, were enlightened by the Spirit and Word of God. Christ was born in them. They were the Apostles of *the Christ within*, commissioned to call mankind from the pursuits of flesh and blood

to know themselves, the diguity of their nature, and the immortality of their souls.*

* Dean Stanley, in his *Lectures on the Eastern Church*, has expressed a wish that some historian would arise "who would trace the history of Alexandrian theology from its first dawning among the Greek Fathers to its influence on John Wesley." Such a historian would have an interesting and hitherto untrodden field. His history would be that of almost every manifestation of earnest religion in the Christian world. Law took the form of his theology from Böhme, but in substance it was Alexandrian. Wesley's theology was eclectic. It did not take the same form as Law's, but the really earnest part of it he had in common with Law.

The authorities for the first part of this Chapter are *Dr. Ullmann's Reformers before the Reformation*; *Vaughan's Hours with the Mystics*; *Tauler's Sermons* and the *Theologia Germanica*, both translated into English by *Susannah Winkworth*; *Schrader's Angelus Silesius und seine Mystik*; and *Upham's Life of Madame Guyon*. This account of Böhme's Theology is derived almost verbally from *Böhme's Aurora*, *De Tribus Principiis*, and the *Mysterium Magnum* in *Schiebler's* edition of *Böhme's Sämmtliche Werke*, with *William Law's* translation of Böhme's Works. The exposition of Law's Theology is founded on his *Way to Divine Knowledge*, his *Spirit of Prayer*, and his *Spirit of Love*. A valuable collection of Theosophical writings to which the writer of this has been greatly indebted, is a *Memorial of Law, Jacob Böhme, and other Theosophers* by *Christopher Walton* (London, 1854, printed for private circulation.) The writer has been duly warned by Mr. Walton that what is here written on Jacob Böhme is a *mass of confusion*, and that he must study Böhme for the next seven years before he can get "an intellectual glimpse of the great landscape," for "Böhme can not be touched by blind reason and mere earthly understanding." Mr. Walton is preparing a work in elucidation of "Böhme's seven properties of the centre of nature, or the first eternal mathematical point of mental essence." He says that "the discourses of Böhme profess to be a strict demonstration from the very essence, or ground of being of the several subjects they profess to treat of: being, in short, a fundamental demonstration of Christianity."

CHAPTER XI.

SUFETISM.

THE only religion in the world in which we should have concluded, before examination, that the Pantheistic spirit was impossible, is the religion of Mahomet. Islamism is repellant of all speculation about God, and all exercise of reason in matters pertaining to faith. The supreme God of the Arabian prophet was not a Being from whom all things emanated, and whom men were to serve by contemplation, but an absolute Will whom all creation was to obey. He was separated from everything, above everything, the Ruler of all things, the Sovereign of the universe. It was the mission of Moses to teach the unity of God in opposition to the idolatry of the nations which, through beholding the worshipful in nature, had put the created in the place of the Creator. For this purpose all images of the Divine Being were forbidden to the Hebrews, yet their prophets made use of all the glories of creation to set forth the Divine Majesty and the splendor of God. His chariots were fire. He walked on the wings of the wind. He clothed Himself with light as with a garment. He was in heaven and on earth, and in the uttermost parts of the sea, yea even in hell. Neither matter, suffering nor impurity excluded Him from any region of the universe. Jesus Christ, even more than the Hebrew prophets, directed His disciples to the natural world that He might show them the Father; nor did He hesitate to point to natural objects as symbols of God and emblems of His glory. S. John tells us of the rapture with which he delighted to repeat the message he heard from Jesus that 'God is Light;' and in setting forth the Divinity of the *Logos* he pronounced this light to be 'the life of men.' Mahometanism was at least as clear in its doctrine of the Divine Unity as either Judaism or Christianity, and more rigid than either of these in excluding nature from any place in religion. It recognized no symbols. It learned nothing of God from creation. The Supreme One had spoken by His prophet, and His word was the essence of religion. Again, Mahometanism is a religion of dogmas and ceremonies. It rests on authority. Its doctrines are definite. The *Koran* is infallible; the words are not only inspired but dictated in Heaven. To find Pantheism

in Mahometanism is to find it in a system which of all others is the most alien to its spirit. But in this as in all other religions we have the orthodox who abide by the creeds and the ceremonies,—who repose implicitly on the authority of a person, a book or a church; and those of a free spirit who demand the exercise of reason, or look for divine intuitions in individual souls—the one saying religion is a creed, the other it is a life—the one saying God has spoken to some of old, the other saying He is speaking to us now. The latter class is represented in Mahometanism by the Sufis, who are its philosophers, its poets, its Mystics, its enthusiasts. To give a history of them is not easy, for they are divided into many sects, nor is it less difficult to find their origin, and the genealogy of their doctrines. Mahometan authors admit that there were Sufis in the earliest times of their religion, probably cotemporary with the prophet himself. Some trace the origin of the Sufis to India, and identify them with the mystical sects of Brahmanism. Others find in Sufeyism unmistakable remnants of the old Persian faith. This is the more likely hypothesis. The spirit of Parseeism, which survived after the victory of the Mahometan faith, again awoke and following a law, which can be traced in many similar cases, gave birth to the Puritanism* of Mahometanism. The Sufis thought that they believed as Mahomet and wished to prove that he also was a Sufi; an effort the accomplishment of which to all but themselves has appeared impossible. “Sufeyism; says an English writer” † has arisen from the bosom of Mahometanism as a vague protest of the human soul, in its intense longing after a purer creed. On certain tenets of the Koran the Sufis have erected their own system, professing indeed to reverence its authority as a divine revelation, but in reality substituting for it the oral voice of the teacher, or the secret dreams of the Mystic. Dissatisfied with the barren letter of the Koran, Sufeyism appeals to human consciousness, and from our nature’s felt wants seeks to set before us nobler hopes than a gross Mahometan Paradise can fulfil.”

“The Great Creator” says Sir John Malcolm, “is, according to the doctrine of the Sufis, diffused over all creation. He exists everywhere and in everything. They compare the emanation of His divine essence or spirit to the rays of the sun, which they conceive are continually darted forth and re-absorbed. It is for this re-absorption into the divine essence, to which their immortal part belongs, that they continually sigh. They believe

* *Sufi* means pure.

† Mr. Cowell.

that the soul of man, and that the principle of life which exists through all nature is not only *from* God but *of* God; and hence these doctrines which their adversaries have held to be most profane, as they are calculated to establish a degree of equality of nature between the created and the Creator."

This brief description, not only fully declares the character of the Sufi doctrines concerning God, but by the illustration of the sun and its rays points at the same time to their origin. God is light, and that light is all which is. The phenomenal world is mere illusion, a vision which the senses take to be a something, but which is nothing. All things are what they are by an eternal necessity, and all events so predestined that the existence of evil is impossible. On these subjects some of the Sufi sects manifest a wild fanaticism which has caused them to be charged with lawlessness, but their more frequent character is that of extravagant Mystics. We are come from God and we long to return to Him again, is their incessant cry. But while acknowledging a separation from God which they regard as the worst of miseries, they yet deny that the soul of man has ever been divided from God. The words 'separated' and 'divided' may not convey the meaning of the corresponding Persian words, nor make clear to us the distinction which it is intended should be conveyed. Perhaps there is here logically a contradiction; for at one time it is declared that God created all things by His breath, and everything therefore is both the Creator and created; and at another time this unity of God and the creature, is limited to the enlightened soul. The difficulty is one we have met before, and though admitting the inadequacy of the words we may yet understand or at least conjecture the meaning. To be re-absorbed into the glorious essence of God is the great object of the Sufi. To attain this he has to pass through four stages. The first is that of obedience to the laws of the prophet. The second is that state of spiritual struggling attained through this obedience when he lives more in the spirit than in the letter. In the third he arrives at knowledge and is inspired. In the fourth he attains to truth and is completely re-united with the Deity. In this state he loses all will and personality. He is no more creature but Creator, and when he worships God it is God worshipping Himself.

Dr. Tholuck, in his book on *Sufismus*, has shown by many passages from Mahometan authors that the Sufi doctrines are identical with those of the Brahmans and Budhists, the Neo-Platonists, the Beghards and Beguines. There is the same union

of man with God, the same emanation of all things from God and the same final absorption of all things into the Divine Essence, —and with these doctrines a Mahometan predestination which makes all a necessary evolution of the Divine Essence. The creation of the creature, the fall of those who have departed from God and their final return, are all, events preordained by an absolute necessity. The chief school of Arabian philosophy, that of Gazzali, passed over to Sufeyism by the same reasoning which led Plotinus to his mystical theology. After long enquiries for some ground on which to base the certainty of our knowledge, Gazzali was led to reject entirely all belief in the senses. He then found it equally difficult to be certified of the accuracy of the conclusions of reason, for there may be, he thought, some faculty higher than reason which, if we possessed, would show the uncertainty of reason, as reason now shows the uncertainty of the senses. He was left in scepticism, and saw no escape but in the Sufi union with Deity. There alone can man know what is true by becoming the truth itself. 'I was forced,' he said, 'to return to the admission of intellectual notions as the bases of all certitude. This however was not by systematic reasoning and accumulation of proofs, but by a flash of light which God sent into my soul! For whoever imagines that truth can only be rendered evident by proofs, places narrow limits to the wide compassion of the Creator.'

Bustami, a Mystic of the ninth century, said he was a sea without a bottom, without beginning, and without end. Being asked what is the throne of God? He answered, I am the throne of God—What is the table on which the divine decrees are written? I am that table—What is the pen of God—The word by which God created all things? I am the pen—What is Abraham, Moses and Jesus? I am Abraham, Moses and Jesus—What are the angels Gabriel, Michael, Israfil? I am Gabriel, Michael, Israfil, for whatever comes to true being is absorbed into God, and thus is God. Again, in another place, Bustami cries, Praise to me, I am truth. I am the true God, Praise to me, I must be celebrated by divine praise.

Jelaleddin a Sufi poet thus sings of himself. :—

"I am the gospel, the Psalter, the Koran,
I am *Usa* and *Lat*—(Arabic deities)—Bell and the Dragon
Into two and seventy sects, is the world divided,
Yet only one God, the faithful who believe in Him am I,
Thou knowest what are fire, water, air and earth,
Fire, water, air and earth, all am I,
Lies and truth, good, bad, hard and soft,

54/ Knowledge, solitude, virtue, faith,
 The deepest ground of hell, the highest torment of the flames,
 The highest paradise,
 The earth and what is therein,
 The angels and the devils, spirit and man, am I;
 What is the goal of speech, O tell it Schems Tebrisi?
 The goal of sense? This:—THE WORLD SOUL AM I†

Mr. Vaughan, in his "Hours with the Mystics," quotes the following verses from Persian poets:—

✓ "All sects but multiply the I and Thou;
 This I and Thou belong to partial being.
 When I and Thou, and several being vanish,
 Then mosque and church shall find thee nevermore.
 Our individual life is but a phantom;
 Make clear thine eye, and see reality."—MAHMUD.

"On earth thou see'st His actions; but His spirit
 Makes heaven His seat, and all infinity,
 Space, and duration boundless do Him service;
 As Eden's rivers dwell and serve in Eden."—IBID.

"Man, what thou art is hidden from thyself;
 Know'st not that morning, mid-day and the eve
 Are all within thee? The ninth heaven art Thou;
 And from the spheres into the roar of time
 Didst fall ere-while, Thou art the brush that painted
 The hues of all the world—the light of life
 That ranged its glory in the nothingness."

"Joy! joy! I triumph now; no more I know
 Myself as simply me. I burn with love.
 The centre is within me, and its wonder
 Lies as a circle everywhere about me.
 Joy! joy! no mortal thought can fathom me.
 I am the merchant and the pearl at once.
 Lo! time and space lie crouching at my feet.
 Joy! joy! when I would revel in a rapture.
 I plunge into myself, and all things know."—FERRIDODDIN.

"Are we fools? We are God's captivity.
 Are we wise? We are His promenade.
 Are we sleeping? We are drunk with God.
 Are we waking? Then we are His heralds.
 Are we weeping? Then His clouds of wrath.
 Are we laughing? Flashes of His love."—JELALEDDIN.

"Every night God frees the host of spirits;
 Frees them every night from fleshly prison.
 Then the soul is neither slave, nor master,
 Nothing knows the bondsman of his bondage;
 Nothing knows the lord of all his lordship.
 Gone from such a night, is eating sorrow;
 Gone, the thoughts that question good or evil.
 Then without distraction, or division,
 In this One the spirit sinks and slumbers."—IBID.*

† Compare this with what Krishna says.—Page 21.

* Compare this with what is said on Brahmanism at the bottom of page 22.

Tholuck quotes this verse from a Dervish Breviary :—

"Yesterday I beat the kettle-drum of dominion,
I pitched my tent on the highest throne,
I drank, crowned by the Beloved,
The wine of unity from the cup of the Almighty."

Some verses from Jami's "Salaman and Absal" which has been recently translated into English may conclude this notice of the Sufis. The subject of the poem is the joys of divine love—the pleasures of the religious life as opposed to the delusive fascinations of the life of sense. In the Prologue the poet thus addresses the Deity :—

42 ✓
52
"Time it is
To unfold Thy perfect beauty. I would be
Thy lover, and Thine only—I, mine eyes
Sealed in the light of Thee to all but Thee,
Yea, in the revelation of Thyself
Self-lost, and conscience-quit of good and evil.
Thou movest under all the forms of truth,
Under the forms of all created things ;
Look whence I will, still nothing I discern
But Thee in all the universe, in which
Thyself Thou dost invest, and through the eyes
Of man, the subtle censor scrutinize.
To Thy Harim *INDIVIDUALITY*
No entrance finds—no word of *this* and *that* ;
Do Thou my separate and derived self
Make One with Thy Essential! Leave me room
On that Divan which leaves no room for two ;
Lest, like the simple kurd of whom they tell,
I grow perplexed, oh God, 'twixt 'I' and 'Thou.'
If I—this dignity and wisdom whence ?
If Thou—then what this abject impotence ?"

The fable of the kurd is then told in verse. A kurd perplexed in the ways of fortune left the desert for the city, where he saw the multitudes all in commotion, every one hastening hither and thither on his special business, and being weary with travel the kurd lay down to sleep, but fearing lest among so many people he should not know himself when he awoke he tied a pumpkin round his foot. A knave who heard him deliberating about the difficulty of knowing himself again, took the pumpkin off the kurd's foot and tied it round his own. When the kurd awoke he was bewildered not knowing

"Whither I be I or no,
If I—the pumpkin why on you ?
If you—then where am I, and who ?

The Prologue continues :—

"Oh God! this poor bewildered kurd am I,
Than any kurd more helpless!—Oh, do Thou,
Strike down a ray of light into my darkness!
Turn by Thy grace these dregs into pure wine,

To recreate the spirits of the good ;
 Or if not that, yet, as the little cup*
 Whose name I go by, not unworthy found,
 To pass thy salutary vintage round !”

The poet is answered by the *Beloved*:—

“ No longer think of rhyme, but think of *Me* !”—
 Of whom ?—Of Him whose palace the soul is,
 And treasure-house—who notices and knows
 Its income and out-going and then comes
 To fill it when the stranger is departed.
 Whose shadow being kings—whose attributes
 The type of theirs—their wrath and favor His—
 Lo ! in the celebration of His glory
 The King Himself comes on me unaware,
 And suddenly arrests me for His own.
 Wherefore once more I take—best quitted else—
 The field of verse, to chant that double praise,
 And in that memory refresh my soul
 Until I grasp the skirt of living Presence.”

The story is of a Shah or king who ruled over Ionia, which with the Persians meant Greece. This king lived in great prosperity, but one thing was wanting to complete his happiness; he had no son. One day he expressed his regrets to a sage whom he held for his counsellor. The sage told him of a man who “craving for the curse of children,” went to the Shiekh beseeching him to pray for him to Allah, that he might have a son. The Shiekh told him to leave that wholly in the hand of Allah, but no, he would have a son. The Shiekh prayed and his prayer was answered. The son took to evil company and disgraced his father. The sage could not persuade the king that he was happy without a son. Salaman was given him from the pure heaven. As he had no mother, Absal a young maiden was chosen to nurse him. Salaman grew up a youth of marvellous beauty, and of wonderful gifts. None could equal him in the royal games, none could aim the arrow so unerringly as he, and when he summoned his “Houri-faced musicians” to the banquet hall, he it was that with the reed or harp governed all and made them cry for sorrow or for joy as he willed. His wisdom was the marvel of all who knew him, and his munificence was compared to that of the sea which profusely heaves up its pearls and its shells. When Salaman had reached the prime of manhood, Absal tried to ensnare him:—

“ Thus day by day did Absal tempt Salaman,
 And by and bye her wiles began to work.
 Her eyes, Narcissus stole his sleep—their lashes
 Pierc’d to his heart—out from her locks a snake

* *Jami* means a cup.

Bit him—and bitter, bitter on his tongue
 Became the memory of her honey lip.
 He saw the ringlet restless on her cheek,
 And he too quiver'd with desire ; his tears
 Turn'd crimson from her cheek, whose musky spot
 Infected all his soul with melancholy.
 Love drew him from behind the veil, where yet
 Withheld him better resolution—
 'Oh, should the food I long for, tasted, turn
 Unwholesome, and if all my life to come
 Should sicken from one momentary sweet !'

For a full year Salaman and Absal rejoiced together and thought their pleasure would never end. The king and the sage were sadly troubled for the fall of Salaman. The king reproached him. The sage reasoned with him, with all the wisdom of a Plato. Salaman confessed the right, but pleaded that he had no will for choice. He fled with Absal. They came to the sea-shore and sailed till they reached an island of wonderful beauty. The king is in great sorrow for his absent son, who overcome by passion has left the kingdom to which he is heir. Salaman, unsatisfied, returns to his father and is forgiven. He and Absal go to the desert and kindle a pile. They both walk into the fire. Absal is consumed. Salaman laments the loss of her. The king, seeing his sad condition, consults the sage, who speaks to Salaman of Zuhrah the celestial beauty :—

“ Salaman listen'd, and inclin'd—again
 Repeated, inclination ever grew ;
 Until THE SAGE beholding in his soul
 The Spirit quicken, so effectually
 With Zuhrah wrought, that she reveal'd herself
 In her pure beauty to Salaman's soul,
 And washing Absal's image from his breast,
 There reign'd instead. Celestial beauty seen,
 He left the earthly ; and, once come to know
 Eternal love, he let the mortal go.”

THE EPILOGUE.

“ Under the outward form of any story
 An inner meaning lies—this story now
 Completed, do thou of its mystery
 (Whereto the wise hath found himself a way)
 Have thy desire—no tale of I and Thou,
 Though I and Thou be its interpreters.
 What signifies THE SHAH ? and what THE SAGE ?
 And what SALAMAN not of woman born ?
 And what ABSAL who drew him to desire ?
 And what the KINGDOM that awaited him
 When he had drawn his garment from her hand ?
 What means that FIERY PILE ? and what THE SEA ?
 And what that heavenly ZUHRAH who at last
 Clear'd ABSAL from the mirror of his soul ?
 Learn part by part the mystery from me ;

All ear from head to foot and understanding be.
 The incomparable Creator, when this world.
 He did create, created first of all
 The *first intelligence*—first of a chain
 Of ten intelligences, of which the last
 Sole Agent is in this our Universe,
 Active intelligence so call'd, the one
 Distributor of evil and of good,
 Of joy and sorrow. Himself apart from matter,

In essence and in energy—His treasure
 Subject to no such talisman—He yet
 Hath fashion'd all that is—material form,
 And spiritual sprung from Him—by Him
 Directed all, and in His bounty drown'd.
 Therefore is He that Firman-issuing SHAH
 To whom the world was subject. But because
 What He distributes to the Universe
 Himself from still higher power receives,
 The wise, and all who comprehend aright,
 Will recognise that higher in THE SAGE.

His the Prime Spirit that, spontaneously
 Projected by the tenth intelligence,
 Was from no womb of matter reproduced
 A special essence called the Soul—a Child
 Fresh sprung from heaven in raiment undefiled
 Of sensual taint, and therefore call'd Salaman.

And who Absal?—The lust-adoring body,
 Slave to the blood and sense—through whom the Soul,
 Although the body's very life it be,
 Does yet imbibe the knowledge and desire
 Of things of sense; and these united thus
 By such a tie God only can unloose,
 Body and soul are lovers each of other.

What is the Sea on which they sail'd?—the Sea
 Of animal desire—the sensual abyss,
 Under whose waters lies a world of being
 Swept far from God in that submersion.

And wherefore was Absal in that Isle
 Deceived in her delight, and that Salaman
 Fell short of his desire?—that was to show
 How passion tires, and how with time begins
 The folding of the carpet of desire.

And what the turning of Salaman's heart
 Back to THE SHAH, and looking to the throne
 Of pomp and glory? What but the return
 Of the lost soul to its true parentage,
 And back from carnal error looking up
 Repentant to its intellectual throne.

What is the Fire?—Ascetic discipline,
 That burns away the animal alloy,
 Till all the dross of matter be consumed,
 And the essential Soul, its raiment clean
 Of mortal taint, be left. But forasmuch
 As, any life-long habit so consumed,
 May well recur a pang for what is lost
 Therefore THE SAOJ set in Salaman's eyes

A soothing phantom of the past, but still
 Told of a better Venus, till his soul
 She fill'd, and blotted out his mortal love,
 For what is Zuhrah ?—That divine perfection,
 Wherewith the soul inspir'd and all array'd
 In intellectual light is royal blest,
 And mounts the throne, and wears the crown, and reigns
 Lord of the empire of humanity.
 This is the meaning of this mystery,
 Which to know wholly ponder in thy heart,
 Till all its ancient secret be enlarged.
 Enough—the written summary I close,
 And set my seal :

THE TRUTH GOD ONLY KNOWS.*"

* The following fable from Jelaeddin will illustrate the Sufi idea of identity which, under the image of love, is set forth in Salaman and Absal : "One knocked at the Beloved's door ; and a voice asked from within 'Who is there ?' and he answered 'It is I.' Then the voice said, 'This house will not hold me and thee.' And the door was not opened. Then went the lover into the desert, and fasted and prayed in solitude. And after a year he returned, and knocked again at the door. And again the voice asked, 'Who is there ?' and he said, 'It is thyself !'—and the door was opened to him."

The quotations in this chapter are made from *M. Schmoelder's Essai sur les Ecoles Philosophes chez les Arabes* ; *Dr. Tholuck's Sufismus* ; *Sir John Malcolm's History of Persia* ; *Vaughan's Hours with the Mystics* ; *Persian Literature*, one of the *Oxford Essays for 1855*, by *E. B. Cowell of Magdalene Hall*, and an English translation of *Jami's Salaman and Absal*.

CHAPTER XII.

IDEALISTIC PHILOSOPHY.

THE title of this chapter is less correct than that of any of its predecessors. An idealist philosophy has been at the base of all the systems we have reviewed. A history of Pantheism would be for the most part a history of Idealism. It is not however without reason that we apply the term Idealistic Philosophy specially to this chapter, for here we find those doctrines concerning God and creation, which have so generally prevailed in the world, relegated entirely to the province of philosophy, supported by vigorous reasoning and an effort made for the absolute demonstration of their truth. And all this is done on the only ground on which it could be done, that of a pure Idealism.

DES CARTES.—The founder of modern ideal philosophy was *René Des Cartes*, a French nobleman. He flourished about the beginning of the seventeenth century, and was distinguished in his life-time as a mathematician, metaphysician, natural philosopher, and soldier. Though an Idealist in philosophy he was no visionary, but an experienced open-eyed man of the world, who well knew that

‘All theory is grey,

But green is the golden tree of life,

Despairing of being able to extricate philosophy from the confusion into which it had fallen, he resolved to apply to mental phenomena the same principle which Bacon had applied to physics, that of examination, observation and experience. But before this could be done the authority of two great powers had to be put aside, that of Aristotle, and that of the Church. The influence of the former was already passing away. The new life of the sixteenth century had thrown off the bondage of what was called Aristotelianism. Some theologians there were who still defended the philosophy of Aristotle, but it had met its death blow before the appearance of Des Cartes. How he stood in relation to the Church is not so easily determined. He openly professed the Catholic faith, and declared his object to be, the discovery of grounds in reason by which he could defend and

uphold the doctrines which he received on the Church's authority. This complacency towards the Church is by some regarded as only a polite method of keeping clear of the Ecclesiastical Doctors and the Inquisition; but modern Catholics take Des Cartes seriously and represent him as a philosopher whose great object was to refute, on Protestant grounds, that is, on principles of reason, the heresies of the Reformation.

Aristotle and the Church being thus put aside, the first enquiry was for a ground of certitude. Does anything exist? It does not prove that anything is, because some one has said that it is. Nor are the senses sufficient to testify to the existence of anything, for they may be deceived. So too with our reasonings, even those of mathematics are not to be relied on, for perhaps the human mind cannot receive truth. There is left nothing but doubt. We must posit everything as uncertain; and yet this cannot be; for the *I* which thus posits must be a true existence. He who thus doubts of all things; he who thus enquires after truth must himself *be*. So reasoned Des Cartes, *I doubt* then must there be a subject doubting; *I think*, therefore, *I exist*; or, more accurately, *I think*, and that is equivalent to saying, *I am a 'thinking something.'*

The clearness of this idea of self-existence evinces its truth, and from this Des Cartes drew the principle that whatever the mind perceives clearly and distinctly is true. Now we have a clear and distinct idea of a Being infinite, eternal, omnipotent, and omnipresent. There must then be such a Being—necessary existence is contained in the idea. If it were possible for that Being not to be, that very possibility would be an imperfection, and cannot therefore belong to what is perfect. None but the perfect Being could give us this idea of infinite perfection, and since we live, having this idea in us, the Being who put it in us, must Himself be. We are the imperfect. We are the finite. We are the caused. There must be One who is the complement of our being, the infinity of our finitude, the perfection of our imperfection; a mind which gives us that which we have not from ourselves. Des Cartes eliminated from the idea of the Divine Being everything which implied imperfection. He was careful to distinguish between God and His creation. He left the finite standing over against the Infinite—the creature absolutely distinct in substance and essence from the Creator. He did not take the step which annihilated the one to make room for the other, and yet he suggested it. Unconsciously, and even in spite of himself, he is carried on towards conclusions from

which he shrinks, and to which he refuses to go forward. 'When I come to consider the particular views of Des Cartes,' says M. Saisset, "upon the perfection of God and the relations of the Creator with the world and with men; when I endeavour to link his thoughts, and to follow out their consequences, I find that they do not form a homogeneous whole, I believe that I can detect the conflict of contrary thoughts and tendencies.' Des Cartes had got on the track of Parmenides, but like Plato and S. Anselm he refused to advance. He preferred a theology not logically consistent to the theology of the Eleatics.

There are but two starting points of knowledge. Either we begin with matter, and assuming the reality of the visible world, we go on to the proof of other existences, but in this way we can never demonstrate the existence of mind *by itself*: or we begin with mind, and assuming it as the first certain existence, we go on to the proof of others, but in this way we never legitimately reach the proof of the existence of matter *by itself*. The existence of mind was, to Des Cartes, an undoubted existence, *I think* is a present consciousness, and the existence of an infinite mind was a lawful conclusion from the fact of the existence of a finite mind; but since the senses were distrusted how was Des Cartes ever to prove the existence of matter? Only by means of the mind. We have no knowledge of the corporeal, but through the mental; that we have a body is not a self-evident truth, but that we have a mind, is. Yet Des Cartes wanted to have an external world, and as he could not prove its existence he took it on trust as other men do. As he had taken the existence of the mind independently of the body, why should not body exist independently of mind? Even on the principle of clear ideas we have some knowledge of matter, for the thinking substance is different from that which is the immediate subject of extension and the accidents of extension, such as figure, place, and motion.

Des Cartes was satisfied to have proved the existence of God, of mind, and of matter. The first is the uncreated substance, self-existent and eternal; the other two are created substances whose existence is derived from God. Their creation was no necessary act of Deity; their existence in no way flowed necessarily from His existence—but in the exercise of His own free will He created them. Mind is a something which thinks, and matter a something which is extended. God, too, thinks. He is incorporeal, yet we must not deny Him the attribute of extension, so far as that attribute can be separated from any

idea of imperfection. Extension being pre-eminently an attribute of matter, the transference of it to Deity in any form seems to betray a concealed conjecture in Des Cartes' mind, of some ultimate connection between the spiritual and the material. He had denied it, he had fought against the conclusion to which his method led him, but in spite of his protestation, the tendency is manifest at every step he takes. The attribute of matter has been transferred to God, and now consciously, but with no thought of the result, the attributes of God are transferred to the material world. Des Cartes contemplates the universe, and he is overwhelmed with thoughts of infinity and eternity. Is not the universe infinite? It is at least indefinite, but this word is used only that the other word may be reserved for Deity. The universe is infinite. There can be no void beyond immensity. Illimitable extension is one of our necessary thoughts. It impinges on our idea of infinity, if it is not one with it. But if the universe is infinite, why not eternal? If unlimited in space, why limited in time? Des Cartes having placed the origin of the universe in the free will of God, was compelled to give it a beginning, but the question was urgent;—why should it have a beginning? If it is necessary to constitute infinite space, why is it not also necessary to constitute infinite time? The necessity for a beginning deprives it of the existence of eternity past; but we may without danger, thought Des Cartes, allow it *eternity to come*. We have thus an infinite Being, and an infinite universe. At some point or other these two infinities must be only one. Creation is indeed a work, but unlike a human work it cannot exist without the continual presence of the Worker.* It requires for its existence a continual repetition of the Creator's act. God is not at a distance from His universe. He is immanent therein—the Executor of all laws, the Doer of all works, the ever present Agency that pervades and upholds the infinite All.

* This idea has been beautifully expressed by an eminent preacher:—‘A human mechanist may leave the machine he has constructed to work without his further personal superintendence, because when he leaves it, God’s laws take it up, and by their aid the materials of which the machine is made retain their solidity, the steel continues elastic, the vapour keeps its expansive power. But when God has constructed *His* machine of the universe, He cannot so leave it, or any the minutest part of it, in its immensity and intricacy of movement, to itself; for, if He retire, there is no second God to take care of this machine. Not from a single atom of matter can He who made it for a moment withdraw His superintendence and support. Each successive moment, all over the world, the act of creation must be repeated.’—*Sermon on Spiritual Influence by the Rev. John Catrid.*

SPINOZA.—Des Cartes died a Catholic, receiving in his last hours the sacraments of the Church. Though in his life-time persecuted for an Atheist, his memory is now revered throughout Christendom. Not so with Des Cartes' disciple, Benedict Spinoza. The Germans indeed have done something to rescue his memory from the reproaches of nearly two centuries, but the time has not yet come for either Catholic or Protestant theologians to judge him impartially.

Herder and Schleiermacher have wished to claim Spinoza as indeed a Christian, but their claims are rejected not only by the Churches but by the open enemies of Christianity. Whatever may be said of his opinions, all agree to represent him as a Christian in heart and life; an example of patient endurance; a man full of faith in the Divine Goodness, preferring to bring forth the fruits of the Spirit, to bearing the bitter apples of wrath and malice, strife and discord, by which the professed Christians of his day were distinguished.* It would be no great error to accord to Spinoza the name of Christian. He certainly was no enemy to rational Christianity. Nothing but ignorance could ever have classed him with the French Encyclopedists; and that is only a more culpable ignorance which classes him with any sect of materialists.

Of Spinoza's system, Bayle says that 'but few have studied it, and of those who have studied it but few have understood it, and most are discouraged by the difficulties, and impenetrable abstractions which attend it.' Voltaire says 'that the reason why so few people understand Spinoza is because Spinoza did not understand himself.' It is now presumed that Spinoza may be understood, and notwithstanding the great authority of Voltaire it is more than probable that he understood himself. Spinoza was avowedly a teacher of Cartesianism. His first writings were expository of Des Cartes' philosophy. To these he added appendices, explaining wherein he differed from that philosopher. In truth, Spinoza was consistent, and went resolutely to the conclusion before which Des Cartes stood appalled. His doctrines were purely Cartesian. Some who would save the master and sacrifice the disciple will deny this. It has been maintained that he owed to Des Cartes only the form, and that his principles were derived from other sources. The Cabbala has

* Yes, I repeat with S. John, that it is justice and charity which are the most certain signs, the only signs of the true Catholic faith; justice, charity, these are the true fruits of the Holy Spirit. Wherever these are, there is Christ, and, where these are not, there Christ cannot be.—*Letter to Albert Burgh.*

been named as a probable source, and the influence of Averroes on Maimonides and the Jews of the middle ages, has been brought forward as another.* That Spinoza had learned all the philosophies of the Rabbis before he was excommunicated from the synagogue of the Jews is probable; but there is no need to seek the origin of Spinozism in any other system, but that in which it had its natural growth; the philosophy of Des Cartes. Spinoza's doctrines are indigenous to the soil of Idealism.†

* Article by Emile Saisset in the 'Revue des deux Mondes', 1862.

† To understand Spinoza it is absolutely necessary to attend to his DEFINITIONS. The following are those of the first book of the *Ethica*. The subject of the first book is *God*.

I. I understand, by *cause of itself*, that whose essence implies existence, or that the nature of which can be conceived as existing.

II. A thing is called *finite* in its kind when it can be limited by something else of the same nature. For instance, a body is called finite because we always conceive one greater; so also a thought is limited by another thought; but the body is not limited by thought, nor thought by the body.

III. I understand, by *substance*, that which is in itself, and conceived by itself, that is to say, that of which the concept can be formed without having need of the concept of anything else.

IV. I understand by *attribute* that which the reason conceives in the substance as constituting its essence.

V. I understand by *mode* the affections of substance, or that which is in another thing, and is conceived by that thing.

VI. I understand by *God* a Being absolutely infinite, that is to say, a substance constituted by an infinity of attributes, of which each expresses an eternal and infinite essence.

EXPLANATION.—*I say absolutely infinite, and not infinite in its kind; for everything which is infinite only in its kind can be denied an infinity of attributes; but as to being absolutely infinite, all that which expresses an essence, and does not include any negation, belongs to its essence.*

VII. A thing is *free* when it exists by the sole necessity of its nature, and is determined to action only by itself; a thing is necessary, or rather constrained, when it is determined by another thing to exist and to act according to a certain determined law.

VIII. By *eternity* I understand existence itself, in so far as it is conceived as resulting necessarily from the sole definition of the eternal thing.

EXPLANATION.—Such an existence in fact is conceived as the essence itself of the thing which is considered, and consequently it cannot be extended into time or duration, even though duration be conceived as having neither beginning nor end.

The following are AXIOMS :—

I. Everything which is, is in itself or in something else.

II. A thing which cannot be conceived by another, must be conceived by itself.

III. A definite cause being given, the effect follows necessarily; and on the contrary if any definite cause is not given, it is impossible that the effect follows.

IV. The knowledge of the effect depends on the knowledge of the cause, and implies it.

V. Things which have between them nothing in common cannot be con-

We may take as Spinoza's starting point his theory of knowledge, which had its foundation in the Cartesian principle of the truth of clear ideas. Our modes of perception he reduced to four :—

I. That which we have from hear-say, or from any sign which may be agreed upon.

II. That which we have from vague experience, that is, from experience which is undetermined by the intellect, but is only called an idea, because it comes as it were by accident, and we have no other test which opposes it, and so it remains as it were unshaken with us.

III. That where the essence is concluded from another thing but not adequately, which takes place when we gather the cause from any effect, or when it is concluded from something universal, which is always accompanied by some property.

IV. Lastly there is that perception where a thing is perceived by its own essence alone, or by the knowledge of its proximate cause.

Spinoza illustrates each of these by an example. "By *hearsay* only I know my birth-day, that I had such parents and similar things concerning which I never doubted. By *vague experience* I know that I shall die; I affirm this because I have seen others like me die, although all may not have lived the same space of time, nor died the same

ceived by each other, or in other words the concept of the one does not include the concept of the other.

VI. A true idea must agree with its ideate (object).

VII. When a thing can be conceived as not existing, its essence does not include existence.

The following are some of the PROPOSITIONS :—

There cannot be in nature two or more substances of the same nature; in other words, of the same attributes.

A substance cannot be produced by another substance.

Existence belongs to the nature of substance.

The essence of things, produced by God, does not include existence.

All substance is necessarily infinite.

God, that is to say a substance constituted by an infinity of attributes, exists necessarily.

Substance actually infinite is indivisible.

There cannot exist, and we cannot conceive, any other substance but God.

All that which is, is in God, and nothing can be, nor can be conceived without God.

From the necessity of the Divine nature, must flow an infinity of things infinitely modified.

God is the immanent and not the transient cause of all things.

The existence of God and His essence, are one and the same thing.

Understanding whether finite or infinite, as for instance, will, desire, love, &c., must be referred to nature produced, and not to nature producing.

death. Then by vague experience I also know that oil is a fit aliment for nourishing a flame, and that water is capable of extinguishing it; I know also that a dog is an animal which barks; that a man is an animal who reasons; and in this way are known almost all things which belong to common life. From *another thing* we conclude in this manner—since we clearly perceive that our body feels and nothing else, thence we may clearly conclude that the soul is united to the body, which union is the cause of sensation, but what that sensation and union are, we are not able absolutely to understand; or after that I have known the nature of sight, and at the same time that it has this property, that we see the same thing at a great distance to be less than if we looked at it nearer; whence we infer that the sun is larger than it appears, and so with other like things. Lastly, by *the sole essence* of a thing, the thing is perceived; whence from this that I know anything, I know what it is to know anything; or from this that I have known the essence of the soul—I know that it is united to a body. By the same cognition we know that two and three make five, and if two lines are given parallel to a third, these are also parallel to each other. But those things which I have hitherto been able to understand in this way are very few.”

That these things may be better understood he gives a further illustration. “Three numbers are given to find a fourth, which shall be to the third as the second is to the first. Merchants say they know what to do to find the fourth, as they have not forgotten the operation they learned from their schoolmasters; though it is only a bare rule without demonstration. Others make a simple axiom, borrowed from experience, where the fourth number lies open, as in 2, 4, 8, 6, where they find that the second being multiplied into the third, and the product divided by the first, the quotient is 6, and when they see the same number produced, which they had known without operation to be the proportional one, they thence conclude that the operation is always good for finding the fourth proportional number. But mathematicians know by the demonstration of the nineteenth Proposition of the seventh book of Euclid’s elements what numbers are mutually proportional by the very nature and property of that proposition; so the number which results from the first and fourth is equal to that which results from the second and third. And yet they do not see the absolute proportionality of the numbers given, or if they see it, it is not by virtue of the proposition in Euclid, but intuitively and without performing any operation.”

Intuitive perception is thus the ground of certitude. That is most surely known, which we know by *its sole essence alone*. Hereby the simplest truths are manifest to the mind. They are the true ideas which correspond to their *ideates* or objects. Now the first and most evident of these, is that of an infinitely perfect Being, whose existence is necessary. Des Cartes defined this Being as an infinite substance, but he placed beside Him the infinite universe, which was a created infinite substance. Spinoza could find place for only one Infinite, so he denied to creation the character of substance. It is dependent. It does not exist in and by itself. It requires for the conception of it the conception of some other existence as its cause. It is therefore not a substance, but only a mode of that substance which is infinite. God being the absolutely infinite, there can be no substance besides Him, for every attribute that expresses the essence of substance must belong to Him. Here Spinoza first separates from Des Cartes. What one calls created substances, the other calls modes. Apparently this is only a verbal difference, and it may be that in reality it is nothing more. Precisely as we understand this, will be our interpretation of Spinoza's system. If it is only verbal what matters it by what names created things are called, so long as the Creator is distinguished from the creation? And why is the latter called a mode, but to make the distinction more definite? 'Substance,' says Spinoza, 'is that which exists in itself.' 'A mode is that which exists in something else by which that thing is conceived.' It would seem that the first object of these two definitions was to mark definitely the Self-existing as substance, the dependant as something so different that it must be called the opposite of substance, that is a mode. But the distinction between mode and created substance is not one of words merely. It goes deeper than words. The created thing is not a nothing. It is not *merely* a mode. It has a substance because it partakes of the one substance. And thus it is a reality at the same time that it is only a mode, by which the one reality is conceived. By the Cartesian theory of knowledge we have God, mind or soul, and matter. Through the medium of mind we arrive at the certitude of the existence of God and matter. Is God of a different essence from mind? Is mind of a different essence from matter? Or is it that in some measure God communicates His essence to all beings, and that they are, just in proportion as they partake of His essence? This last is the Cartesian doctrine which Spinoza further expounds. 'These axioms,' he says, 'may be drawn from Des Cartes.' There are different degrees of reality or entity. For

substance has more reality than mode, and infinite substance than finite. So also there is more objective reality in the idea of substance than of mode, and in the idea of infinite substance than in the idea of finite. 'God is the infinitely perfect Being, His Being is distributed to all orders of the finite creation in diverse degrees according to the measure of perfection, which belongs to each.' Angels and such invisible beings as we know of only by revelation do not come within the region of the philosopher's enquiries, and therefore no account is taken of them. There is much ground for believing that created beings of greater perfection than man exist in other worlds; but man is the most perfect in this. Yet he is only part of infinite nature, which is but one individual consisting of many bodies, which though they vary infinitely among themselves, yet leave the one individual nature without any change. And as being is constituted by the amount of perfection, that which is without any perfection whatever, is without any being, so that what the vulgar say of the devil as one entirely opposed to God is not true; for being destitute of perfection he must be equally destitute of existence.* The philosopher has only to deal with thought and the externality of thought. Now though we may distinguish afterwards finite thinking beings, and finite external objects, yet our first and clearest perceptions, both of thought and the externality of thought, are infinite. We first think the infinite, and then the finite. But this perfect Being, whom our minds reveal to us thus directly, is an infinite Essence, and in His externality infinitely extended. Here, in the very conception of Him, His only attributes of which the human mind can have knowledge are infinite extension and infinite thought. We have not reached the idea of God through external nature, but through the mind. Thought is first, externality follows it and depends on it. But if we call that world, which is exhibited to the senses, created nature, what shall we call that internal thought, whose image and manifestation it is? If the one is '*nature produced*,' will it be improper to call the other, '*nature producing*'? They are so different that the one may be called '*producing*' and the other, '*produced*,' yet they are so like, that is, they have their identity in a deeper aspect, that the word *nature* may be applied to both. *Nature* however is applied to the second in a supreme sense, and not as ordinarily understood, not the mere workings of the external universe, but the Being whom these workings make manifest.

* Compare this with what is said on the *Theologia Germanica*.—Page 178.

Spinoza, as we have intimated, builds his whole system on the ontological argument as revived by S. Anselm and Des Cartes. We have in the mind a clear and distinct idea of an infinitely perfect Being of whose Existence reason itself will not allow us to doubt. The two attributes under which we conceive this Being are infinite thought and infinite extension. The doctrine ascribed to Plato, that the universe is God's thought realized, seems clearly to be the doctrine of Spinoza. God is a Being who thinks, and His thoughts under different aspects constitute the ideal, and the phenomenal worlds. As a Being, who thinks, God is primarily manifested in the world of thought, that is, in beings who think. Des Cartes had shown that thought is the essence of soul—the foundation of spiritual existence, in fact, that the soul is a thought. Spinoza added that it is a thought of God's, for Divine thought being a form of absolute activity, must develop itself as an infinite succession of thoughts or ideas, that is, particular souls. M. Saisset, in an ingenious chapter on this part of Spinoza's doctrine, has pointed out, in one or two places in Spinoza's writings, obscure but decided intimations that Spinoza placed intermediaries between God, and the finite modes or particular souls. Existence had been divided into three kinds; substance, attributes, modes, yet the last seems to have been again divided into two kinds. There were modes properly so called; the finite which are variable and successive, and other modes of an altogether different nature which are infinite and eternal. The infinite modes are more directly united to substance than the finite. 'Everything' Spinoza says 'which comes from the absolute nature of an attribute of God must be eternal and infinite, in other words, must possess by its relation to that attribute eternity and infinity.'* For an example of this kind of mode he gives the *idea* of God, so that between absolute substance and any particular or finite mode, there are at least two intermediaries—the attribute of substance and the immediate mode of that attribute. The idea of God is not absolute thought but the first of the manifestations or emanations of absolute thought. It is infinite because it comprehends all other ideas, and as it is an absolutely simple and necessary emanation from the divine thought, it must be eternal. It cannot then be confounded with the changing and finite ideas which constitute particular souls. From the idea of God emanate other modifications equally eternal and infinite. We

* Proposition XXI, Ethics, Book I.

have here room for such an infinity of intermediaries, that we do not know where the infinites end, and the finites begin. The chain is endless, Spinoza did not name any of these infinite and eternal modifications of the idea of God, but M. Saisset thinks he is justified in reckoning among them, the *idea* of the extension of God. Thus infinite thought, which has for its object, substance or Being absolutely indetermined, is the foundation of all ideas. The first of these the idea of God which has God for its object, is the idea of the attributes of God. This idea is the infinite understanding which includes an infinity of ideas, for it includes the idea of every one of the attributes of God, and these are infinite. Each of these ideas, the idea of extension for instance, is an immediate emanation of the idea of God, just as the idea of God, is an immediate emanation of the thought of God, and the thought itself an immediate emanation of the essence of God. "Now," M. Saisset asks, "what does each of these ideas of each of these attributes of God contain, say for instance, the idea of extension? It comprehends the ideas of all the modalities of extension. Now what is the idea of a modality of extension? It is a soul—a particular soul joined to a particular body. The idea of extension thus embraces all souls. It is literally the world soul of Plato and the Alexandrians—the universal soul of which all particular souls are the emanations. It is an infinite ocean of souls or ideas. Every soul is a river of this ocean. Every thought is one of its waves. The idea of extension is the soul of the corporeal world, but the idea of extension is itself a particular emanation of a principle which contains an infinity of ideas; a wave of a still vaster ocean. The idea of extension, and the idea of thought, with an infinity of ideas of the same degree, are included in the idea of God. The idea of God is then no longer merely the soul of the universe known to us. It is the soul of that infinity of worlds, which the incomprehensible fecundity of being is incessantly producing. It is truly the world soul, taking the world in that wide sense in which the infinite universe known to us—the universe of bodies and souls, matter and spirit, is lost as an imperceptible atom." According to this interpretation of Spinoza's doctrine of intermediaries we have for 'nature producing' God and His infinite attributes, thought, and extension, with all the infinity of attributes beyond the reach of the reason of man; and for 'nature produced,' we have the idea of God with an infinity of emanations, or modes both infinite and finite.

The world of bodies corresponds in its development to the world of souls, that is of ideas or thought. Spinoza defines a body as 'a mode which expresses after a certain determinate fashion the essence of God considered as something extended.' Des Cartes said that every body is a mode of extension. Spinoza added, a mode of the extension of God; for infinite extension, like infinite thought, is one of the attributes of God. But extension is nothing more than space, and the secondary qualities of bodies are but impressions of sensibility, from which it follows that bodies themselves are only ideas or expressions of thought taking definite forms in space. The only thing which bodies have in common is extension, and this as we have seen is one of the two attributes by which God is known to the human mind. The participation of bodies in this attribute is that which makes them alike. It is, so to speak, their substance while the modifications constitute the differences. A body then with Spinoza is an act of thought, as it is with other idealists, but it is more than an act of thought—it is also the object corresponding to the act. Bodies and souls are thus distinct existences. The body does not depend on the soul, nor the soul on the body. The one exists as God's thought, the other as God's extension. They have their identity only in that *substance*, of which thought and extension are the attributes, that is, in God.*

DEFINITIONS from the second book, the subject of which is the *Soul*.

* I. I understand by *body* a mode which expresses in a certain determined way the essence of God, in so far as it is considered as something extended.

II. That which belongs to the essence of a thing is that whose existence implies that of the thing, and whose non-existence, its non-existence; in other words, that which is such that the thing cannot exist without it, nor it without the thing.

III. By *idea* I understand a concept of the soul, which the soul forms as a thinking thing.

EXPLANATION.—*I say concept rather than perception, because that the name perception seems to indicate that the soul receives from the object a passive impression, and that concept on the other hand appears to express the action of the soul.*

IV. By adequate idea, I understand an idea which, considered in itself, without regard to its object, has all the properties, all the intrinsic denominations of a true idea.

EXPLANATION.—*I say intrinsic in order to set aside the extrinsic property or denomination of an idea, namely, its accordance with its object.*

V. Duration is the indefinite continuation of existence.

EXPLANATION.—*I say indefinite because it can never be determined by the nature itself of the existing thing, nor by its efficient cause, which necessarily posits the existence of the thing, and does not destroy it.*

VI. Reality and perfection are for me the same thing.

VII. By individual things I understand the things which are finite, and have a determined existence. But if many individuals meet for a certain action, in

The passage from the eternal to the temporal, from the infinite to the finite, is left by Spinoza in the same obscurity which envelops the intermediaries. When did bodies begin to be? This question seems to have been answered when it is said that the only attribute which they have in common is one of the attributes of God. But extension is nothing more than infinite length and breadth, infinite height and depth; when and how do bodies become actual objects? Leibnitz answers for Spinoza, that he made his actual bodies from abstractions; with ciphers he made unities and numbers. In this he approached some of

such a way that they are altogether the cause of the same effect, I consider them under this point of view as a single individual thing.

AXIOMS.

I. The essence of man does not imply necessary existence, in other words, in the order of nature, it might happen that such or such a man exists, as it might happen that he did not exist.

II. Man thinks.

III. The modes of thought, such as love, desire, and other passions of the soul, by whatever name they may be known, can not exist except there be in the individual in whom they are found, the idea of a thing loved, desired, &c. But an idea can exist without any other mode of thought.

IV. We feel a certain body affected in many ways.

V. We do not feel, nor do we perceive, any other individual things than bodies and modes of thought.

PROPOSITIONS.

Thought is an attribute of God, in other words, God is a Being who thinks.

Extension is an attribute of God, in other words, God is a Being extended.

The formal being of ideas has God for its cause, so far only as God is regarded as a Being who thinks, and not as His nature, is expressed by any other attribute, in other words, the ideas of particular things have not their object for an efficient cause, that is to say, things perceived, but God Himself so far as He is a Being who thinks.

The order and the connexion of ideas is the same as the order and connexion of things.

The being of substance does not belong to the essence of man, in other words, it is not the substance which constitutes the form or the essence of man.

The object of the idea which constitutes the human soul is the body, in other words, a certain mode of existence and nothing more.

He who has a true idea, knows at the same time that he has that idea, and cannot doubt of the thing which it represents.

It is not of the nature of reason to perceive things as contingent but, rather as necessary.

Every idea of a body, or any particular thing actually existing, involves, necessarily, the eternal and infinite existence of God.

The knowledge of the eternal and infinite essence of God, which every idea involves, is adequate and perfect.

The human soul has an adequate knowledge of the infinite and eternal essence of God.

the old philosophers who made corporeals by the meeting of incorporeals. And this was not some process which had a beginning, but one that was necessary and eternal. Spinoza accounts for the transformations of bodies by the mathematical laws of movement. In nature there is neither birth nor death. What we call birth is but the composition of simple modes of extension. Their decomposition we call death. For a time they are maintained in a finite relation, that is life. The inert elements of the corporeal universe are simple modes uncomposed. The most simple combinations of these modes form inorganic bodies. If we add to these combinations a higher degree of complexity, the individual becomes capable of a greater number of actions and passions. It is organized. It lives. With the increasing complexity of parts the organization becomes perfect. By degrees we arrive at the human body: that wonderful machine, the richest, the most diversified, the most complete of all, yea, that master piece of nature which contains all the forms of combination and organization which nature can produce; that little world in which is reflected the entire universe. The whole of nature is one individual. Its parts vary infinitely, but the individual in its totality undergoes no change.

The division of the all of existence into 'nature producing' and 'nature produced,' carries with it Spinoza's doctrine of creation. He clings tenaciously to the word *creation*, though he denies with all explicitness the doctrine of creation from nothing. This doctrine he calls a fiction and deceit of the mind, by which nothing is made a reality. God is not a great Being who works outside of His own essence. He is Being itself. The Being who is all Being. Creation depends immediately upon God without the intervention of anything with which or upon which He works. God is essentially a cause—the cause of Himself and all things. Creation resembles the work of preservation, which, as Des Cartes has shown, is but a continual repetition of the work or act of creation. Yet that which is created is not substance, for no substance can be created by another. The essence of everything is eternal, for it is the essence of God. From the bosom of His unchanging eternity He unceasingly creates. He fills infinite duration with the exhaustless variety of His works; the effects of which He is the cause. But these works are not themselves infinite or eternal. The finite never *becomes* the infinite. 'Nature produced' can never become 'nature producing.' Both are called God, but the one is only God in His finite

modes, the other is God in His eternal activity. As we thus distinguish between finite and infinite, so must we distinguish between eternity and time.* The first is, the latter is constituted by duration. Created things are necessary to its existence. It has no existence apart from them. 'Before creation,' says Spinoza, 'we cannot conceive either time or duration, for these began with created things. Time is the measure of duration, or rather it is nothing but a mode of thinking. Not only does it pre-suppose something created, but chiefly *thinking* beings. Duration ends when created things cease to be, and begins when they begin to be.' Eternity, which belongs to God alone, is distinct from all duration. Make it as vast as we may, the idea of duration still admits that there may be something vaster still. No accumulation of numbers can express eternity. It is the negation of all number. It follows then that nothing could have been created from eternity. The favorite argument of those who maintained an eternal creation is founded on the necessity of an effect following wherever there is a cause. And if God is the cause of creation, it must, they said, be eternal like Him. Referring to these, Spinoza says, "There are some who assert that the thing produced may be contemporaneous with the cause, and that seeing God was from eternity, His effects also must be from eternity. And this they further confirm by the example of the Son of God, who was from eternity begotten of the Father. But it is evident from what we have said above that they confound eternity with duration, and attribute to God only duration from eternity, which is evident from the very example they bring forward, for they suppose that the same eternity which they attribute to the Son of God is possible for creatures. They imagine time and duration before the foundation of the world, and they wish to establish a duration separate from things created; as others wished to make an eternity distinct from God. Either of which is very far from the truth. It is altogether false that God can communicate His eternity to creatures: the Son of God is not a creature but eternal as the Father. When we say that the Father has an eternally begotten Son, we only mean that the Father has always communicated His eternity to the Son." Spinoza's idea of creation differs on the one side from the ordinary idea that God works on something external to

* It must be noticed here that if Saisset's interpretation of Spinoza is correct, Spinoza is altogether confused about these modes. Are they eternal and infinite or are they only temporal and finite? Is 'nature produced' in any sense eternal and infinite?

Himself, and on the other side it differs from the pre-eminently Pantheistic notion of an *eternal* emanation, *from and out of* the essence of the Divine Being. Created things are indeed emanations but not *eternal*, for God is still God, and the creature is still a creature. M. Saisset compares Spinoza's doctrine of creation with that of the Church Fathers, quoting S. Augustine who says in the '*City of God*,' 'Before all creatures God has always been, and yet He has never existed without the creatures, because He does not precede them by an interval of time, but by a fixed eternity.' This seems to be the very doctrine of Spinoza, but how it differs from that of an eternal emanation, depends on the meaning given to the word '*eternal*,' which, with some of the old philosophers, meant unending duration, but with S. Augustine and Spinoza it is the negation of all duration.

Since created things are the modes of the Deity it follows that their existence is necessary. Des Cartes said that creation was due to the will of God uninfluenced by any motive. From this, Spinoza concluded that God must then act from the necessity of His own nature. God is free to create, that is, there is no motive from without, no subjection to fate, no compulsion to call forth creation, but this freedom is regulated by the *nature* of God, so that He acts by a *free necessity*.* We cannot ascribe will to God. In fact, will apart from volitions is a chimera; a scholastic entity or non-entity, as humanity abstracted from men, or *stoneity* abstracted from stones. Will is only a series of volitions, and a series of volitions is merely a series of modes of activity, not of activity itself. But God is the absolute activity, even as He is the absolute existence, and the source of all existence. He acts because He is. For Him to exist is to act. He is absolute liberty just as He is absolute activity, and absolute existence. In the words '*free necessity*' Spinoza introduces a verbal contradiction, which he tries to explain. He controverts the popular belief in the freedom of the will. We act and we know that we act, but we do not know the motives which determine our actions. Liberty does not consist in the will being undetermined, but in its not being determined by anything but

* "I am far from submitting God in any way to fate; only I conceive that all things result from the nature of God, in the same way that everyone conceives that it results from the nature of God that God has knowledge of Himself. There is certainly no one who disputes that this really results from the existence of God, and yet no one understands by this, submitting God to fate. Everyone believes that God comprehends Himself with a perfect liberty, and yet necessarily."—*Letter to Oldenburg*.

itself. Hence the definition :—‘ A thing is *free* when it exists by the sole necessity of its nature, and is determined to action by itself alone ; a thing is *necessary*, or rather constrained when it is determined by another thing to exist, and to act according to a certain determined law.’ God is free because He acts from the necessity of His own nature. ‘ All things result from the nature of God in the same way as it results from the nature of God that He has consciousness of Himself ; God comprehends Himself with a perfect liberty, and yet by necessity.’ Things which follow from the nature of God must necessarily exist. To imagine that God could order it otherwise is to suppose that the effect of a cause is not something necessary, or that in a triangle God could prevent that its three angles be equal to two right angles.

Spinoza’s doctrine of the necessity of creation will help us to understand what he says about *final causes*. He does not deny, as we have seen, that God thinks, for thought is one of His infinite attributes, nor does he deny that God is a living, conscious Being who creates freely, though His freedom is regulated by His own nature, but he does deny that God works for an end. ‘ Men commonly suppose,’ says Spinoza, ‘ that all the beings of nature act like themselves for an end. They hold it for certain that God conducts all things towards a certain definite end. God, they say, has made everything for man, and He has made man to be worshipped by him.’ Spinoza introduces some confusion into his argument by identifying the doctrine of final causes with the belief that all things were made specially for the use of man. God may work for an end, though that end may not be to make all creation the servant of man. Yet this is the belief which Spinoza has chiefly before him when he speaks of final causes. ‘ Men,’ he says, in the next page, ‘ meeting outside of themselves a great number of means, which are of great service to procure useful things, for instance ; eyes to see, teeth to masticate, vegetables and animals to nourish them, the sun to give them light, the sea to nourish fishes, &c. ; they consider all beings of nature as means for their use, and well knowing besides that they have met these means, and have not made them, they think that there is reason for believing that there exists another Being who has disposed them in their favor.’ It does not appear that Spinoza meant that men should not conclude from the works of nature that there is a manifest Intelligence at work in creation. What he chiefly objects to, is that men judging of all things by their utility to man, suppose

that for this end they were made, so that the master or masters of nature being themselves like men, have taken care of mankind, and made all things for their use. Spinoza denies God design just as he denied Him will, because design is human; a mode of finite working which cannot be supposed to exist in God. Infinite wisdom must differ from finite. God is intelligent; yea He is intelligence infinite. He thinks though He has no understanding, just as He acts though He has no will, for understanding like will is a mere abstraction; a succession of modes of thought, as will is of volitions. But God's thought cannot be a succession of ideas. It is infinite, and therefore we cannot call it understanding without ascribing to the all-Perfect the conditions of imperfection. Understanding implies a process of reasoning. It consists in passing from one idea to another; going from the known to the unknown, till that becomes the known; but all thinking and all knowing is included in the ideas of infinite thinking and infinite knowing, so that understanding in the sense in which it belongs to man cannot be predicated of God.*

In this way Spinoza eliminates all imperfection from human attributes before he ascribes them to God, lest he should carry over into the Divine nature the limitations of the human. This principle which he had learned from Des Cartes he pushed to its last consequence, even denying that God has the same attributes as man, or if He has, it is in a way so different that the theological distinction between attributes, communicable and incommunicable, disappears. Understanding and will have been denied to God, and on the same principle He is incorporeal. Extension is one of the two known attributes of God. It is also an attribute of bodies; that which constitutes bodies, or rather that in which bodies have their constitution. That God is corporeal seems the necessary conclusion from extension being one of His attributes; and so it would be if Spinoza were in any sense a materialist. But though Divinity be exhibited to all our senses by modes, it does not follow that these modes are in themselves God. If they were anything real they would be God. If they were God they would not be modes. But their very name declares that they are not the essence, though the essence is manifested in them; God, therefore, is not corporeal, for though the subject of extension, He is not the subject of motion or division.

* The word understanding does not convey in itself the idea which Spinoza intends. His meaning must be gathered from what he says. What he seems to deny in God is not reason, but the necessity of reasoning.

He cannot be divided into parts; that would clearly imply imperfection, to affirm which of God would be absurd. 'Substance absolutely infinite is indivisible.' The division which we see in the world is in the modes, not in the substance. It is not extension which constitutes a body, but division, so that God is not necessarily corporeal because He is the subject of extension. It does not follow that whatever substance is extended, is finite, for to be finite is contrary to the nature of substance. We can conceive corporeal substance only as infinite. In the same matter parts are not distinguished, except as we conceive the matter as affected in different ways; so that the distinction is not as to the essence, but only the modes. Water, for instance, we may conceive to be divided and separated into parts, so far as it is water, but not as it is corporeal substance; for as such it can be neither separated nor divided. The one substance, whose attributes are infinite thought and extension, is incorporeal; for extension is not body, but being infinite it excludes the idea of anything corporeal. Although it is granted that God is incorporeal, yet this is not to be received as if all the perfections of extension were removed from Him, but only so far as the nature and properties of extension involve any imperfection. This distinction between extension and corporeity, though not admitted in our ordinary thought, explains how God is incorporeal and yet infinitely extended.

Can we ascribe duration to God? Sir Isaac Newton defined God as that Being who endures always, and thereby constitutes duration. Spinoza says, we call God eternal that we may exclude from Him the idea of *duration*. He does not endure, He *is*. Duration is an affection of existence, but not of essence, and cannot be attributed to God, whose existence is one with His essence. No one can say of the essence of a circle or a triangle so far as it is eternal truth, that it has existed longer to-day than it had existed in the days of Adam. To ascribe duration to God would be to suppose Him capable of division, and this would be contrary to His infinite nature. God does not, like created things, *possess* existence. He is Himself existence, as He is Himself essence. Has God life? As with duration and existence in the sense in which the created thing has it; God has it not. "By *life* we understand the force by which things continue in their own being. And because that force is different from the things themselves, we say properly that the things *have* life. But the force by which God continues in His Being, is nothing but His own essence, so that they speak right who call God life.

There are theologians who think that because God is life, and not distinguished from life, is the reason why the Jews did not swear by the *life of Jehovah* as Joseph swears by the life of Pharaoh, but by the living God." Again, God does not love nor hate. He is not angry with any man; He is without passions. The Scriptures indeed ascribe love and hatred to Him, but they are altogether different from the human emotions that go by these names. S. Paul understood this well, when he said God loved Jacob and hated Esau before they were born, or had done good or evil.

The effort to keep the perfection of God free from every human element led Spinoza to make the difference between the human and the Divine attributes, not merely one of degree but of kind. He even denied that there was anything in common between the Divine understanding and the human, saying that when we ascribe understanding to God, that attribute in the Divine Being has no mere resemblance to human understanding than the dog—the *celestial sign*, has to the dog which barks. Spinoza seems here for a moment to have lost himself in the abyssal sea of the Infinite. Every rational theology, that is, every theology which has been reasoned out can only depend for its conclusions on the belief that the human mind is a copy of the Divine: that the one resembles the other, and that the human mind is capable of knowing God, and to some extent of understanding His ways. If there is no analogy between the mind of God and the mind of man, theology and rational religion are impossible. The Infinite indeed can never be brought under the limitations of the finite, but if the difference is in kind, why did Spinoza attempt to tell us what God is, or how He is related to creation? The ground of his denying this analogy was that the Divine thought was the cause of human thought. One of his friends reminded him that he had said 'If two things have nothing in common they cannot be the cause of each other, from which it follows that if there was nothing in common between the Divine' and the human understanding, the Divine could not be the cause of the human.' To this, Spinoza answered that all beings differed from their causes both as to essence and existence, excepting where like produced like; and referred to a scholium and corollary, where he had shown in what sense God was the efficient cause of the essence of created things. What he meant may be conjectured, but the objection was never really answered.

Spinoza had used a strong and unfortunate comparison, which expressed more than he intended. To another friend he wrote,

'As to what you maintain that God has nothing formally in common with created things, I have established the contrary in my definition for I have said, God is a Being constituted by an infinity of infinite attributes, that is to say perfect, each in its kind.' The attributes which correspond to human attributes, he considered as existing in God after an infinite manner indeed, yet not as differing in kind from the finite. That Spinoza believed in the *humanity** of God is evident from what he says in another place: "The will of God, by which He wills to love Himself, follows necessarily from His infinite understanding, by which He knows Himself. But how these are distinguished from each other, namely, His essence, the understanding by which He knows Himself, and the will by which He wills to love Himself we place among the things which we desire to know. Nor do we forget the word *personality*, which theologians sometimes use to explain this matter. But though we are not ignorant of the word, we nevertheless confess our ignorance of its meaning, nor can we form any clear and distinct conception of it, although we constantly believe in the *most blessed vision which is promised to the faithful that God will reveal even this to His own*. That will and power are not distinguished from the understanding of God we have shown from this that He not only decreed things to exist, but to exist with such a nature, that is that their essence and their existence depended on the will and power of God; from which we plainly and distinctly perceive that the understanding of God His power and His will, by which He has created, and has known created things, preserves them and loves them, are in no wise to be distinguished but only in respect of our thoughts."

* "He did not merely receive the witness of a one God from his mother's lips. The voice which spoke to Moses out of the bush was uttering itself in his generation. It was no cunningly devised fable, no story of another day. There was a witness for it in the very nature and being of man; it might be brought forth in hard forms of geometry. In those forms it necessarily became contracted. Its life, its personality, were always threatening to disappear. The *I am* seems in the act of passing into the *Being*. (Mr. Maurice means Plato's ontological Deity, whom we have identified with the *One* of Parmenides.) But the change is never fully accomplished. The living God spoke still to the modern sage. He could not shake off the belief that His voice was in some way to be heard in the Bible. With all his physical science, all his reverence for the light of nature he bows before the God of his fathers. There is awe and trembling in the worshipper. Though so clear in his perceptions, though so calm in his utterances, he often shrinks and becomes confused in that presence. He does not feel that he is alone in it: all men are dwelling in it: were it withdrawn all would perish."—*Modern Philosophy, by the Rev. F. D. Maurice.*

Spinoza ascribed to God a kind of freedom: a free necessity. But to created existences even this kind of freedom is denied. 'There is nothing contingent in the nature of beings; all things on the contrary are determined by the necessity of the Divine nature, to exist and to act, after a certain fashion.' 'Nature produced' is determined by 'nature producing.' It does not act; it is acted upon. The soul of man is a Spiritual automaton. It is not an empire within an empire. It does not belong to itself; it belongs to nature. It does not make its destiny; it submits to a destiny made for it. Every individual acts according to its being, and that being is grounded in the Being of God. There can be nothing arbitrary in the necessary developments of the Divine essence. There can be no disorder in that perpetual movement which incessantly creates, destroys, and renews all things. The harmony of the *all* is so perfect in itself, and all its unfoldings, that no possibility is left for free will in the creature. Every being is determined to existence and to action by another being, and so on for ever. Movements produce movements, and ideas generate ideas according to a law founded upon the very nature of thought and extension, and in a perfect correspondence which again has for its foundation the identity of thought and extension in God. We imagine ourselves to be free, but it is only imagination. It is a delusion arising from our ignorance of the motives which determine us to action. When we think that in virtue of any self-determining power in the soul, we can speak or be silent as we choose, we dream with our eyes open. Were a man placed like the schoolmen's ass between two bundles of hay, each of which had equal attractions for him, he could decide for neither. If hay were his food he would die of hunger rather than make a choice. And if equally placed between two pails of water he would die of thirst. Of course he would be an ass if he did, says a supposed objector, to which Spinoza has no other answer, but that he would not know what to think of such a man. The old and stubborn objection to this doctrine will arise in every reader's mind. Is God then the author of sin? Spinoza answers that sin is nothing positive. It exists for us but not for God. The same things which appear hateful in men are regarded with admiration in animals; such, for instance, as the wars of bees and the jealousies of wood pigeons. It follows then that sin, which only expresses an imperfection, cannot consist in anything which expresses a reality. We speak improperly, applying human language to what is above human language, when we say that we sin against God, or that men offend God. No-

thing can exist, and no event can happen, contrary to the will of God. 'The command given to Adam consisted simply in this, that God revealed to him that eating the forbidden fruit would cause death. In the same way He reveals to us, by the natural light of our minds, that poison is mortal. If you ask for what end was this revelation given? I answer: To render him so much more perfect in the order of knowledge. To ask then of God, why He has not given to Adam a more perfect will is as absurd as to ask why He has not given to the circle the properties of the square.' The consequence, which seems to us naturally to follow from this doctrine, is that there is no difference between virtue and vice: good and bad. But this Spinoza does not admit. There is a difference between perfection and imperfection. The wicked, after their own manner, express the will of God. They are instruments in His hand. He uses them as His instruments, but destroys them in the use. It is true they are wicked by necessity, but they are not on that account less hurtful or less to be feared. We are in the hands of God as the clay in the hand of the potter, who, of the same lump, makes one vessel to honor and another to dishonor.

In a system where all is necessary, and where sin is only a privation of reality, the distinction between good and evil cannot be more than relative. Our knowledge of things is imperfect. When we imagine, we think that we know. If nature, and the chain of causes were not hidden from our weak sight, every existence would appear to us, as it is, finished and perfect. Our ideas of good and evil, perfection and imperfection, like those of beauty and ugliness, are not children of reason but of imagination. They express nothing absolute—nothing which belongs to being. They but mark the weakness of the human mind. That which is easily imagined we call beautiful and well-formed, but that which we have difficulty in imagining appears to us without beauty or order. What we call a fault in nature, such as a man born blind, is only a negation in nature. We compare such a man with one who sees, but nature is no more at fault than in denying sight to stones. For man however there exists good and evil relatively if not absolutely. But these are resolved into the useful and the injurious. A thing at the same time may be good, bad, or indifferent. Music for instance is good for a melancholy man, but for a deaf man it is neither good nor bad. Goodness is but the abstraction we make from things which gives us pleasure. We do not desire them because they are good, but our desire invests them with a supposed

goodness. To the pursuit of what is agreeable, and the hatred of the contrary, man is compelled by his nature, for 'every one desires or rejects by necessity, according to the laws of his nature, that which he judges good or bad.' To follow this impulse is not only a necessity but it is the right and the duty of every man, and everyone should be reckoned an enemy who wishes to hinder another in the gratification of the impulses of his nature. The measure of everyone's right is his power. The best right is that of the strongest, and as the wise man has an absolute right to do all which reason dictates, or the right of living according to the laws of reason, so also the ignorant and foolish man has a right to live according to the laws of appetite.†

The introduction of predestination, or necessity into Spinoza's system gives it an aspect of terror. The heart of man recoils from that stern fatalism which makes men good or bad, and leads them on to reward or punishment, not according to what they are by choice, but according to what necessity has made them. But like all predestinarians Spinoza was happily inconsistent. The fact that we are predestined, must not influence us in our efforts. We must act as if no such predestination existed. The end Spinoza had in all his speculations, was to find a supreme good, such as would satisfy an immortal spirit. He exercised his reason with all earnestness, that

‡ The following are the DEFINITIONS in the third book — the subject of which is the nature and origin of the passions :

I. I call adequate cause, that the effect of which can be clearly and distinctly perceived by itself, and inadequate or partial, that the effect of which cannot be conceived by itself alone.

II. When anything happens in us or outside of us, of which we are the adequate cause, that is to say, when anything, in us or outside of us, follows from our nature, which can be conceived by it clearly and distinctly, I call that acting. When, on the contrary, anything happens in us, or results from our nature, of which we are not the cause, not even partially, I call that suffering.

III. I understand by *passions* those affections of the body which increase or diminish, favor, or hinder its power of acting, and I understand also, at the same time, the ideas of these affections.

This is why, if we can be the adequate cause of any one of these affections, passion then expresses an action ; in every other case it is a true passion.

PROPOSITIONS.

Our soul does certain actions, and suffers certain passions ; namely, so far as it has adequate ideas, it does certain actions ; and so far as it has inadequate ideas it suffers certain passions.

The actions of the soul come only from adequate ideas, passions only from inadequate.

Everything so far as it is, is forced to persevere in its own being.

The effort by which everything tends to persevere in its own being, is nothing more than the actual essence of that thing.

he might know himself and God; and find that which would give him joy when temporal pursuits and pleasures failed him. The existence of good and evil, perfection and imperfection, taken in the moral sense given to them in the human consciousness, he denied. But he denied their existence only to re-affirm it in a higher, and as he reckoned, the only true sense. He had started with the perfection of God. We have an idea of such a perfection: an adequate idea of One who is the Perfect. The infinite number of modes which emanate from the Divine attributes are less perfect, and yet each in its rank of being expresses the absolute perfection of Being in itself. There is then an absolute perfection and a relative perfection; the latter including a necessary mixture of imperfection. Everything is perfect according to the measure of reality which it possesses, and imperfect just as it lacks reality. What is good for man is that which is useful—that which brings him joy and takes away sorrow. Joy is the passage of the soul to a greater perfection, and sorrow to a less perfection; in other words, joy is the desire satisfied, and sorrow the desire opposed. The ruling desire in man is to continue in being: to be more than that which he is. Our duty is to know what is the supreme good—the good of the soul. We need not interrupt Spinoza with any questions about duty when he has denied us free will. He will answer, that is altogether a different question, and one that should not interfere with our striving after perfection. It is a man's right, as well as the law of his nature to strive to continue in being. But there are two ways by which this may be done; one is blind brutal appetite, the other is the desire which is guided by reason. Now reason avails more than appetite. Reason is master of the passions, appetite is their slave. Reason thinks of the future, appetite only of the present. It belongs to reason to think of things under the form of eternity; it affects the soul as powerfully with the desire of good things to come, as with those that now are. Its joys are not delusive and fleeting but solid and enduring. It nourishes the soul with a blessedness which no time can change. Reason leads us to God and to the love of God. The life of reason is then the highest life, the happiest, the most perfect, the richest, that is to say, the life in which the being of man is most possessed and increased. By reason, man is free. He then regulates his life by a clear and adequate idea of the true value both of the temporal and the eternal. The cause of this we can see in the very nature of the soul. It is an idea: a thought. Its activity is in the exercise of thought. The more

it thinks, the more it is, that is, the more it has of perfection and blessedness. True thought is in adequate ideas. All others are inadequate and mutilated, leading to error and sorrow, and making men slaves to their appetites and passions. The life of reason is the most perfect life, because it is the life in God. 'The supreme life of the soul is the knowledge of God.'*

Spinoza's object was the same as that proposed by Des Cartes—to prove that religion is the highest reason; that the doctrines of religion are in accordance with reason, that is to say, rational. Starting with the existence of God, which he held for a primary truth, he went on to demonstrate the immortality of the soul. This was involved in the definition of soul. It is an idea: a thought of God's. As such it is an eternal mode of the eternal understanding of God. It does not belong to time. Its existence is as immutable as that of its Divine Object. It does not perceive things under the form of duration, that is, successively and imperfectly, but under the form of eternity, that is, in their immanent relation to substance. The human soul is thus a pure intelligence entirely formed of adequate ideas, entirely active and altogether happy; in a word, altogether in God. But the absolute necessity of the Divine nature requires every soul in its turn to have its career in time, and partake the vicissitudes of the body, which is appointed for it. From eternal life it falls into the darkness of the terrestrial state. Detached in some way from the bosom of God it is exiled into nature. Henceforth, subjected to the laws of time and change, it perceives things only in their temporal and changing aspect, and with difficulty seizes the eternal bond which binds the entire universe and itself to God. It does, however, seize it, and by a lofty effort, surpassing the weight of the corporeal chain, it finds again the infinite good which it had lost. The human soul is thus immortal. The senses, memory, and imagination being passive faculties appropriated to a successive and changing existence,

* DEFINITIONS from the fourth book—the subject of which is the bondage of man, or the power of the Passions:

I understand by *good* that which we certainly know to be useful to us.

By *evil* that which we certainly know hinders us possessing a certain good.

PROPOSITION.

Men are constantly and necessarily in conformity with nature only, so far as they live according to the counsels of reason.

PROPOSITIONS from the fifth book—the subject of which is Liberty:

The more we comprehend particular things, the more we comprehend God.

The soul can imagine nothing, nor remember anything past, but on condition that the body continues to exist.

perish with the body. Then too the soul loses all its inadequate ideas, which were the cause of the passions, prejudices, and errors which enlaved it and led it astray while it was in the body. Reason, which enables us to perceive things under the form of eternity, alone subsists. 'The human soul cannot entirely perish with the body. There remains something of it which is eternal.'^{*}

We have come from God. Once we existed in the bosom of God, and loved Him with an eternal love. Our souls fell from eternity into time. They came into material bodies. We have reminiscences of our former blessedness in that reason which tells us that God is the highest good: the only true joy of the soul. When the body is dissolved, and that order of things which is constituted by the union of our souls with bodies is ended, then we shall find the good which we lost, or rather which was for a time hidden from our eyes. This is life eternal; this is true blessedness, to find, in the contemplation of the perfect Being, the satisfaction of the desire of our souls. Those who now live rationally have a foretaste of this blessedness, which they shall enjoy in its full fruition when all dies but reason, and God shall love us in Himself, and we shall perfectly love God in us.

Spinoza pursues, throughout, the object which Des Cartes had proposed—to show the reasonableness of religion; yea, to demonstrate that religion is reason itself, and that reason is religion. The highest life is the most rational, and that must be religious. For what is reason? That which gives us such clear and adequate ideas of God, of ourselves, and of the eternal relations of the universe, that we cannot do otherwise than love God, and all mankind. And to be thus guided by reason is to preserve and increase our being. It is to nourish the eternal life

* Nevertheless, there is necessarily in God, an idea which expresses the essence of such and such a human body under the character of eternity.

That the idea which expresses the essence of the body under the character of eternity is a mode determined by thought which relates it to the soul and which is necessarily eternal. Yet it is impossible for us to remember that we have existed before the body, since no trace of that existence can be found in the body, and that eternity can be measured by time or have any relation to it, and yet we feel, we prove, that we are eternal. Although we do not remember to have existed before the body, we feel that our soul, so far as it includes the essence of the body under the character of eternity is eternal, and this eternal existence cannot be measured by time, or stretched into duration.

* Our soul, so far as it knows its body and itself under the character of eternity, possesses necessarily the knowledge of God, and knows it is in God, and is conceived by God.

within us. Our being is in thought, and the very essence of thought is the idea of God. To know God is then our highest knowledge. To love Him is our highest joy.* And this participation in blessedness, leads us to desire that other men may enjoy it too. It then becomes the foundation of morality; the only true source of all good in men. The Divine law is thus a natural law; the foundation of religious instruction; the eternal original of which all the various religions are but changing and perishable copies. This law, according to Spinoza, has four chief characters. First, it is alone truly universal, being founded on the very nature of man, so far as he is guided by reason. In the second place, it reveals and establishes itself, having no need of being supported by histories and traditions. Thirdly, it does not require ceremonies, but works. Actions which we merely call good because they are commanded by some institutions, are but symbols of what is really good. They are incapable of perfecting our understanding. We do not put them among works that are truly excellent—among such as are the offspring of reason, and the natural fruits of a sound mind. The fourth character of the Divine law, is that it carries with it the reward of its observance, for the happiness of man, is to know and to love God with a soul perfectly free; with a pure and an enduring love; while the chastisement of those who break it is a privation of these blessings, slavery to the flesh, and a soul always restless and troubled.

Spinoza starting with reason, and the reasonableness of religion, of necessity came into collision with those parts of Christianity which are at present above our reason. While he could aim a deadly blow at superstition, and recommend the general precepts and doctrines of Christianity, he was yet compelled to put aside, or relegate to the category of impossibles, other doctrines or events which did not seem according to reason. There was no *Revelation* for him in the ordinary conventional sense of that word. Revelation was in the human soul; in the light that God Himself is kindling in men's hearts. What we call revelation is but the gathering up of the greatest and most important

* The intellectual love of the soul for God, is the very love which God has for Himself, not only so far as He is infinite, but so far as His nature can be expressed by the essence of the human soul, considered under the character of eternity; in other words, the intellectual love of the soul for God is a part of the infinite love which God has for Himself.

From this it follows that so far as God loves Himself He also loves men, and consequently the intellectual love of God for men, and the intellectual love of God, are only one and the same thing.

truths which God has revealed to the human race. But they were revealed through the human mind in the natural order of things, and while our reason endorses them as rational, we are not compelled to believe that the wisest of those, through whom they were made, were free from the errors and prejudices of the age in which they lived.

Revelation or prophecy Spinoza defines as 'a certain knowledge of anything revealed to men by God.' He immediately adds that from this definition, it follows that natural knowledge may also be called prophecy, for the things which we know by the natural light depend entirely on the knowledge of God, and His eternal decrees. The difference between natural knowledge and divine is one of degree. The Divine passes the bounds which terminate natural knowledge. It cannot have its cause in human nature, considered in *itself*, but there is a *Light which lightens every man who cometh into the world, and we know by this that we dwell in God, and God in us, because He hath made us to partecipate of His Holy Spirit.* The prophets, by whom the Scripture revelations were made, had imaginations which reached after higher truths. They saw visions that were not given to other men; visions of which they themselves did not always understand the meaning. But to Jesus was given an open vision. He saw and comprehended truth as it is in God. He was not a mere medium of the divine revelation; He was the revelation, the truth itself. "Though it is easy" says Spinoza "to comprehend that God can communicate Himself immediately to men, since without any corporeal intermediary, He communicates His essence to our souls, it is nevertheless true, that a man, to comprehend by the sole force of his soul, truths which are not contained in the first principles of human knowledge, and cannot be deduced from them, ought to possess a soul, very superior to ours and much more excellent. Nor do I believe that any one ever attained this eminent degree of perfection except Jesus Christ, to whom were immediately revealed without words, and without visions, these decrees of God which lead men to salvation. God manifested Himself to the apostles by the soul of Jesus Christ, as he had done to Moses by a voice in the air, and therefore we can say that the voice of Christ, like that which Moses heard, is the voice of God. We can also say in the same sense that the wisdom of God, I mean a wisdom more than human, was clothed with our nature in the person of Christ, and that Jesus Christ was the way of Salvation." Spinoza's relation to Christianity is a vexed question

among his critics. In this passage he evidently presents Jesus Christ as the very incarnation of truth, which is the wisdom of God, and which, with the Greek Fathers, was God Himself, or God the Son. He openly admitted that he did not hold the ordinary belief concerning God; the Trinity; and the doctrine of the incarnation. In a letter to a friend he wrote, "To show you openly my opinion, I say that it is not absolutely necessary for salvation, to know Christ after the flesh; but it is altogether otherwise if we speak of the Son of God, that is, of the eternal wisdom of God, which is manifested in all things, and chiefly in the human soul and most of all in Jesus Christ. Without this wisdom, no one can come to the state of happiness for it is this alone which teaches what is true and what is false, good and evil. As to what certain churches add that God took human nature, I expressly declare that I do not know what they say, and to speak frankly, I confess that they seem to me, to speak a language as absurd as if one were to say that a circle has taken the nature of a triangle." He calls this the doctrine of certain modern Christians, intimating that there was no such doctrine in the early Church. God dwelt in the tabernacle, and in the cloud, but He did not take the nature either of the cloud or the tabernacle. He dwelt in Jesus Christ as He dwelt in the temple but with greater fulness for in Jesus Christ was the highest manifestation, and this S. John wished to declare with all possible explicitness when he said, that the Word was made flesh. Spinoza's doctrine will be best understood by comparing it with what the Alexandrian Fathers have written on the Trinity and the incarnation of the Word or Wisdom of God. The fall of man was explained by Spinoza as we have more than once seen it explained by others. Man lost his liberty by eating of the fruit of the tree of knowledge of good and evil. Adam having found Eve discovered that there was nothing in nature more useful to him than her. But as he found that the beasts were like himself he began to imitate their passions and to lose his liberty. He came under the dominion of his passions, which is the real bondage of the soul. To be freed from this dominion is liberty.† Redemption, or the restoration of this liberty, began immediately after the fall. The patriarchs were guided by the spirit of

† It is this which enables us clearly to understand in what our salvation, our blessedness, in other words, our liberty, consists: *namely*, in a constant and eternal love for God, or if people wish it in the love of God for us. The Holy Scripture gives to this love, this blessedness, the name of glory, and that rightly. We may refer this love to the soul or to God, in either case it is always that eternal peace which is not truly distinguished from glory.

Christ, that is to say, the idea of God. And this restoration, begun in the patriarchs, will be carried on till man completely regains the freedom which he lost in Adam. As the record of the fall of man represented the loss of human liberty, so the resurrection of Christ represented the rising from the death of sin. Christ's resurrection was altogether spiritual, and revealed only to the faithful, according as they could understand it. "I mean," says Spinoza, "that Jesus Christ was called from life to eternity, and that after His passion He was raised from the bosom of the dead, (taking this word in the same sense as where Jesus Christ said: 'Let the dead bury their dead,') as He was raised by His life, and by His death, in giving the example of an unequalled holiness." Spinoza gave this instance simply as a mode that might be adopted to interpret those parts of the Scriptures which speak of things beyond or out of the course of nature as known to us. But this was only an indifferent and secondary matter. He was in reality opposed to explaining the mysteries of religion by subtle speculation, declaring that those who did this, found nothing in the Scriptures but 'the fictions of Aristotle and Plato.' He saw in the Scriptures a practical religion: instructions how men may live righteous lives, and the histories of men who have lived such lives. The sum of all religion, both as taught by the Scriptures and by the light within, is that there is one God; that He loves justice and charity; that all men ought to obey Him, and that the obedience with which He is most pleased, is the practice of justice and charity towards our neighbour,—in the words of Him who was pre-eminently the Teacher of religion to men, *we are to love the Lord our God with all our hearts and minds and strength, and our neighbour as ourselves.**

* An account of the attempts to refute and criticise Spinoza would make a curious chapter. The first great effort was that of Bayle, who is generally said to have refuted the whole of Spinozism. Bayle's argument was very profound and very conclusive. It consisted in disregarding Spinoza's definition of substance, and then going on to prove that everything had a substance of its own. Voltaire suspects that Bayle did not quite understand Spinoza's substance, and suggests how Spinoza might really be refuted. This is the process: Spinoza builds his theory on the mistake of Des Cartes, that 'Nature is a Plenum.' As every motion requires empty space, what becomes of Spinoza's one and only substance? How can the substance of a star between which and me there is a void so immense, be precisely the substance of this earth, or the substance of myself, or the substance of a fly eaten by a spider? Voltaire's argument is as ingenious as Bayle's is profound and conclusive. Even Emile Saizet, who is by far the best expositor of Spinoza is not always to be trusted. Both in his introduction to Spinoza's works, and in his 'Essay on Religious Philosophy,' he makes a rhetorical picture of Spinoza finishing the first book of his *Ethics*, pronouncing, with perfect serenity, 'I have es-

MALEBRANCHE.—To Malebranche the difference between himself and Spinoza seemed infinite. And externally it was great. Spinoza was a Jew, excommunicated from the synagogue; Malebranche, a Christian priest. The one had been educated in the Cabbala, the other clung to the writings of S. Augustine. But great as were the external differences, impartial judges justly reckon them teachers of kindred theologies. Des Cartes, as we have seen, admitted two kinds of substance, the created and the uncreated, but in reality the latter was the only real substance. Spinoza saw this inconsistency, and made the created substances, accidents or modes of the uncreated. But these created substances are evidently of two kinds, the spiritual and the material. Can these be reduced to one, or are they in their essence entirely distinct? Des Cartes was of the latter opinion. Spinoza held the former. From this resulted his belief in the original unity of the thinking and the extended substance; of God as thought and extension. Malebranche wished to keep the Cartesian ground, that they were distinct substances, and at the same time to remove the Cartesian dualism. He did this by supposing them distinct in themselves, yet finding their unity in God. As all things exist spiritually and ideally in the Divine Mind, God is, as it were, the higher mean between the *I* and the external world—'We see all things in God.' Malebranche as a Cartesian, started with thought. We are a something which thinks; we have ideas. Whence have we these ideas? Some are immediate, but others are the ideas of things material. The latter we may have either from the objects themselves—from the soul having the power of producing them, or from God's producing them in us, which He may have done, either at creation, or may do every time we think of any object; or we may conceive the

plained the nature of God. These words are certainly in the *Ethica*, but there is a comma after God, and the sentence goes on 'as that which necessarily exists, &c.' The Latin is, *His Dei naturam ejusque proprietates explicui, ut quod necessario existat, quod sit unicus, &c.* M. Saisset translates it apparently to make way for his own rhetoric, *J'ai explicui dans ce qu'on vient de lire la nature de Dieu et ses propriétés; J'ai montré que Dieu existe nécessairement, qu'il est unique, &c.* Mr. Froude, misled apparently by Saisset, has repeated this criticism. Voltaire complained of the difficulty of understanding Spinoza, but surely Spinoza has cause to complain of the want of understanding in his Critics.

An English clergyman has prefixed an introduction to a tract of Leibnitz's recently discovered, which has been published as a refutation of Spinoza. The tract does not profess to deal with more than one point of Spinoza's philosophy, and that a subordinate one, but the editor lauds it as a complete refutation. 'Unnecessary, indeed,' he goes on to say, 'for we all know that Dr. Adam (!) Clarke refuted Spinoza a hundred years ago.'

soul as having in itself all the perfections which we discover in external objects, or lastly, as united with an All-Perfect Being, who comprehends in Himself all the perfections of created beings. Malebranche examines each of these five ways of knowing external objects, to find out the one that is most probable. He finds objections to them all except the last. His arguments for this are founded on the old Neo-Platonic doctrine of ideas. 'It is absolutely necessary,' he says, 'for God to have in Himself the ideas of all the beings He has created, since otherwise He could not have produced them, and He sees them all by considering those of His perfections to which they are related.' God and the human soul are supposed to be so united that God may be called the 'place' of souls, as extension is the place of bodies. Spinoza could not have expressed this so well, nor could he have wished it expressed better. The chief attribute of the corporeal is extension. In it, bodies have their being and essence. And as bodies are constituted in extension, so are souls constituted in God. 'It is the Divine Word alone which enlightens us by those ideas which are in Him, for there are not two or more wisdoms; two or more universal reasons. Truth is immutable, necessary, eternal; the same in time and in eternity; the same in heaven and in hell. The Eternal Word speaks in the same language to all nations.' This speaking in us of the universal reason is a true revelation from God. It is the only means of our possessing any true knowledge of things external. 'To see the intelligible world, it is enough to consult the reason which contains these ideas, or these intelligible, eternal, and necessary essences which make all minds reasonable and united to the Reason. But in order to see the material world, or rather to determine that this world exists—for this world is invisible of itself—it is necessary that God should *reveal* it to us, because we cannot perceive those arrangements which arise from His choice in that Reason which is necessary.'

The *ideas* of material things we see in God, but spiritual things we see in God immediately without the medium of ideas. In the spiritual, internal, or ideal world we are face to face with truth and reason. There we see, not ideas, but realities. There we *know* the Infinite, not through the *idea* of Him, but immediately, and it is through Him that we have our knowledge of all things finite. In Him the *material* exists spiritually. Before the world was created God alone existed. To produce the world He must have had ideas of the world and all that is in it. And these ideas must have been identical with Himself, so that

in creating the world, He communicated Himself to external objects. God eternally beholds His ideas. This is His converse with the Eternal Word. This is God as Being, giving Himself to God as thought—the Father giving all things to the Son. This Divine Word shines in our souls. By it we see in God some of the ideas unfolded in the Infinite essence. God sees all things in Himself, but a created spirit does not see all things in itself, because it does not contain all things in itself. It sees them in God, in whom they exist. When for instance we see a square we do not see merely the mental idea within us, but the square itself, which is external to us. God Himself is the immediate cause of this Divine vision. He instructs us in that knowledge which ungrateful men call natural; He hath shown it unto us. He is the light of the world, and the Father of light and knowledge. S. Augustine says that ‘we see God in this life by the knowledge we have of eternal truths. Truth is uncreated, immutable, eternal, above all things. It is true by itself. It makes creatures more perfect; and all spirits naturally endeavour to know it. Nothing but God can have the perfections of truth; therefore, truth is God. When we see some eternal and immutable truths we see God.’ After quoting from S. Augustine, Malebranche adds, ‘These are S. Augustine’s reasons, ours differ a little from them. We see God when we see eternal truths, not that these are God, but because the ideas on which these truths depend are in God—perhaps Augustine had the same meaning.’ In starting from thought, Malebranche, like Des Cartes and Spinoza, had found the idea of the Infinite to be the first and clearest of our ideas. ‘This,’ he said, ‘is the most beautiful, the most exalted, the soundest and best proof of the existence of God.’ It is the idea of Universal Being, which includes in itself all beings. The human mind can know the Infinite, though it cannot comprehend it. We conceive first the Infinite, and then we retrench the idea to make it finite: not however, that the idea represents the Infinite Being, for so far as it is an idea it represents something determinate, but though our vision be dark and finite we yet see and know God as the Infinite. He is then identical with Universal Being. We call Him a Spirit, but this is not to declare what He is, but what He is not. He is not matter. He is as much above spirit, as spirit is above matter. The highest attribute which we know of that can belong to being, is thought or mind, and therefore we call God a Spirit, but He is the infinitely perfect Being. As we deny Him a human shape, so should we deny Him human thoughts. His

mind is not like ours. We only compare it to our own because mind is the most perfect attribute of which we know anything. As He includes in Himself the perfections of matter, though He is immaterial, so does He include in Himself the perfections of spirit without being a spirit, as we conceive spirits. His name is **HE THAT IS**. He is Being without limitation; All Being; Being infinite and universal. And as we have this distinct idea of God as Being, so have we another idea also necessary, eternal, and immutable; that is, the idea of extension. It is impossible to efface this idea from our minds, for infinite extension belongs to being, or at least, to our idea of being. Malebranche does not make extension one of the attributes of God, but he ought to have done, after what he has said of Being and extension. He maintains that the idea of extension is eternal and immutable; common to all minds, to angels; yea, to God Himself—that it is a true being, and identical with matter. We need not draw any inferences from Malebranche's doctrines. It is enough at present to show the parallelism between his views on God, being, spirit and matter, with those of Spinoza. As our souls are united to God, and see all things in God, so our bodies have their essence in extension. Between the substances, matter and spirit, there is no necessary relation. The modalities of our body cannot by their own force change those of the mind, and yet the modalities of the brain are uniformly in connection with the sentiments of our souls, because the Author of our being has so determined it.

And this immediate action of God is not limited to the mind of man. It is the same through all nature. God has not given up His creation to secondary causes; what we call such are but the occasions whereby God, who is the universal cause, executes His decrees as He wills they should be executed. It is true that Scripture in some places ascribes events to secondary causes, as in the book of Genesis, when it is said, 'Let the earth bring forth;' but this is said improperly. In most parts of the Scriptures God is spoken of as the immediate actor. He commands the children of Israel to honor Him as the only true cause, both of good and evil, reward and punishment. 'Is there any evil in the city,' said the prophet Amos, 'and the Lord hath not done it?' The works of nature are God's immediate works. He forms all things. He giveth to all life and health, and all things. He causeth grass to grow for the cattle, and herb for the service of man, that He may bring forth food out of the earth. God never leaves His world. He is present in it now as much as in

the first moment of creation ; in fact, creation never ceases. The same will, the same power, and the same presence that were required to create the world, are required every moment to preserve it. What we call the laws of nature, are but the expressions of the will of God. He works by laws, but the working is not therefore, less immediate or less dependent on His will and power.

Malebranche reminds us of Spinoza when he discourses of the passions. The human mind has two relations essentially different—one to God, and the other to the body. This is no meaningless comparison, as we may at once conclude from what has been said of our seeing all things in God. The union of the soul with God is not less than that of the soul with the body. By the union with the Divine word, wisdom, or truth, we have the faculty of thought. By our union with the material we have the perceptions of sense. When the body is the cause of our thoughts we only *imagine*; but when the soul acts by itself, in other words, when God acts by it, then we *understand*. Passions in themselves are not evil. They are the impressions of the Author of nature which incline us to love the body and whatever is useful for its preservation. Whether our union with the body is a punishment for sin, or a gift of nature, we cannot determine. But we are certain of this, that before his sin man was not a slave to his passions. He had a perfect mastery over them. But now nature is corrupted. The body, instead of humbly representing its wants to the soul, acts upon it with violence, becomes its tyrant, and turns it aside from the love and service of God. Redemption can be nothing else but the restoration of man to the dominion of the soul over the body, for this is to have God reigning within him.

But this question of the passions involves a further enquiry—what is sin? If God works whatever is real in the emotions of the mind, and what is real in the sensations of the passions, is He not the Author of sin? Malebranche gives the old answer that sin is nothing real. God continually impels man to good, but he *stops*, he *rests*; this is his sin. He does not follow the leading of God, he does *nothing*, and thus sin is nothing. So far we have followed Malebranche simply as a philosopher, but how could he as a priest of the Catholic church, reconcile his speculations with the Scriptures, and the decrees of the councils? He did not attempt to reconcile them, or if he did the reconciliation was but partial. Where the Church has not spoken reason is free, but where the church has spoken, what-

ever be our conclusions from reason, we must submit to the decisions of the Church.* We have no evidence of the existence of an external world, but we receive it on the Church's authority. Our reason cannot be trusted with the mysteries of the faith. They are beyond the limits of our faculties. The incarnation, the Trinity, the changing of the bread and wine in the eucharist into the real body and blood of Christ, who can understand? It is well to exercise our reason on subtle questions that its presumption may be tamed, for is not reason the author of all the heresies that have rent the Church? Yet Malebranche used his reason, for after all a man cannot help using his reason, let him be in the Catholic church or out of it. Malebranche had a grand theory—worthy of Jacob Böhme—that all things were made for the redeemed Church. This world is finite and imperfect, but in Jesus Christ it becomes perfect, and of infinite value. Jesus Christ is the beginning of the ways of God—the first-born among many brethren. God loves the world only because of Jesus Christ. Even had God willed that sin should never have come into the world, yet Christ, the eternal Word, would have united Himself to the universe, and made it worthy of God. Christ had an interest in man, independent both of sin and redemption. God foresaw the existence of sin. He decreed to give Jesus Christ a body to be the victim which he was to offer, for it is necessary that every priest have somewhat to offer. God thought on the body of His Son when He formed that of Adam, and He has given every one of us a body which we are to sacrifice, as Christ sacrificed His body.

LEIBNITZ.—Lessing once said to Jacobi that Leibnitz was as much a Pantheist as Spinoza. Jacobi would not admit this, and on further acquaintance with the writings of Leibnitz, Lessing gave a different judgment. Indeed Leibnitz was so

* How completely Malebranche had followed Des Cartes in throwing off the authority of Aristotle may be seen from this passage: 'If any truth is discovered now, Aristotle must have known it, but if Aristotle is against it the discovery is false. Some make that philosopher speak one way and some another, for all pretenders to learning make him speak in their own dialect. There is no impertinence which is not ascribed to Aristotle nor any new discovery which is not found treasured up enigmatically in some corner of his books. He constantly contradicts himself, if not in his works at least in the mouth of his disciples. For though the philosophers intend to teach his doctrines, yet it is a hard thing to find two of them to agree as to his opinions. In fact his books are so obscure, and abound with so many loose, indefinite, and general terms that even the most opposite opinions may be ascribed to him. In his works he may be made to say *anything* because he says just *nothing*, and yet he makes a great deal of noise just as children make bells sound whatever they wish, because they are noisy and inarticulate.

thoroughly opposed to most of Spinoza's doctrines that our only reason for introducing him here is to complete the history of Cartesianism. Leibnitz wished to return to Des Cartes, and so to re-construct Cartesianism as to refute on Cartesian ground the errors of Spinoza and Malebranche. But he was only in a very limited sense a disciple of Des Cartes. Locke said that there is nothing in the mind which does not come through the senses. Leibnitz added, *except the mind itself*. So far as he agreed with Locke he was a materialist, but so far as he differed from Locke he was an idealist. Des Cartes had cast doubts on the existence of matter, and from the idea of the infinite given in consciousness, he had proceeded to construct a universe. This universe was in reality nothing more than space or extension—something destitute of energy; an abstraction; a nothing. Now, said Leibnitz, if Des Cartes' universe is not something real, then God produces no *reality* external to Himself, and if God produces nothing real, that is, if He is not a creative God He is only an abstraction. Into the conclusiveness of this argument we need not make any enquiry. Des Cartes and Spinoza would both have exclaimed that they were misunderstood. This matters nothing here. The argument gives Leibnitz's point of departure from Des Cartes.

Substance with Leibnitz was not an idea as it was with the idealists, nor was it a substratum of matter as it was with the materialists, but a *force*; a dynamical power. The simple originals of beings he calls *monads*, which are metaphysical points to be thought of as we think of souls. God is the chief *Monad*; the others are of different ranks and degrees from the humblest forms of matter to the highest spiritual substance. These monads are the true atoms of nature, so to speak, the elements of things. They are imperishable, simple, and original—they have no windows by which anything can enter into them or come out of them. And yet they have qualities, for without qualities they could not be distinguished from each other. Every monad must differ from every other, for there never was in nature two beings perfectly like each other. Being created, as they all are except the chief Monad, they must be subject to change, but the principle of change must be from within, for no external cause can influence them. They are also called *entelechies*, because as simple substances they have a certain perfection. These have a sufficiency of themselves which makes them the source of their own internal actions, they are, so to speak, incorporeal automata. Every body has a monad belonging

to it. This monad is its entelechy or soul. The body with the monad constitutes a living creature, or an animal. Every body is organized. It is a divine mechanism, every part of which is again a mechanism, and so on infinitely for every portion of matter is infinitely divisible, so that there is a world of creation endowed with souls in the least part of matter. With Des Cartes and Spinoza, Leibnitz admits the infinity, and, after a fashion, even the eternity of the universe. But he defines infinity and eternity, when applied to the universe, as different from the same terms when applied to God. There is everywhere a *relative* infinity—in every particle of the universe an infinity of creatures, each of which again embraces another infinity, and so on for ever. This infinity extends to duration, and constitutes the eternity of the universe. Creation and annihilation do not take place in time but in eternity. To speak properly, nothing perishes and nothing begins to be. All things, even the most inanimate, are naturally immortal. But the immortality of a self-conscious monad is necessarily different from that of one which wants self-consciousness. It is not only a mirror of the universe of creatures, but also an image of the Deity. The human mind has not only a perception of the works of God; it is even capable of imitating them. The soul of man can discover and understand the laws by which God made and governs the universe, and in its own little world it can do the same things as God does in His great world. And thus it is that men are capable of religion. They can know the Infinite. In virtue of their reason and their knowledge of eternal truths, they enter into a kind of society with God. They are members of the *City of God*.

Leibnitz as an idealist necessarily held to the ontological argument for the existence of God. He even put it into the form of a demonstration:—The Being whose essence implies existence, exists, if it is possible; that is to say, if it has an essence. (This is an axiom of identity which requires no demonstration.)

Now God is a Being whose essence implies existence. (Through Definition.)

Therefore, if God is possible, He exists. (By the very necessity of the concept of Him.)

The conception of perfect being is more than possible, it is necessary. It is an absolute necessity of reason. Leibnitz tried to strengthen this position by arguments drawn from experience, especially that which is founded upon the non-necessity of crea-

tion, or the *contingent* existence of the world. If necessary being is possible it must also be real, for if it be impossible all contingent beings would also be impossible: if it did not exist, there would be no existence at all; which is what we cannot suppose.

While Leibnitz remained on the ground of ontology he had much in common with Des Cartes and Spinoza, but he wished to escape their errors. To do this he gives prominence to the other two great arguments which were either ignored or denied by Des Cartes and Spinoza; these were the *cosmological*, and the argument from *final causes*. The world is manifestly a work, and God is the Worker. All phenomena must have a producing cause—a *sufficient reason*. Nothing can happen without a cause or antecedent. In the whole range of contingent, that is, created beings, there is not one which does not take its origin in another. 'Every particular being includes other anterior contingent beings.' Carry up the analysis as far as we will, let us mount unceasingly from ring to ring we must stop at a first cause or reason placed outside of this long chain; at the necessary being in whom the series of events and agents exist as rivers in their fountain heads. This Being is the *ultima radix*; the last root of things. The cosmological argument with Leibnitz runs into the *teleological*, and this it ought to do, for the proper doctrine of final causes is not that all things were made for the use of man, but that all things manifest the wisdom of the great Author of nature. The *end* may be the general good of the whole universe; it may be the glory of God, or both of them together. Leibnitz often speaks of the Divinity as the true end of all the movements in the world. He identifies the life eternal, or the final goal of the career of man with the very essence of the Divinity, and regards the moral activity of intelligent beings as an element necessary to the felicity of God. God is free, and yet the Divine freedom with Leibnitz does not differ from the *free necessity* of Spinoza. 'That pretended *fate*,' says Leibnitz, 'which necessitates even the Divinity is nothing but the proper nature of God—His understanding, which furnishes laws for His wisdom and His goodness. It is a happy necessity, without which He would be neither wise nor good.'

But though Leibnitz in some parts of his theology approaches the Cartesians, his escape from everything Pantheistic is supremely manifest in his denying the immanency of God in the world. Des Cartes thought that an Infinite, Omniscient, and Omnipresent Being must be ever in His universe, and that what is

done in it must be done immediately by God. Leibnitz thought this unworthy of God. If man can make a machine that will work by itself, how much more can God? Why may not He, like the human mechanist, retire from His work? 'He would be,' says Leibnitz, 'a bad workman whose engines could not work unless he were himself standing by and giving them a helping hand; a workman who having constructed a time-piece would still be obliged himself to turn the hands to make it mark the hours.' God has made a perfect machine. It is governed by immutable laws. We cannot even suppose, as Locke and Newton did, that God sometimes interferes to restore it, or to keep it in repair. The very perfection of His workmanship must exclude every such thought. He is a Perfect Worker, and therefore His work must be perfect too. But is it perfect? Leibnitz says this is the best of all possible worlds. Voltaire says it is the worst. Leibnitz says that out of an infinity of possible worlds Infinite Wisdom must have formed the best. It is not indeed a world without evils, but

'Discord, is harmony not understood
All partial evil, universal good,'
'Then say not man's imperfect, heaven at fault,
Say rather, man's as perfect as he ought,'
'Respecting man, whatever wrong we call,
May, must be right as *relative* to all.'

The Divine Mind has so arranged that all things shall work together for good. In making a contingent world God foresaw what would happen through the action of moral agents and natural causes, and provided for these accidents, that they might be over-ruled for the general welfare of the universe. There was a *pre-established harmony* by which all things were necessary, and yet man was left free; God

'Binding nature fast in fate
Left free the human will.'

This universal order we see everywhere rising above apparent disorder, and triumphing over it. How numerous are the marks of wisdom, visible in creation. How beautiful the proportions. How benevolent the intentions. How wisely are the relations calculated, and how solidly organized. The harmony in which they are maintained is permanent and universal. That harmony has an Author. It is He who has arranged that this infinite diversity of beings, shall maintain their places in the order of creation; that there be a continuous gradation and a mutual dependence among all kingdoms, species, families, and individuals. Leibnitz explained all things by his *pre-established*

harmony. By it the monads come together to form composite beings. By it all monads and composite beings maintain a perfect order in their existence. By it God operates upon mind and matter. He wound them up like two clocks, so that when we see a thing it is not because mind acts upon matter, or matter upon mind, but because it was pre-arranged from eternity that the object and the fact of our seeing it should occur at the same instant.

The *rational* explication which Leibnitz gave of the world, and his vindication of the perfections of God through maintaining that after all it is a perfect world, necessarily brought him in collision with the commonly received doctrine of original sin. If the world was once better, and may be better again, how is it *now* the best of all possible worlds? * Leibnitz's answer has been partly anticipated in his doctrine of relative perfection, and the educing of good from seeming evil. But to meet the objection fully he divides evil into three kinds: metaphysical evil or *imperfection*, physical evil or suffering, and moral evil or sin. The two first he ascribes directly to God. The evil of imperfection is inevitable, it belongs to the creature. Everything created must be limited. In a relative and dependent world, weakness must be mingled with strength, and light with darkness. The uncreated alone can be free from fault, infinite, and *truly* perfect. As to physical evils we cannot say that God has absolutely willed them. He may have willed them conditionally, that is to say as suffering justly inflicted for our faults, or as the means of leading us to good; the true end of man and the only source of happiness. As to moral evil, Leibnitz falls back on the metaphysical doctrines of the fathers and the schoolmen. God gives us liberty. He respects that liberty in us. He sets before us good and evil, and leaves us to choose. We cannot charge human perversity upon God. He gives all things—that is true. He is the first cause of all things; the first original of the power which we have to do evil; the *material* element of sin as S. Augustine expressed it. But this power indispensable to every action, good or bad, is itself a boon, and in giving it God bears witness of His goodness. That then in sin which is

* Voltaire, in his charming romance *Candide* which was written to ridicule the doctrine of Leibnitz, causes Dr. Pangloss and Candide to be arrested by the Inquisition at Lisbon for saying, among the ruins of the houses, after the earthquake, 'It is all for the best in this best of all possible worlds.' The doctors of the Inquisition thought the doctrine amounted to a denial of original sin.

real and positive comes from God; that which is perfect and unreal belongs to us.

On the great question of the conformity of faith and reason Leibnitz, like Spinoza, was purely Cartesian. The spirit of wisdom is the spirit of liberty. *The wise man alone is free*, said the ancient Stoics. *Where the spirit of God is, there is liberty*, said S. Paul. And what is wisdom but the Spirit of God? That which constitutes a created monad is its power of thinking. Much more must God who gives us this power possess it supremely in Himself. God is thought; yea, the very essence of all intelligence, of all reason, and all knowledge. The first original of all things is a Supreme Mind. The doctrines of religion, if they come from God, must be rational. This was a great question in Leibnitz's day, and always will be a great question with men who think earnestly and who are sincere and honest with themselves. For those who are too idle to think, or who are attached to some favorite dogma, it is convenient to decry reason and philosophy. The most enlightened theologians of the Catholic Church—Pascal, Malebranche, Bossuet, and Fenelon received what they called Catholic doctrines, as mysterious dogmas to which no principles of reason could be applied. Some even said that the more the mysteries shocked the reason and the conscience, the more devoutly they were to be believed. Baronius called reason that Hagar who was to be cast out with her profane Ishmael. Nor was this spirit confined to the Catholic Church. Luther is full of it. The more, enlightened Protestants tried to harmonize the teachings of the Bible with those of reason and conscience, the more those who had to defend the dogmatic forms of the Churches, cried out against reason. Bayle, with his encyclopedic learning, had set forth all the received doctrines of Christianity, and in a spirit of the deepest scepticism had tried to show how incompatible they all are with reason. From this armoury in later times Voltaire drew the darts, which, with winged sarcasm, he aimed at the Theologians who defied reason. Leibnitz had Bayle before him when he discoursed of the conformity of faith with reason. He maintains that what God reveals to man, must agree with what man knows to be right. God's goodness, and God's justice cannot differ from ours, except in being more perfect. There may be revealed doctrines above our reason, but not contrary to it. Even the mysteries may be explained so far as it is necessary for us to believe them. The Lutherans defended the doctrine of consubstantiation as

rational. The Trinity is no contradiction in reason. When we say the Father is God, the Son is God, and the Holy Ghost is God, and yet these are not three but one God, the word *God* has not the same meaning at the beginning of the sentence which it has at the end. In the one case it signifies a person of the Trinity and in the other, the divine Substance. The old fathers refuted the heathen religions by arguments drawn from reason; and defended the Christian doctrines as in the highest sense *rational*.

It is beside our purpose to follow Leibnitz further. Though sprung from the school of Des Cartes, he is henceforth the representative *Theist* of Germany.

The authorities for this chapter, besides the Histories of Philosophy mentioned at the end of the chapter on Greek Philosophy, are *Morell's History of Philosophy*; *A Critical History of Rationalism*, by Amand Saintes, translated from the French; *Kahn's German Protestantism*; *Œuvres de Des Cartes*; *M. Saisset's Essay on Religious Philosophy*, translated from the French; *Benedict de Spinoza opera quae supersunt omnia edidit Carolus Hermannus Bruder*, (This edition contains more than any of the previous editions.) *Œuvres de Spinoza traduites par Emile Saisset avec une Introduction du Traducteur*; (We have nothing in English on Spinoza of any value except what Mr. Maurice has written in his *Modern Philosophy*, and an article by Mr. Froude in the *Westminster Review*, July, 1855.) *Œuvres de Malebranche*, especially *Recherche de la Vérité* and *Entretiens sur la Métaphysique*; *Œuvres de Leibnitz*, especially *Théodicée*, *La Monadologie*, *Principes de la Nature et de la Grâce*, *Lettres entre Leibnitz et Clarke sur Dieu, L'Âme, L'Espace, La Durée*, &c., and *M. Bartholmæus' Histoire Critique des Doctrines Religieuses de la Philosophie Moderne*.

CHAPTER XIII.

TRANSCENDENTALISM.

FROM French Idealism to German Transcendentalism we pass over a full century. That century was the remarkable eighteenth, despised as superficial by all true philosophers, lamented as Godless by all truly religious men. The philosophy of Locke, which rejected all enquiry into 'Being' and 'Essence,' guarded the English mind from all doctrines that savored of Pantheism or mysticism. Carried into France, that philosophy bore its legitimate fruit; an atheism such as the world had never seen. It was reserved for Germany to revive Idealism; to re-assert that there is in the human soul an overwhelming conviction of the existence of God, and with this to restore the rejected Pantheisms and neglected mysticisms of past ages.

KANT.—Transcendental philosophy, which is merely another name for German Idealism, takes its beginning from Kant. He, however, only laid the foundation, his successors reared the superstructure. Kant, like Locke, was a reformer in philosophy, concerning himself not so much with being, as with our modes of knowing being. So far as he was instrumental in the restoration of a philosophy of being and essence, he was only an unwilling contributor. Idealism in the hands of Hume had met the same fate that materialism had met in the hands of the Idealists. Hume returned to absolute doubt—we have ideas, but we know nothing more—we have no right to identify thought with reality.

Cartesianism, as interpreted by Leibnitz, and systematized by Christian Wolf, was the orthodox philosophy of Germany. It had grown into an extravagant dogmatism, no longer tenable in presence of the searching scepticism that had come from France and England. Kant applied himself to the criticism of philosophy that he might save it, both from this dogmatism, and this scepticism. He tested the powers of the intellect, and essayed to fix the limits of reason. He tried to hold the balance between the materialist and the idealist, maintaining with the one the necessity of experience to give validity to our intellectual cognitions; with the other, that the intellect is the basis of our

knowledge, and that it contains *a priori* the condition on which we know anything by experience. A criticism of reason naturally led to a criticism of the conclusions of reason, or rather it included them. Prominent among these were the proofs of the Being of God, in the Cartesian and Leibnitzian philosophies, the 'ontological,' the 'cosmological,' and peculiarly in the original philosophy of Locke, the 'physico-theological.' The two first, Kant showed to be only subjectively valid, we having no means of applying to them the test of experience necessary to give validity to the mental ideas. The last he showed to be imperfect, as from design we cannot argue the existence of any being greater than a designer. The argument proves a world maker, but not a Creator; a framer, but not a maker of matter.

The idea of God, which Des Cartes recognized as in-born in the human mind had been elaborated by a process of dialectics into a demonstration of the existence of God. Kant objected to the conclusion, and yet admitted the fact of the existence of the idea, and while admitting it, endeavoured to determine how far, and in what manner, our reasonings concerning it are justified. In objecting to the idealistic arguments as theoretical demonstrations, he opposed the idealists. In again establishing their practical validity he opposed the sceptics. His guide, however, was not eclecticism, but criticism. His object was not idealistic, nor realistic, but to find exactly what was true in Idealism and in Realism.

The idea of God is in the mind, but His existence is not verified by experience, for it transcends experience. So on the other hand, the idea of the external world is derived through the senses. We have experience, or empirical knowledge of its existence; practically it exists, but as we have no cognition of anything external, by, and in itself, without the mind accompanying the cognition, so in pure reason its existence cannot be demonstrated. In the external world we have phenomena. Beyond this, we can demonstrate nothing. True to his principle of a critical investigator Kant wished to stop here, as having reached the furthest boundary of the possibility of human knowledge. Further than this, he was not an idealist, and only thus far is he the founder of Transcendentalism. In the first edition of his 'Critique of the pure Reason,' he threw out a conjecture that perhaps the reality of phenomena was only the *I* that contemplates it; that the thinking mind and the thing thought are perhaps one and the same substance.

On this conjecture Fichte started the doctrine of the *I*-hood.

Kant protested that Fichte's doctrine was not his, and to strengthen the protest that he was not responsible for the development of his ardent disciple, he omitted this passage in all subsequent editions of his 'Critique.'

The primitive duality then, of subject and object, was left untouched by Kant. The one he maintained to be the complement of the other, and both were reckoned necessary to make knowledge possible—*subject* as the form or the principle of our representations, and *object* as the principle of the matter of these representations. The one being thus necessary to the other, it could not be proved that either of them was a real being. Something real in their internal nature there must be, but what this substratum of phenomena is, what this being is which unites subject and object was not only left by Kant undefined, but even declared to be beyond our knowledge.

FICHTE.—It might have been supposed that the critical philosophy of Kant was omnipotent to check all further speculation concerning the nature of that which *Is*. Had he not fixed the limits of the human mind, and shown the impossibility of any science of the absolutely unconditioned? Had he not shown that it was impossible to demonstrate the truth, either of idealism or materialism; that, in the one case, we had no means of verifying by experience the ideas in the mind, and, in the other, no means of knowing the existence of objects independent of the mind always present in the cognition of them. Philosophy seemed to have spoken its last word. Materialism and idealism had been fairly weighed, and the truth in each impartially acknowledged. 'But,' said Fichte on the side of idealism, 'is not our knowledge of the subject greatly more than that of the object, and moreover, prior to it? We know that we have an internal world, and only through the medium of it do we know that there is an external world. The existence of my *I*, my consciousness, is a primary fact. The existence of anything external is only seen in the mirror of this *I*. Its existence therefore, is dependent, and may be only apparent. The subject is the manifest reality; the primitive ground of knowledge; the true foundation of philosophy.

On this consciousness Fichte based his philosophy, and from the given existence of the *I* it received its first form. *We think*, is our most certain knowledge. What it is which thinks need not concern us. Of its essence we know as little as we do of the substance of the world. Indeed we may not be justified in concluding that such an essence exists. We need not suppose its

existence, it is enough to take by itself the simple fact of consciousness. This is only cognised by us as an activity. It is the act of forming and representing internal images. We must, however, distinguish between the act and the image—the one is the acting process, the other the process by which it acts. In this way the *I* creates itself. By thus acting it becomes actually what it is potentially. It renders itself self-conscious. And in this act of the *I* we have a duality, itself and the object it evokes. The *I*, in positing its own existence, posits also that of the *non-I*. These two principles stand in the consciousness opposed to each other—the one limiting and determining the other, for what the *I* is, the *non-I* is not, and what the *non-I* is, the *I* is not. But the *I* in determining itself to a representation does so with the consciousness that the representation is only a modification of itself; so that the *I* and the *non-I* are again united in one and the same consciousness. The formula is Thesis, Antithesis, Synthesis.

Jacobi called this philosophy an *inverted Spinozism*. In place of the absolute substance *Fichte* substituted the *I*. He thought by this to avoid *Spinoza's* theology, but the endeavour was vain. He had ultimately to go beyond the *I*, for in no other way could he reach the Infinite. The finite consciousness disappeared in the infinite consciousness. The *I* found nothing but its own reflex. It sought a God, but it only found itself—the *I* answering to the *I*. Freed from the limits which it produces for itself, our *I* is the Infinite *I* of the universe; that in which all finite *I's* lose their existence, and in which are embraced as its representation all the varied phenomena of the external world. There is originally and essentially but one consciousness, that of the absolutely Infinite *I*. Every effort to represent this *I* as conceivable by the human intellect was rejected by *Fichte* as anthropomorphism. The supposition of a personal God was a mere transference of human limits and imperfections to the Divine Being; and when we ascribe to Him such attributes as consciousness, or extra-mundane existence, we only make Him finite, for these qualities necessarily include the idea of substance extended in time and space.

God is not substance. The attributes ascribed to Him by *Spinoza* are liable to the same objections as were made to the common anthropomorphism. If they do not make God man, they yet limit Him. They make Him corporeal, and substitute a substratum of the universe for the Divine Activity. Nor do we escape this result by calling God a Spirit. What is spirit?

A mere negation of body, a term which as a positive definition of God, is wholly useless unless by a deception of the mind we ascribe to spirit some of the qualities which constitute a body. For the same reason that we deny to God consciousness, personality, and substantiality, we also deny Him *reality*; all reality being to us only finite. God cannot be adequately conceived, defined, or represented; for conceptions, definitions, and representations are only applicable to things limited and determined. 'If,' says Fichte 'we call God a consciousness, it follows that we apply to Him the limits of the human consciousness, if we get rid of this limit of thought, then there remains to us a knowledge which is quite incomprehensible, and this might well be ascribed to God, who, so to speak, is in this sense pure consciousness, intelligence, spiritual life, and activity, save only that we could form no notion of such attributes, and on that account would rather abstain from the approximate definition, and that, too, out of strict regard to philosophical accuracy, for every conception of the Deity would be an idol.'

God is the infinite *I*, clearly incomprehensible. The finite *I* is known only as an activity, and so likewise only as an *Activity* do we know God. We are constituted in a moral order. As finite *I*'s we have duties and destinies. By fulfilling these we realize our place in the moral order of the universe. And this order is the highest idea of God to which we can attain. We need no other God, we can comprehend no other. Only by this Moral Order living and working in us do we perceive anything divine. God is not a being or an existence, but a pure Activity—the life and soul of a transcendent world order, just as every personal *I* or finite intelligence is no being, but a pure activity in conformity with duty, as a member of that transcendent world order.

This form—the form of morality—is the second phase of the development of Fichte's philosophy. It incurred, as we might have expected, the charge of Atheism. Jacobi said it was the 'worship of mere *universality*,' and even Schelling said 'that it swallowed up all religion.' Fichte defended himself, and in his later works so explained his meaning as to leave no doubt of his firm faith in God. *Jäsche* says 'The idealist's religious faith in a moral order of the world is now raised to a higher standpoint; to the realistic religious faith in a living and independent intelligent principle of the world order; and for the proud self-feeling of absolute freedom, we now have humility and submission to an Absolute Will.' These later writings were

addressed to popular audiences. A mystical faith had taken the place of metaphysical reasonings. Man reaches the knowledge of God in pure thought, which is the eye of the soul. By this he perceives God, for what is pure thought but the Divine Existence? Of the mode of God's being we know nothing, nor do we need to know. 'We cannot pierce the inaccessible light in which He dwells, but through the shadows which veil His presence there flows an endless stream of life, and love, and beauty. He is the Fountain of our life, the Home of our spirits, the One Being, the *I am*, for whom reason has no idea, and language has no name.' In conscious union with the Infinite, addressing Him as a 'Sublime and Living Will,' Fichte exclaims 'I may well raise my soul to Thee, for Thou and I are not divided. Thy voice sounds within me, mine sounds in Thee, and all my thoughts, if they are but good and true, are in Thee also. In Thee the incomprehensible, I myself and the world in which I live, become comprehensible to me. All the secrets of my existence are laid open, and perfect harmony arises in my soul. I hide my face before Thee, and lay my hand upon my mouth. *How* thou art and seemest to Thine own Being I can never know, any more than I can assume Thy nature. After thousands upon thousands of spirit lives I shall comprehend Thee as little as I now do in this house of clay. Thou knowest, and willest, and workest, omnipresent to finite reason, but as I now, and always must conceive of being, *Thou art not*.'

God *knows*, *wills*, and *works*, He is something more than a principle, just as He is something more than a person. Yet our highest conception of Him is as a principle, as the world order; and our most convincing proof of His existence is in the realization of our place in this order. Then we become conscious of our oneness with Him. We cannot become God, but when we annihilate ourselves to the very root, God alone remains, and is all in all. We speak of our existence as something distinct from God's, but ours is only the negation of existence. Apart from the Being of God our being is a mere semblance, which has assumed the form and appearance of being. That, alone, is reality, which is good and true. Our highest conception of being is identical with our highest conception of good—a principle of right. What then is blessedness, but to seek this true life? The eternal is in us and around us on every side. Would we realize this presence; would we feel that this eternal Being is our being, then must we forsake the transitory and apparent, and cling with an unflinching love to the unchangeably true, and

everlastingly good. God is goodness unceasingly active, in what the holy man does, lives, and loves, God appears in His own immediate and efficient life. Nor in man only does God appear, but in all nature the soul purified from the love of the transitory and unreal may see Him immediately present. 'Through that,' says Fichte, 'which seems to me a dead mass, my eye beholds this eternal life and movement in every vein of sensible and spiritual nature, and sees this life rising in ever-increasing growth, and ever purifying itself to a more spiritual expression. The universe is to me no longer that eternally repeated play; that monster swallowing up itself only to bring itself forth again as it was before. It has become transformed before me, and bears the one stamp of spiritual life; a constant progress towards higher perfection in a line that runs out into the Infinite. The sun rises and sets. The stars sink and re-appear, and all the spheres hold their circle-dance, but they never return again as they disappeared. And even in this light-fountain of life itself, there is life and progress. Every hour which they lead on; every morning and every evening sinks with new increase upon the world. New life and love descend from the spheres, and encircle nature as the cool evening encircles the earth.'

Wherefore should man doubt of life and immortality? Are they not clearly revealed to the soul that loves the true life? Being passes through its phases, but it does not cease to be. A dark soul not recognizing its root in the Godhead may be troubled at the changes in nature, and made sad by the passing away of that which to it alone seems real. But is not all death in nature birth? In death itself visibly appears the exaltation of life. There is no destructive principle in nature, for nature throughout is free and unclouded life. It is not death which kills, but the new life concealed behind death begins to develop itself. Death and birth are but the struggle of life with itself to assume a more glorious and congenial form. 'And my death,' said Fichte, speaking as one who participated in this blessed and unchanging life. 'How can it be aught else but birth, since I am not a mere sham and semblance of life, but bear within me the life which is one, true, original, and essential. It is impossible to conceive that nature should annihilate a life which does not proceed from her: nature exists for me, I do not exist for her.'

Fichte did not profess to derive his doctrines from Christianity, yet he did maintain, that between them and Christianity the

identity was complete. He lived in that life in which Christ lived, and drew his inspiration from the same fountain of truth. All true men have found their strength there, and Christ above all others because He was supremely true. Christianity then is no external revelation, but Godspeaking and working in humanity. By Christianity, however, Fichte only meant what he called the Johannean gospel. He rejected S. Paul and his party as unsound teachers of Christian doctrine. They were but half Christians, and left untouched the fundamental error of Judaism and Heathenism. S. John was the disciple who had respect for reason. He alone appealed to that evidence which has weight with the philosopher—the internal. ‘If any man will do the will of Him that sent me he shall know of the doctrine whether it be of God.’ The preface to S. John’s gospel is not to be regarded as a merely speculative prelude to an historical narrative, but is to be taken as the essence and stand-point of all the discourses of Jesus. In the sight of John this preface is not his own doctrine, but that of Jesus, and indeed is the spirit, the innermost root of the whole doctrine of Jesus. And what is the doctrine of that preface? Its subject is creation. Precisely that on which Judaism and Heathenism had erred. Compelled to recognize the absolute unity and unchangeableness of the Divine Nature in itself, and being unwilling to give up the independence and real existence of finite things, they made the latter proceed from the former by an act of absolute and arbitrary Power. The Jewish books begin:—‘In the beginning God *created*.’ No, said S. John, in express contradiction to this. In the beginning; in the same beginning which is there spoken of; that is, originally and before all time, God did not create, for no creation was needed, but there *was* already ‘In the beginning *was* the word; and all things were made by it.’ In the beginning *was* the word; in the original text the *Logos*, which might be translated reason, or as nearly the same idea is expressed in the book called the ‘Wisdom of Solomon,’ wisdom. John says that the Word was in the beginning, that the Word was with God, that God Himself was the Word, that the Word was in the beginning with God.

Fichte asks,—‘Was it possible for John to have more clearly expressed the doctrine which we have already taught in such words as the following:—Besides God’s inward and hidden Being in Himself, which we are able to conceive of in thought, He has another existence which we can only practically apprehend, but yet this existence necessarily arises through His in-

ward and absolute Being itself; and His existence, which is only *by us* distinguished from His Being, is *in itself and in Him* not distinguished for His Being, but this existence is originally before all time, and independently of all time, with His Being, inseparable from His Being, and itself His Being,—the Word in the beginning, the Word with God, the Word in the beginning with God, God Himself the Word, and the Word itself God. Was it possible for Him to set forth more distinctly and forcibly the ground of this proposition, that in God and from God there is nothing that arises or becomes, but in Him there is only an IS; an Eternal Present, and whatever has existence must be originally with Him, and must be Himself? ‘Away with the perplexing phantasm,’ might the Evangelist have added had he wished to multiply words. ‘Away with that perplexing phantom of a creation from God, of a something that is not Himself, and has not been eternally and necessarily in Himself; an emanation in which He is not Himself present, but forsakes His work—an expulsion and separation from Him that casts us out into desolate nothingness, and makes Him an arbitrary and hostile Lord.’

The immediate existence of God is necessarily consciousness—reason. In it the world and all things exist, or as John expresses it, they are in the Word. They are God’s spontaneous expression of Himself. That Word or consciousness is the only Creator of the world, and by means of the principle of separation contained in its very nature, the Creator of the manifold and infinite variety of things in the world. This Word manifested itself in a personal, sensible, and human existence; namely in that of Jesus of Nazareth, of whom the Evangelist truly said, He was ‘the Eternal Word *made flesh*.’ In and through Him, others were to be partakers of the divine nature. His disciples were to be one with Him as He was one with the Father. This is the characteristic dogma of Christianity as a phenomenon of time; as a temporary form of the religious culture of man. But the deep truth which it reveals is the absolute unity of the human existence with the Divine. Christ does not constitute that union, but reveals to us the knowledge that it exists. Before Him, it was unknown, and all who have since known it, may ascribe that knowledge to Him. The philosopher may indeed discover it, but it is already revealed to him in Christianity. All Christ’s discourses as recorded by John are full of it. We must eat His flesh and drink His blood—that is, we must be transformed into Him.

We must live His life, not in imitation merely, but in a faithful repetition. We must be like Him, the Eternal Word made flesh and blood. For those who repeat the character of Christ He prays that they all may be one as 'Thou Father art in me and I in Thee that they also may be one in us.' *One* in us—all distinctions are laid aside. The whole community, the First-born of all, with His more immediate followers, and with all those who are born in later days, fall back together into the one common source of all life, the Godhead. Thus Christianity, its purpose being obtained, falls again into harmony with the absolute truth and maintains that every man may, and ought to come into unity with God, and in his own personality become the divine existence in the Eternal Word. No man had ever a higher preception of the identity of Godhead and humanity than the founder of Christianity. He never supposed the existence of finite things; they had no existence for Him. Only in union with God was there reality. How the non-entity assumed the semblance of being, the difficulty from which profane speculation proceeds, He never cared to enquire. He knew truth in Himself, He knew it solely in his own existence. He knew that all being is founded in God alone, and consequently that His own being proceeds directly from Him. When He showed His disciples the way to blessedness, He told them to be like Himself, for He knew of no blessedness but in His own existence. They were to come to Him for life, and they were to find it by being in Him as He was in the Father, and being one with Him as He was one with the Father.

SCHELLING.—With Fichte the reality of the object had disappeared. The *non-I* was only the production of the *I*. Here he departed from Kant, who left subject and object as correlates; the one giving validity to the other. At the same point Schelling departed from Fichte. The arguments which rendered the existence of the object uncertain prevailed equally against the existence of the subject. But, why should we not believe in the existence of the external world, or why should we doubt our own existence? After all our reasonings, the fact still remains that we *do exist*, and with our existence emerges face to face an existence which is not *We*. The *I* and the *non-I* continue to assert their being—the subject as validly as the object, and the object as validly as the subject. Is either of them real, and which? Fichte said, the subject. Schelling said,—both are real, but they have their reality in the identity of the two. The thinking process reveals to us not merely a

subject or an object, but both as one—the mind thinking, and the thing thought. We cannot separate them, because we cannot have the one without the other. The *I* is then evidently a subject-object. It is a mind possessing in itself the potentiality of all that is out of itself, and in its own spontaneous evolution evolving the potential into the actual. Thinking is thus identical with being, for there can be no thinking without a thing thought, and this thing thought cannot be separated from the mind thinking. There can be no knowledge without a thing known. A true knowledge, therefore, can be only a knowledge of self as subject and object—in other words, a self-consciousness. What is thus true of the human *I* is equally true of the *I* of the universe—the absolute or fundamental *I*. It too is a mind knowing, identical with the things known, an absolute reason in which all things exist as potentialities and come forth as actual. That *I*, to use Fichte's expression, is an absolute activity whose movements are represented to us in time and space. The activity of the finite *I* is the result of its being acted upon by the *I* of the universe. The world spirit is knowing itself as subject and object in every individual, so that in his internal essence every man is real and actual; but, as to his form and personality he is imaginary and unsubstantial.

We have just said that Schelling at the point of the reality of the external world departed from Fichte, yet only to give reality to the external world from its necessary connection with the ideal. It may be maintained, and justly, that as yet he is on Fichte's stand-point, for nature is wholly deduced from the essence of the *I*. Schelling's earliest writings do not show a sudden departure from Fichte, but a gradual development, imperceptibly it would seem, to the author himself, from the doctrine of the *I* to a philosophy of nature. In the later writings, the stand-point is frequently changed. Schelling felt that among real philosophers the harmony was greater than the difference. In every new form which the expression of his own philosophy took, he identified it with that of some other philosopher who had gone before him. Having died without giving to the world the long expected exposition which would show the agreement of all the forms his doctrines assumed, we have no alternative but to follow them in their historical development.

This is divided by Schwegler into five periods. In the first, Schelling agrees with Fichte. In the second, he has advanced to the recognition of a science of nature as distinct from the

science of mind. In the third, he agrees with Spinoza. In the fourth with Plotinus, and last of all with Jacob Böhme, of whom he boasts that he is not ashamed.

I. Schelling agrees with Fichte. He discourses of the *I* and from it deduces nature. He sees in this nature, processes corresponding to those of mind. As feeling, perception, and knowledge are the result of the antagonism of the two potencies—the unlimited and the limited—which constitute mind, so is matter the production of attraction and repulsion. These forces being its original, it is not something gross and inert, as we might suppose but of the nature of those forces which though called material are yet more like something immaterial. Force is that which we may compare to mind. The conflict which constitutes mind being precisely that conflict of opposite forces which constitutes matter, we must look to a higher identity for the union of the two. The same *Absolute* is manifested in the external world as in mind. Nature is visible mind, and mind is invisible nature. The stand point being the *I*, the internal world comes first. It is then followed by the external world as its copy. The mind produces this copy in its way to self-consciousness. In the copy the successive mental stages are visibly marked. Organic life being the highest, in it especially does mind behold the production of itself. In everything organic there is something symbolical. Every plant bears some feature of mind. Each organism is an interpenetration of form and matter. Like the mind, nature too strives towards a purpose, and presses from within outwards. All nature proceeds from a centre progressing onward and outward to higher stages. The prevailing mode of its activity, the element so to speak of its existence, is the conflict of opposing forces. These are one in a higher unity, and taken together, they lead to the idea of an organizing principle which makes of the universe a system, in other words, to the idea of a *World Soul*. Though nature and mind are but two sides of the same *Absolute*, yet the science of each is a distinct science by itself. Here, Schelling progresses to the second form of his philosophy, where he distinguishes between a philosophy of nature and a philosophy of mind.

II. The distinction, however, is only provisional, and for the purposes of philosophy. The development of the fundamental unity is ever kept in view. We may begin with nature and trace backwards the progress from mind, or we may begin with mind and study the procession from it of the external world. The

one gives us natural philosophy which aims at an explanation of the ideal by the real; the other transcendental philosophy which seeks to explain the real by the ideal.

Nature, which to other men seems dead, and moved only by a power external to itself, is to the true philosopher a living self-unfolding energy. It is the absolute unity manifesting itself on the phenomenal side. It is the movement between the producing activity and the product. Taken absolutely, it is infinite activity or productivity but, this being hindered in expressing itself, gives finite products. These individual finite products are only phenomenal; beyond each one of which nature herself advances. The individual is contrary to nature; she desires the absolute, and to express it is her constant effort. All different as these finite products are, nature yet leaves on all the impress of her unity. We may divide and subdivide, but only to return again to the original identity. The powers in nature are distributed in different measures to various classes of beings, yet the organization of all things organic is one. The life of a plant is but the smallest degree of the life which is enjoyed by man. In the inorganic world we seem to lose the trace of this unity. Yet here we find gradations and processes, corresponding to the gradations and energies of organic existence. There must be a third principle or *medium* by which organic and inorganic are again united—some ultimate cause in which they are one, and through which, as through a common soul of nature, both organic and inorganic have at once their origin and identity.

On the transcendental side the philosophy of nature is that of the *I*, the beholding subject. Starting from mind, we must establish the validity and explain the character of mental cognitions. The common understanding gives a world existing outside of ourselves. The first problem of transcendental philosophy is to explain this pre-judgment of the common understanding. This constitutes theoretical philosophy, which beginning with the *I* develops the history of self-consciousness through its different stages of sensations, intuitive abstraction, and will. It explains the origin of the external world in the productive intuition, and the existence of time and space in the outer and inner intuition.

With the act of the will arises the second problem:—How we can produce an effect upon the objective world according to representations which arise freely in us. The solution of this is practical philosophy. Here the *I* is no longer unconsciously

beholding but consciously producing. The Absolute is revealing Himself in the self-determinations of the human spirit. In the effort to solve these problems, transcendental philosophy finds itself engaged in the solution of a problem yet higher, that is, the reconciliation of the subjective and the objective. This can only be done on the ground that the activity through which the objective world is produced is originally identical with that which utters itself in the will. This identity of the conscious and unconscious in nature is shown by the philosophy of art. The peculiarity of nature, is that it exhibits itself as nothing but a blind mechanism and yet it displays design. It represents an identity of the conscious subjective, and the consciousless objective activity. In nature the *I* beholds its most peculiar essence, which consists alone in this identity. That contradiction between the conscious and the consciousless, which is inconsciously reconciled in nature, finds its perfect reconciliation in a work of art. There the intelligence finds a perfect intuition of itself. The *unknown* which perfectly harmonizes the objective, and the conscious activity, is nothing other than that absolute and unchangeable identity to which every existence must be referred.

III. In the third period Schelling has advanced from the idealism of Fichte, to the idealistic realism of Spinoza. The second period is the history of that progress. Now the stage is reached and Schelling adopts Spinoza's definition of matter, as an attribute which expresses in itself an infinite and eternal Being. He repeats too with increased conviction of its truth, another of Spinoza's sentiments, 'that the more we know individual things, the more we know God;' and to those who seek the science of the Eternal *I-hood*, he says, 'Come to physical nature and see it there.' It may satisfy such pretenders to philosophy as Epicurus and his disciples, to regard matter as simply atoms; but it was partly guessed, and partly known by all the wise men of antiquity, that matter had another side than the apparent one, and that a duality lay at its root. And since the question has been raised again in modern times, it has been concluded that the duality was due to a third principle, and therefore matter represents a triplicity enclosed in itself, and identical with itself. The first glance of nature teaches us what the last teaches us. Matter expresses no other nor closer bond than that which is in the reason, the eternal unity of the infinite with the finite. In the things we recognize the pure essence which cannot be further explained, yet we never see

the essence by itself, but always and everywhere in a wonderful union with that which cannot of itself be, and is explained only by the being of the essence. This which cannot be an essence by itself is called the finite or the form. It is not first a something by the infinite coming to it, nor by its going to the infinite, but in the identity with the infinite. These always appear united. The necessity which makes them one, is the bond or *copula*, which must be itself the only real and true infinite.

Schelling repeats this idea in a multitude of forms. The Absolute is the copula of the finite and infinite, the being of the ideal and real, the identity of subject and object, the unity of mind and matter. This absolute is reason—the only standpoint of philosophy which seeks to know things as they really are, that is, as they are in the reason. Every thing which is, is in essence like the reason, and is one with it. Now the reason is absolutely *one*, and like itself. Its highest law, therefore, which is that of identity, must be the highest law of all being. Difference then can be only difference of quantity, and can exist only in the finite; for the Absolute Being, perfect identity or difference cannot exist there. Nothing is either simple object or simple subject, but in all things subject and object are united; this union being in different proportions, so that sometimes the subject, and sometimes the object, has the preponderance. The fundamental form of the infinite is $A=A$, so the scheme of the finite is $A=B$ (i.e., the union of a subjective with another objective in a different proportion.) But in reality nothing is finite, because the identity is the only reality. So far as there is difference in individual things, the identity exists in the form of indifference. If we could see together everything which is, we should find in all the pure identity, because we should find in all a perfect quantitative equilibrium of subjectivity and objectivity. In looking at individual objects we see the preponderance sometimes on the one side, and sometimes on the other; but on the whole this is compensated. The absolute identity is the absolute totality; the universe itself. There is by itself no individual thing or being. The absolute identity is essentially the same in every part of the universe. The universe may be conceived under the figure of a line, the centre of which is the $A=A$, while at the end, on one side, is $A=b$ (i.e. transcendence of the subjective) and at the end, on the other side, is $a=B$ (i.e., a transcendence of the objective) though this must be conceived, so that a relative identity may exist

even in these extremes. The one side is the real, or nature, the other side is the ideal. The symbol of the Absolute is the magnet where one principle constantly manifests itself as two poles, and still rests in the midst as their identity. Divide the magnet, every part will be a complete system in itself: two poles and a point of divergence. Just as every part of the magnet is the entire magnet in miniature, so also every individual development in nature is a miniature universe; since, however, the preponderance of the real is the characteristic of nature, the ideal, though present, is held as it were in the bondage of matter, spell-bound in the embrace of reality. But in an ever-rising gradation the ideal effects its disenchantment, the members of that gradation again embodying the type—real, ideal, identity, where it is to be remembered that in each of these three, both principles are present, so that the powers or potencies in nature represent only their particular quantitative differences.

The first potency in nature is weight, matter, the most *real* principle, which craves a necessary complement from without, that complement, the 'ideal real,' is light or movement which is the second potency. The union of both, the identity, life, or *organism* constitutes the third. Organism is just as original as matter. Inorganic nature as such does not exist; it is actually organized, and is as it were the universal germ, out of which organization proceeds. The organization of every globe is but the inner evolution of the globe itself. The earth by its own evolving becomes plant and animal. The organic world has not formed itself out of the inorganic, but has been at least potentially present in it from the beginning. That matter which is before us apparently inorganic, is the residuum of organic metamorphoses which could not become organic. The human brain is the highest bloom of the whole organic metamorphoses of the earth.

The manifestations in the ideal world; corresponding to matter, light, and life; are truth, goodness, beauty; or science, religion and art. God is again regarded as manifested in the great universe, the macrocosm; or in man, the little world, or the microcosm, and in the ideals corresponding to these, which are history and the state. In nature we see the real progressing towards identity, by bodying forth with increasing adequacy the ideal, and conversely we see the ideal advancing towards the same identity, by shaping itself out more and more into the real. As the acme in the one case we behold reason organized in man, and in the other the transcendental imagination embodied in works of art.

We need not follow Schelling into the details of his nature philosophy. It is enough to mark the principle on which it is grounded; the identity of the object with the subject. The ideal is represented as shadowing itself over into the real. Ideas are produced, and these again are necessarily productive. They are related to each other as they are related to the original unity. The entire result of continued subject-objecting which according to one of the first laws of the form of the absolute goes into the infinite is this—that the entire absolute universe with all ranks of being is reduced to the absolute unity. In it nothing is truly individual, and nothing as yet is, which is not absolutely ideal, entire soul—pure '*nature producing*.'

The ancients said of God, that He was that Being whose centre is here, His circumference nowhere. 'Were we on the other hand,' says Schelling, 'to define space, we might say that it is that which is everywhere merely circumference, and nowhere centre, space as such is the mere form of things without the Bond.' Its unreality then is evident, for it shows nothing but its want of power, its destitution of being. We cannot define space, because there is nothing in it to define, nor can we say how it was created, for how can we speak of the creation of that which is non-being? The bond as the one in the multiplicity negatives the multiplicity as self-subsisting, and this at the same time negatives space in the form of this self-subsisting multiplicity. Whilst the bond thus negatives space as the form of the self-subsisting multiplicity it also posits time—the other form of finitude. Time is the expression of the One in opposition to the many. Its centre is everywhere, its circumference no where. Temporal things have, as it were, bubbled over from the eternal, and been posited in time. In the *being-less-ness* of time, the real is the eternal *Copula* without which time would not flow over. Every moment is an undivided eternity. If we did not see eternity in the moment, then could we see nothing anywhere, and the moment itself would be unfulfilled. The universe is beyond all time and space. It is only the imagination which changes the actual infinity of the all into the empirical of time and space. In the true infinity of the all the greatest does not differ from the least and endless duration does not differ from a moment. It has neither beginning nor end, but both at once, because the all is neither in time nor in space. The world goes beyond time, not from eternity—that is, not from endless duration, but in an eternal way. Everything is thus eternal, for eternity is wholly different in kind from duration. Duration is short, but

Eternity is shorter still. Eternity is all in a moment, as substance is also the all in a point and infinite. Infinite duration, were it conceivable, could not create eternity, neither can the smallest duration annihilate it.

IV. In the fourth period, Schelling's philosophy is allied to Neo-Platonism. He had passed from the *I*-hood of Fichte, to the Ideo-Naturalism of Spinoza; and now he has come to recognize with Plotinus a ground of absolute knowledge in the mind itself. We say he has passed from Fichte, and Spinoza, but the transition was no violent effort. There was no barrier to be crossed. The *In-itself* of the *I* freed from all limits and opposition was itself the Absolute. Spinoza, as well as Schelling recognized the intuition of the intellect as the ultimate ground and certainty of knowledge. Reason has not only an idea of God, but it is itself that idea. In the identity of subject and object, the knowing and the known, is an immediate revelation of God. 'I know,' says Schelling, 'something higher than science. And if science has only these two ways open before it to knowledge—*viz*, analysis or abstraction, and that of synthetic derivation, then we deny all science of the Absolute. Speculation is everything—that is a beholding of that which is in God. Science itself has worth only so far as it is speculative—that is, only so far as it is a contemplation of God as He is. But the time shall come when the sciences shall more and more cease, and immediate knowledge take their place. The mortal eye closes only in the highest science when it is no longer the man who sees, but the Eternal Beholding which has now become seeing in him.' But Schelling's agreement with the Neo-Platonists did not merely consist in adopting their starting point of intellectual intuition. He had hitherto made natural philosophy the science of the Divine and had shown the identity of the Ideal and the Real. But the external world still presented a difficulty which he could not ignore. That would stand forth as something distinct from the Absolute and as opposed to the Absolute. True, indeed, finite things have no reality in themselves; but whence is their unreal existence? Whence had this sense world its origin? Not, certainly, in any reality imparted to it from the Absolute, but in a complete falling away and separation from the Absolute. To restore it is the work of time. History is the record of the progress of reconciliation. God is manifesting Himself there, and when that manifestation is complete, so also will be the world's restoration.

V. The mystical element, which appeared so decidedly in the fourth period of Schelling's philosophy, was yet more fully developed in the fifth and last. He expressly abandons Spinoza for the company of Jacob Böhme. The Philosopher of Gortitz, while maintaining the fundamental union between God and nature, had yet definitely distinguished between them. Schelling had done the same in the earlier forms of his philosophy, but the method of Böhme seemed to lead to a more definite Theism, and to be free from the objections to which Spinozism was exposed.

This method was to recognize an abyssal Nothing, in which God and nature had their beginning eternally. Schelling called it the 'Original Ground,' or rather the '*Un*-Ground.' It is not merely an idea, but a something real and actual. It is not God Himself considered in His actuality, but only the ground of His existence. It is nature in God; an essence inseparable from Him, and yet different. The relation is explained analogically through the power of gravity and light in nature. The power of gravity goes before the light in its eternal dark ground of being, which is not itself actual, and which disappears in night whilst the light goes forth. This 'Original Ground,' or '*Un*-Ground' is the absolute indifference. Now indifference is not a product of opposites, nor are they implicitly contained in it, but it is an essence different from all opposites, and in which all opposites are broken. It is nothing but their annihilation, and therefore it has no predicate but that of predicatelessness. The '*Un*-ground' goes before all existence. But the precedence is not one of time. There is here no first nor last. The one is not without the other, so that God is both that which exists; and again the *Prius* of the ground—since the ground as such could not be, if God did not exist.

This ground of the existence of God is nature in God. It is also described as the non-intelligent principle in God, not only as a mere non-intelligent, but because it is the potentiality—the ground and beginning of the existing God—that is of God as Intelligence. It is a medium which works indeed with wisdom, yet, as a blind, in-born intuition, and not a conscious wisdom. 'I posit God' says Schelling, 'as the first and the last, as Alpha and Omega; but He is not as Alpha what he is as Omega.' In the one He is God *involved*; † in the other He is God *evolved*.‡ For the evolution of Deity it is necessary that

† *Deus implicitus.*

‡ *Deus explicitus.*

God have before Him an object, and this object must be Himself. To reach self-consciousness, the Absolute comes from His unconscious envelopment, which is His first state. He comes out of it by a necessary *evolution*, which is the revelation of Himself—creation. As yet He is but half-conscious, His wisdom is but a blind instinct. This is the condition of nature—this is the God of pure naturalism. He then becomes the pure and holy Divinity whom we worship—a personal God. He is thus the first and the last. As Alpha, He is *God involved*, as Omega, He is *God evolved*. True religion reconciles the worship of both in the worship of the higher *Identity*, who is at once Alpha and Omega.

This nature in God is the bond which unites Naturalism and Theism. This is Schelling's passage from Spinozism to the recognition of a conscious, personal God. Without this bond there would be on the one side God without nature; on the other, nature without God. It may be asked concerning the Perfect—the Actual, why is it not so from the beginning? The answer is that God is not merely a being, but a life, and all life has a destiny, and is subjected to suffering and becoming. Every life, without distinction, goes forth from the condition of evolution. Whence as regards its next condition, it is dead and dark. Even so is it with the life of God. Personality rests on the union of one independent with one dependent on it, so that these two entirely penetrate each other and are one. Thus God, through the union in Him of the ideal principle with the independent ground, is the highest personality. And since the living unity of both is Spirit, then is God, as the absolute Bond, Spirit in an eminent and absolute sense.

We have followed Schwegler's five divisions of Schelling's Philosophy, but in reality the five may be reduced to two—that in which Schelling agrees with Spinoza, and that in which he follows Böhme. He repudiated the epithet 'Pantheistic,' and strongly expressed his belief in the personality of God. But whether Spinoza or Böhme was the more Pantheistic, or which of them most believed in the Divine Personality is 'among the things which we desire to know.'

'The God of pure idealism,' said Schelling, 'as well as the God of pure realism is necessarily impersonal. That is the God of Fichte and of Spinoza, but to me God is the living unity of all forces—the union of the ideal principle with itself in the bosom of its own independence. This is spirit in the only true sense.'

The latest and most interesting phase of Schelling's Philo-

sophy is its application to mythology, in which Schelling seeks to discover the principle of divine revelation. Worship was first addressed to the elements. Visible objects were worshipped with God. Afterwards, in the Greek religion for instance, these objects were endowed with spirit, and the Infinite was finitely represented. Christianity, on the other hand, went out direct to the Infinite. When its ideas became objective they were still infinite. They were clothed, not in permanent, but in phenomenal forms. They were not eternal beings of nature, but divine manifestations fleeting and transient which could never be changed into an absolute present. The Greek religion was Polytheism, for this reason that the Infinite became finite. In its very nature it was a potential Polytheism. Christianity is not Polytheism, because it does not see in the finite the symbol of the Infinite. It does not make a synthesis of the absolute with limitations, in which the form of the absolute remains with the limits of the finite. It has not, therefore, its origin in nature, but in that which falls into time. It is in its inmost spirit, and in its highest sense, historical. Every particular moment of time is a manifestation of a particular side of God, in each of which He is absolute. What the Greek religion had as an *at-once*, the Christian has a *one-after-another*.

Nature and history are generally related to each other as the real and the ideal unity. Even so is the religion of the Greek world related to the Christian, in which the Divine has ceased to manifest itself in nature, and is only discernible in history.

Nature is the sphere of the *one-in-itself-being* of things, in which, in virtue of the imaging of the Infinite in the finite they, as symbols of the ideas, have likewise a life independent of their signification. God is, as it were, exoteric in nature—the ideal appears through another than itself. But in history, the Divine lays aside the veil, and the mystery of the divine kingdom is manifest.

With Christianity the whole relation of nature and the ideal world must be inverted. As nature was the *manifest* in Heathenism, the ideal world retreated as mystery; but, in Christianity, nature must retreat as mystery, while the ideal world becomes the *manifest*. The old world is the nature side of history—the ruling idea in it is the infinite in the finite. The old world could only end, and the new one begin, by the Infinite coming into the finite—not to deify it, but only to sacrifice it

to God in its own person, and thereby to make reconciliation. The first idea, then, of Christianity is necessarily the incarnation of God. Christ is the summit and end of the old world of gods. He stands as a phenomenon determined from eternity, but transient in time. He is the boundary of both worlds. He returns into the invisible, and promises in His place, not the coming again into the finite, but the Spirit—the ideal principle which leads back the finite to the Infinite, and, as such, is the light of the new world.

To represent the unity of the finite and Infinite objectively and through the symbol, as the Greek religion essayed to do, is impossible. The all-pervading antinomy of the divine and the natural, is only removed through the subjective determination to think both one, in a way that is inconceivable. Such a subjective unity the idea of miracle expresses. On this supposition the origin of every idea is a miracle. It enters into time, and yet has no relation to time. Ideas cannot arise in the way of time. It is God Himself who manifests them, and therefore the idea of revelation is necessary to Christianity.

A religion, which like poetry lives in the species, does not require a historical foundation. Its nature is ever manifest. When the Divine does not live in abiding forms, but goes out in fleshly phenomena it wants the means of being held fast and perpetuated. Outside of the peculiar mysteries of religion, there is necessarily a mythology on its exoteric side, and which is grounded on religion, as religion of the other kind is grounded on mythology.

The reconciliation of the finite fallen from God, through His own birth into the finite, is the first thought of Christianity; and the perfecting of its entire view of the universe, and of its history is in the idea of the Trinity, which, on that account, is necessary to it. The Son of God—the Eternal produced from the being of the Father is the finite itself, as it is in the eternal intuition of God. He appears as God suffering, and made subject to the destinies of time in His incarnation. He shuts up the finite world, and opens that of the infinite, which is the *kingdom* of the Spirit.

When Schelling, following Böhme, made the imperfect creation a necessary development of God, he was met by the question which all philosophers, Pantheistic or otherwise, have had to answer; 'Is God then the author of evil?' 'No,' answered Schelling, 'for evil though it is necessary is nothing real.' It is the darkness which God, who is light, requires for the full mani-

festation of Himself. All birth begins in obscurity. It comes out of darkness. In every existence the light is fighting with the darkness. Where the darkness predominates, there is evil.

On the immortality of the soul, Schelling differs in nothing from Spinoza. 'The I,' he says, 'and its essence undergoes neither conditions nor restrictions. Its primitive form is that of Being, pure and eternal. We cannot say of it, *it was* or *it will be*, we can only say, *it is*. It exists absolutely. It is then outside of time and beyond it. The form of its intellectual intuition is eternity. Now since it is eternal it has no duration, for duration only relates to objects, so that eternity properly consists in having nothing to do with time.' This is the eternity which belongs to God, and, therefore, belongs to the human soul, which finds its true life in God—whose essence is the essence of God, and as it returns to the service of its life, it loses its individuality, and knows itself as one with the Absolute and the Eternal.

When Schelling gave to the world his philosophy of revelation he declared that all his former philosophy was only a poem, a 'mere poem.' The public, it is said, never took it for anything else, even including 'the last development.'*

HEGEL.—There is nothing new in Hegel. After mastering his fearful verbology we have gained no new ideas; but he inherited the riches of all previous philosophers. The whole world of speculation lay open before him. He made a system, grand, compact, logical. He summed up the entire wisdom of the world. He spoke the last word of philosophy. With him philosophy stands or falls. A disciple and fellow student of Schelling he had much in common with his master, but he came out from Schelling, as Schelling came out from Fichte, and Fichte from Kant. For 'the poetical rhapsodies, the dithyrambic inspirations, the capricious contemplations, and the brilliant disorders' of Schelling, he substituted an inflexible method by which he submitted to the yoke of philosophy all the triumphs of science. But how shall we explain Hegel? When M. Cousin asked Hegel for a succinct statement of his system, the German smiled ironically and said 'it was impossible, *especially in French*.'

* Schelling's philosophy, though a 'mere poem,' like all true poetry was pregnant with truth. Among his disciples in nature philosophy—those who looked upon all the forms of nature as a picture of the divine life—were Oken, Klein, and Blasche. Among his mystical disciples—those who considered the spirit as produced by nature, and yet capable of rising above it—were Schubert, Steffens, and Baader. The famous Romantic School also claimed discipleship from Schelling—Novalis, Solger, Frederic Schlegel, and Schleiermacher.

What cannot be explained in French is surely incapable of explanation. Mr. Stirling* traces the immediate origin of Hegel's philosophy to Kant. Perhaps he is right. We might trace it to Hume, which is nearly the same thing. The idealists, Bishop Berkeley for instance, had denied the existence of matter, that is, abstract matter. Phenomena, the things apparent to sense—these are the all of the material. By the same reasoning which led Berkeley to his conclusion, Hume showed that mind had no existence as abstracted from our thoughts. Impressions, ideas—these are the all of the mental. Hegel's position is precisely Hume's; we know nothing of matter but as phenomena; we know nothing of mind but as a thought, an idea. This then is the reality, both of mind and matter. Thought is existence. The rational is the actual, and therefore the Supreme Reality is absolute Thought, Mind, or Idea. The unfolding of this thought is the unfolding of the manifold; for the order of the actual or phenomenal world has a perfect correspondence with the order of the ideal or intellectual. Kant had said that 'there are two stocks or stems of human knowledge, which arise perhaps from a *single common root*, as yet unknown to us, namely, sense and understanding. Through the former of which, objects are *given*; and through the latter, *thought*.' This common root was Fichte's synthesis, which united the *I* and the *non-I*. It was Schelling's *identity*, in which the ideal and the real were one. It corresponded, too, with Spinoza's substance, of which the two attributes were thought and extension. Hegel made it *thought itself*, the absolute *Idea*. Sensation and understanding are virtually one—the former being externally what the latter is internally.

Hegel objected to the term substance as applied to God. It has a sound of materialism. Doubtless there may be a spiritual substance, but the word is borrowed from sense-objects. Spinoza applies it to that absolute Being in whom mind and matter have their identity, with the obvious conviction that His nature is not

* *The Secret of Hegel*, by James Hutchison Stirling. Mr. Stirling says that Hegel is the only man who understood Kant, and he leaves it to be inferred that he (Mr. Stirling), is the only man who has understood Hegel. However, this may be, he has written a very interesting and sensible book on a very difficult subject. If it has a fault it is that the writer has stopped in the middle of Hegel, and left untouched what to the English reader would be the most interesting part of the Hegelian system. No one, I suppose, will dispute Mr. Stirling's argument that Hegel realized Kant's Categories—transformed Kant's Psychology into an Ontology.

definable beyond a describing of some of His known attributes. Hegel, on the other hand, defines God as the Absolute Mind; He accepts and endorses the Christian definition that God is a Spirit; not as Malebranche, Augustine, and others had explained this passage as declaring what God is *not*; but as affirming, and positively defining what He is. God is not merely being and substance, He is not merely intelligent and living, but He is Spirit. 'The spiritual nature,' says Hegel, 'is alone the true and worthy starting-point for the thought of the Absolute.'

Beasts have no religion; they do not know God, because they do not transcend the sensuous. It is only for thought that there is being or substance. Only for thought does the world manifest Almighty power and exhibit marks of design. The so-called proofs of the being of God are only descriptions and analyses of the coming of the spirit, which is a thinker, and which thinks the sensuous. The elevation of thought over the sensuous; its going out beyond the finite to the Infinite, the leap which is made by the breaking off from the sensuous into the super-sensuous; all this is thought itself. This transition is only thought. If this passage were not thought it would not be made.

Starting with absolute thought, Hegel constructs a universal philosophy. There is nothing new in this conception. Schelling had discoursed of the absolute science to which all sciences were subordinate. Others had done the same before him, but Hegel's system has an interest for its completeness, its order, and the universality of its applications. The study of all things is the study of mind, and mind is God. We have then:—

I. Logic, or the science of the *idea in-and-for-itself*.

II. Nature philosophy; or the science of the *idea in its otherness*.

III. The philosophy of spirit; or of the *idea which, from its otherness, returns to itself*.

Logic, with Hegel, is not mere reasoning, but the whole science of reason. It is that which treats of the *Logos*; the thought of the universe in itself, and all its manifestations. Thought is known to us in its three forms:—subjective, objective, and the union of these two; or thesis, antithesis, and synthesis. Corresponding triads form the 'rhythmus of the universe.' All things are trinities in unities, from the Supreme Idea to the humblest phenomenal existence. The first division of Logic is into

1. The doctrine of Being.
2. The doctrine of essence.
3. The doctrine of the notion or idea.

The first definition of the Absolute is Being. It is that in which thought is the most primitive, abstract, and necessary. Being simply, is the indefinite *immediate*. It is pure indefiniteness and necessary. At this stage, and under this aspect, it is not to be distinguished from *Nothing*. Pure *Being* and pure *Nothing* are the same. They are united in a *Becoming*. Nothing has passed over into Being, and Being into Nothing, so that, though they are the same, they are yet *absolutely distinguished*. Their truth is the immediate disappearance of the one into the other. This movement we call a 'Becoming.' The abstract being of Parmenides was really identical with the Nothing of the Buddhists, though Parmenides did not see it. He said 'Only being is, and nothing is altogether not.' 'The deep-thinking Heraclitus said Hegel, 'brought forward against that simple and onesided abstraction, the higher total notion of Becoming, and said—Being is as little as nothing is, for all flows—that is, all is a Becoming. We never pass through the same street; we never bathe in the same stream. Neither Being nor Nothing is, what it is only their union, and that is Becoming, for Becoming is Nothing passing into Being, or Being passing into Nothing; and this truth is the foundation of all the Oriental wisdom; that everything has the germ of its death even in its birth, while death is but the entrance into new life. 'It does not require much wit,' says Hegel, 'to turn this principle into jest, and to ask if it matters not whether my house, property, the air, this town, the sun, right, spirit, yea God, be or be not? The end of philosophy indeed is to free men from the multitude of finite objects, and to make it a matter of no importance, whether they are or are not. But those who ask this question do not understand the subject. Our enquiry is not concerning concrete existences, whether their content is the same as Nothing. Our discourse is entirely of Being and Nothing in the abstract. If it be said that this identity of Being and Nothing is inconceivable, it is illustrated by the idea of *Becoming*. When we analyse the conception it is found to contain not only the determination of Being, but also another, that of Nothing. These two determinations are in this conception, one, so that becoming is the unity of Being and Nothing.' The old argument against a *Beginning* of anything was grounded, according to Hegel, on the philosophical opinion that Being is only being, and Nothing is only nothing. On this supposition it was correct to say 'from nothing, nothing comes.' But the later Christian metaphysic rejected this axiom for it involved

the denial of creation from nothing. This was the error of Parmenides and Spinoza, and the result was '*Pantheism*.'

The outcome of the Becoming is *There-being*—in plain English, individual things. *There-being* is to be discussed (1) *as such* (2) *in its other or finitude*, and (3) *as qualitative infinitude*. *There-being* in general is the simple oneness of Being and Nothing; but, as yet it exists only *for us in our reflexion*. As it is something definite, a *concrete*, it has qualities, and is determined to a *Something* which evokes its *Other*. This is considered *in itself*, in its *qualification* and its *finitude*. Through the removal of this limit it passes into the Infinite. It is then considered *as the Infinite in general*; the *Infinite as the negative of the finite*; and, lastly, *as the affirmative Infinite*. *Being-for-self* is the ultimate of the passing over of *There-being*, or finitude, into the Infinite. It is considered (1) *as such* (2) *as the one and the many*; and (3) *as repulsion and attraction*. Being, which refers only to itself, is the *One*; but, by its repelling others, it posits many *ones*. These are not, however, to be distinguished as to essence. The one is what the other is. The many are therefore one, and the one is the many.

Essence is Being, as phenomena. The same developments which logic treats of in the doctrine of being, it now treats of in the doctrine of essence, but, in their reflected, not their immediate form. Instead of Being and Nothing, we have now the forms of positive and negative; and, instead of individual existence, we now have existence. Phenomenon is the appearance which the essence fills and which is hence no longer essenceless. There is no phenomenon without essence, and no essence which may not enter into phenomenon. It is one and the same content, which at one time is taken as essence, and at another as phenomenon. When the phenomenon is a complete and adequate manifestation of the essence, then we have an actual something as distinct from the essence of which it forms a part. The individuality of every individual thing is thus reconciled with the unity of absolute essence. This union of being and essence takes place through the notion, which, being rational, is the truly actual.

The notion appears first as subjective, then in its objectivity. The union of these is the Idea which is the highest definition of the Absolute. The absolute Idea in its reflecting, discharging, or overflowing itself into space constitutes nature. This gives rise to

II. The philosophy of nature, or the idea in its *Otherness*. This evolution is marked by three epochs, *the mechanical, the physical, the organic*. Nature, as mechanic, constitutes time and space, matter and movement. As physical, it consists of individualities, general, particular, total. As organic, it is at one time geologic, at another vegetable, another animal. Nature is mind estranged from itself—*Bacchus* unbridled and unrestrained. Its products do not correspond to our conceptions. They represent no ideal succession, but everywhere obliterate all limits, and defy every classification. The province of philosophy is to trace the return of nature to mind. This stage it reaches in the self-conscious individuality, man. At this stage begins

III. The Philosophy of Spirit, or the doctrine of the Idea in its return from nature or its otherness. In this process the *I* separates itself from nature and rises above it. The spirit is first subjective in its transition from general consciousness to self-consciousness. As subjective it creates anthropology, phenomenology, psychology. Objectively it appears in right, morality, politics. As spirit absolute, it gives birth to religion, esthetics, philosophy. This last, which is the knowledge of knowledge—the knowledge of the Absolute Being, is the crown and termination of all the evolutions of the Idea.

We need not go further into the details of Hegel's philosophy. The whole secret of it seems to be that it realizes thought, *Logos*, or Logic—concatenates or classifies all sciences as the expressions of the *Logos*—divides each into a ternary, and subdivides each member of the ternary into another. Everything has a beginning, an existence, an end. There is a birth, a life, a death. We have sowing, growing, seed time; all is a three in one, and a one in three.

Hegel appeared first as the disciple and advocate of Schelling. At this stage he did not seem to differ from Schelling, except that he applied a more rigorous method, and tried to systematize Schelling's rhapsodies. This stage is marked by the '*Phenomenology of Spirit*.' Hegel's object in this work is to show how the spirit, both in an individual and in a nation, rises above the vulgar consciousness, or what we call common sense, to the height of absolute science. In its progress it passes through four phases,—self-consciousness, reason, morality, religion. These phases Hegel calls *spiritual phenomena*, and he endeavours to prove that they are the result of the mediate labour of thought, and not as Schelling said, the fruit of an immediate intuition. This is the ladder which intelligence passes over

after it has overcome the feeling of individual existence, and before it arrives at the full possession of universal knowledge—that is, of that knowledge which shows to the individual intelligence that it is identical with the universal and absolute Spirit—with the World Soul. Man only knows just as he has knowledge of this identity. So long as he has not reached this, he has a soul, but he has not a spirit. So long as he is divided by the opposition of being and thought, he distinguishes between his *I* and his knowing. He does not yet know that he is one with pure knowledge. He does not know that 'The Spirit which, in developing itself, teaches to know that it is spirit; is knowledge itself. Knowledge is its life; it is the reality which it creates—which it draws from its own substance.' Absolute or speculative knowledge does not begin till after this evolution of spirit. It constitutes the sphere in which the *pure Idea* reigns—that is, the whole of the laws which govern all that which can exist and can be conceived—the whole of the categories—the conditions which reason fulfils in accomplishing the end which it has before it—which is, to reach the state of perfect *Reason*. The *Phenomenology* thus ends where the *Logic* and the *Encyclopædia* begin.

Hegel has now fairly parted with Schelling. Starting, where Spinoza stopped, with the abstract conception of pure Being, the Hegelian Logic arrives at a *concrete* idea whose manifestation is the universe. This *Idea* whose developments are traced in the *Logic* and the *Encyclopædia* is God Himself,—God, anterior to the creation of the world, viewed in his abstract universality and eternity. It belongs to His nature to be unfolded in the opposites—general and particular, infinite and finite, internal and external, ideal and real.

Hegel's last writings were devoted to developing particular parts of his doctrine, such as the *Philosophy of Right*, the *Philosophy of History*, and the *Philosophy of Philosophy*. This evolution of Spirit is Hegel's *Theodicea*—the knowledge that spirit can only free itself in the element of spirit, and that what is past and what is daily passing, not only comes from God, but is the work of God Himself. History is but the successive revelations of Spirit. Each of these revelations is an epoch in which there appears a new manifestation of Spirit. Every people, representative of an epoch, expresses a given form—a *factor*, so to speak, of the unceasing development of Spirit. These manifestations constitute a part of the grand drama of the universe. They are united to the

revolutions of nature—to the destinies of the terrestrial globe and the vicissitudes of time and space. History has presented four great ages, each of them representing a distinct principle, and yet all the principles are closely allied to each other. The first is that of the East—the theatre of the idea of the Infinite, which is there still absolute and undetermined, immovable, and as it were, self-involved. There the individual has no part to perform, the theocratic power has united the political and the religious in a unity as indissoluble and compact as it is overpowering and oppressive. Among the Greeks we see the idea of the finite everywhere triumphant. The free and varied activity of the most complete of finite beings, man, has signally disengaged itself from Oriental confusion. It has shaken off Asiatic apathy, and is producing marvels of sentiment and independence; at the same time maintaining its relation to the Infinite—considering this relation as one of dependence which it expresses under the power of symbol and myth. At Rome, the idea of the finite reigns alone. The worship of the Infinite is banished as the worship of a mere abstraction. In the German world, the fourth age of the manifestation of Spirit in History, on the ruins of the *Egoistic* empire of Rome, the Divine unity better understood, and human nature entirely free are met and reconciled in the bosom of a harmonious identity. From this alliance there has sprung forth, and will yet spring forth more and more, truth, liberty, morality—the peculiar perfection of the modern Spirit.

The philosophy of religion shows similar manifestations, or developments of spirit. In every religion there is a Divine presence, a Divine revelation, but it does not follow that because it is a religion it is therefore good. On the contrary some religions are bad. If the spirit of a people is sensual, so will be its gods. Of these gods it may be said 'they that made them are like unto them.' But all religions seek the reconciliation of the finite and the Infinite—man and God—and all point to an absolute religion, in which God will be revealed in His entirety, and in which this reconciliation will be realized. In the great religions of the Eastern world man is overpowered by nature. In the first and lowest forms of them he worships the objects around him. His God is a *fetisch*. To nature in her more sensuous forms he addresses his prayer. By adorations and conjurations he struggles to be free from that brute force, which he worships in a spirit of superstition and fear. In Hinduism we have a higher form. Nature is still powerful,

but God is viewed as present, diffusing Himself over all things. Between Creator and creature there is no determined and marked line. The greatest of truths is here divinely shadowed forth—not reached by thought, but by imagination. It is a poetical Pantheism, in which God, man, and nature are undistinguished, and hence the most sublime verities are mingled with the vilest superstitions. In the Persian religion, God or the principle of good, is more precisely determined as spirit, but this only in opposition to the principle of evil, which is matter. In the religion of Ancient Egypt the personality of God emerges yet more distinctly. It now appears as it is, and has no need of a principle of opposition for its manifestation. But though God appears as distinct from nature, He remains, as to form, entirely undetermined. Hence the Egyptians worshipped Him, now as a man, and again as an animal. *Natichism* was still blended with the worship of Him who is a Spirit. The religion of Egypt was the highest form of the religions of nature.

These were followed by the religions of spiritual individuality. In them, spirit is independent of the external world. The first is Judaism. Here the spiritual speaks itself absolutely free of the sensuous, and nature is reduced to something merely external and undivine. This is the true and proper estimate of nature at this stage; for only at a more advanced phase can the *Idea* attain a reconciliation in this its alien form. The Greek religion also decidedly consecrated the personality of God. Hence mind freed itself from the dominion of nature. The gods are creations of the intellect—arbitrary expressions of the good and the beautiful. In the Roman religion the nature-side of spirit dies. The world has reached that stage of life where it feels nature unsatisfying. It is melancholy, hopeless, despairing, unhappy. From this feeling arises the super-sensuous, the free spirit of Christianity. The Christian religion is the highest determination of the spirit in the religious sphere. Here the spirituality of God is clearly defined. The finite and the Infinite are seen both in their separation and in their unity. God and the world are reconciled. The Divine and the human meet in the Person of Christ. The intellectual content of revealed religion in Christianity is thus the same as that of speculative philosophy.

The Roman world in its desperate and abandoned condition came to an open rupture with reality, and made prominent the general desire for a satisfaction, such as could only be attained

in the new man—the soul. Rome was the fate that crushed down the gods and all genial life, in its hard service, while it was the power which purified the human heart from all speciality. Its pains were the travail throes of another and higher spirit; that which manifested itself in the Christian religion. This higher spirit involves the reconciliation and emancipation of spirit, while man obtains the consciousness of spirit in its universality and infinity. The absolute object, *truth*, is spirit, and as man himself is spirit he is mirrored to himself in that object, and thus in his absolute object has found essential Being and *his own* essential being. But in order that the objectivity of essential being may be done away with, and spirit be no longer alien to itself, the naturalness of spirit, that in virtue of which man is a special empirical existence, must be removed, so that the alien element may be destroyed, and the reconciliation of the spirit accomplished. With the Greeks the law for the spirit was ‘Man know thyself.’ The Greek spirit was a consciousness of spirit, but under a limited form, having the element of nature as an essential ingredient. Spirit may have had the upper-hand, but the unity of the superior and subordinate was itself still *natural*.

The element of subjectivity which was wanting to the Greeks we find among the Romans, but it was merely formal and indefinite. Only among the Jewish people do we find the conscious wretchedness of the isolated self, and a longing to transcend that condition of individual nothingness. From this state of mind arose that higher phase, in which spirit came to absolute consciousness. From that unrest of infinite sorrow is developed the unity of God with reality, that is, with subjectivity, which had been separated from Him. The recognition of the identity of subject and object was introduced into the world when the *fulness of time was come*, the consciousness of this identity, is the recognition of God in His true essence. The material of truth is *spirit* itself, inherent vital movement. The nature of God as pure Spirit is manifested to man in the *Christian religion*.

Hegel's great object, like that of his predecessors, was to show the *rationalness* of Christianity. He was, or at least he meant to be, thoroughly orthodox. The mysteries, as Malebranche and the Catholic Theologians called them, were no mysteries to Hegel. ‘*That Hagar and her profane Ishmael*’ were not to be banished, for they were satisfied that Christianity, in all its fullness, as taught in the Holy Scriptures, and interpreted by the

Lutheran Church, was in perfect agreement with reason. The Hegelian philosophy is the scientific exposition of historical Christianity. The religion of Christ was the point in the world's history when the spirit awoke to a clear consciousness of its absolute essence, and made a decided beginning to return to itself out of nature, or its *otherness*. Hegel's Christology proves how earnestly he strove to embrace in his philosophy the whole content of the Christian faith. Not only is the historical account of the incarnation received in all its fulness, but it is shown that God became man; that He appeared in the flesh as manifesting and accomplishing the unity of God and man. Jesus Christ conquered death. He was the death of death. He annihilated the finite as something evil and foreign, and so He reconciled the world with God.*

The *Idea* being reason or spirit, it cannot be said that we do not know God, for this is the starting-point of our knowledge. The Trinity is in no wise a mystery. It is the first Triad of Being. God, as the Absolute Spirit, eternally distinguishes Himself, and in this distinction He is eternally one with Himself. The true forms of the Divine manifestations are (1) The Kingdom of God the Father—that is, the *Idea*, in and for itself. God, in His eternity, before and out of the world, in the element of thought. (2) The Kingdom of the Son in which God is in the moment of separation—the element of representation. In this second stand-point is contained all that, which in the first, was the *other* of God. Here nature is the other—the world and the spirit which is manifested there—the nature spirit. (3) The Kingdom of the Spirit which contains the consciousness that man is reconciled with God. The difference and determination of these three forms is not directly explained through the idea of the Trinity. Each form contains all the three forms—the one, the other, and the removing of the other. There is thus, in all the three forms, a unity as well as a difference, but in a different way. The Father is the abstract God—the Universal—the eternal unrestrained total particular-

* There was no question of Hegel's orthodoxy till some of his professed disciples went into Atheism. But what right they had to call themselves his disciples is not easily made out. His first and true disciples were orthodox theologians of the Protestant Church. The attempt of Strauss to connect his doctrine with Hegel's, was as unwarranted as the claim of the Antinomians to be followers of S. Paul. The whole spirit and character of Strauss's 'Life of Jesus,' is contrary to Hegelianism. Hegel was *constructive*. He acknowledged the good which the *Illumination* had done, but its day was past. He wished to build up again by philosophy to the full extent of what the Church believed.

ity. The other is the Son, the infinite particularity—the manifestation. The third is the Spirit—the individuality as such. The difference, then, is only between the Father and the Son, and, as the Father and the Son are one, the third is also the first.

Hegel as a Christian often speaks with a firm conviction of the reality of the future life. As a philosopher he explains his belief. The explanation differs from that of Spinoza, Fichte, and Schelling only by the form it takes in connection with the *idea*. Death, which can only happen to a living organism, stands between it and the moment of its other life, which is the life of the Spirit. The reason of the dissolution of a living being is to be found in its *idea*. Organism is the culminating point, and, as it were, the unity of nature; but, it is only an external unity, and does not reach the simple and internal unity of thought and spirit. Death is but the necessary act—the mediating *idea*—by which the reality of the individual is raised from nature to spirit. It is but the natural progress of the *Idea* which, to produce temperature and color goes from heat and light to their negatives and so to posit spirit it goes to the negative of life—which is death. What we call death marks a higher degree of existence. Beings which do not die are those which are furthest removed from spirit; such as mechanic and inorganic nature. 'At death, the external other of nature falls from us, we are born wholly into spirit, spirit concrete, for it has taken up unto itself nature and its natural life. Nature is to Hegel much as it is to Kant. It is but the phenomenon of the noumenon—it is but the action of *what is*, and passes, while the latter is and remains. Time and space, and all questions that concern them, reach only to the phenomenon; they have no place in the noumenon. There is but one life, and we live it *with*, as the Germans say. That life we live now, though in the veil of the phenomenon. There is but an eternal *now*, there are properly no two places, and no two times in the life of spirit, whose we are, and which we are, in that *it* is all. So it is that Hegel is wholly sincere and without affectation, when he talks of its being in effect indifferent to him, *how* and *whether* he is in the finite life. He is anchored safe in thought, in the notion, and cares not for what vicissitude of the phenomenal may open to him.'* In everything Hegel wishes to be orthodox. He defends the validity of the three great arguments for the being of God—the ontological, the cosmological, and the teleological. He dreads nothing so much as '*Pantheism*.' But which of all the systems we have

* Mr. Stirling.

examined is the most Pantheistic, or what Pantheism is, we do not yet know. Hegel concludes his *Encyclopædia* with some verses from a Persian poet, which express, as well as poetry can express, the great idea of his philosophy. As they are no less applicable to the doctrines of all our preceding chapters we shall quote them as a fitting conclusion for this. They are, perhaps, the most accurate expression of what is called Pantheism which we have yet met.

I looked above and in all spaces saw but One ;
 I looked below and in all billows saw but One;
 I looked into its heart, it was a sea of worlds;
 A space of dreams all full, and in the dreams but One.
 Earth, air and fire and water in Thy fear dissolve ;
 Ere they ascend to Thee, they trembling blend in One.
 All life in heaven and earth, all pulsing hearts should throb
 In prayer, lest they impede the One.
 Nought but a sparkle of Thy glory is the sun;
 And yet Thy light and mine both centre in the One.
 Though at Thy feet the circling heaven is only dust,
 Yet is it one, and one my being is with Thine.
 The heavens shall dust become, and dust be heaven again,
 Yet shall the One remain and one my life with Thine.

Authorities—Kant's *Kritik der reinen Vernunft*; *Kritik der praktischen Vernunft*; the translations of Fichte's works by William Smith in Chapman's *Catholic Series*; Schelling's *Werke*, and the works of Hegel mentioned in the text, especially *Die Wissenschaft der Logik*; *Phänomenologie des Geistes* and the *Encyclopädie der philosophischen Wissenschaften*. Mr. Stirling has translated the two Sections on Quality and Quantity of the *Logic* in his '*Secret of Hegel*.' There is a translation of Hegel's *Philosophy of History* by Mr. Sibree in Bohn's Library.

CHAPTER XIV.

POETRY.

TO see all nature blooming of God, is one of the most beautiful of our sentiments. To behold the green and variegated mantle, which in the glowing spring-time is flung over mountain and valley, as the living garment of God, is the sublimest poetry. There cannot be a diviner feeling than that which hears all birds singing of God, and sees all the powers of nature whether in terrific grandeur or in placid repose, as the working of the ever-present Deity. To the pious soul, nature is God's speech; every little flower peeping from the ground is a silent memorial; the daisies and the cowslips, the blue bells and the hyacinths are all speaking of God. This is the marriage of religion and poetry where both as one are penetrated with the presence of the true and the Divine. Where the poetical spirit is absent, nature appears but a dead mass, destitute of divinity, and deserted of God. Where the religious spirit is absent or deficient, God is lost in nature, and the nature spirit alone remains. If this beholding of God in nature be so common to poetry and religion it will not be surprising that we find Pantheism in our poets, even in those of them whose religious sentiments are the most unlike.

The first passages we have selected are from Goethe. What was Goethe's creed we scarcely know. He is generally considered a mere Pagan, though he professed to be a Christian. Goethe lived when Spinoza was being revived in Germany. He does not conceal his obligations to the Portuguese Jew. In his *Autobiography* he speaks of the delight with which in early life he read Spinoza's *Ethica*. The dry abstractions of the geometrical and metaphysical universe-expounder appeared fresh and beautiful to Goethe. He was fascinated with Spinoza's gentle and humble, yet sublime spirit. And then that lofty doctrine of unselfishness was so charming that even Goethe was disposed to say that God should be loved for His own sake, and without reference to reward. But before Goethe met Spinoza's *Ethica* he had embraced a similar theology as we may see from this pas-

sage. [To discuss God, apart from nature, is both difficult and dangerous. It is as if we separated the soul from the body. We know the soul only through the medium of the body, and God only through nature. Hence the absurdity as it appears to me of accusing those of absurdity who philosophically have united God with the world. For everything which exists, necessarily pertains to the essence of God, because God is the One Being whose existence includes all things.] Nor does the Holy Scripture contradict this, although we differently interpret its dogmas, each according to his own views. All antiquity thought in this way, — an unanimity, which to my mind is of great significance. To me the judgment of so many men speaks highly for the rationality of the doctrine of emanation.'

In the prologue of *Faust* the second person of the Trinity pronounces a benediction. Instead of the Semetic form, 'May the Holy Spirit'—the corresponding philosophical speech is used, 'May the *Becoming*, which works and lives through all time, embrace you within the holy bonds of love.' This use of the *Becoming* might be related to the Hegelian philosophy, but it is said that Goethe never understood Hegel, nor had any interest in Hegel's development. In another place Mephistopheles tells Faust that he is 'a part of the part which in the beginning was the *All*'—a blasphemous utterance, and as destitute of the spirit of philosophy as of the spirit of reverence. But the speaker is Mephistopheles.

The earth spirit says:—

In Lebensfluthen, im Thatensturm
 Wall' ich auf und ab,
 Wehe hin und her!
 Geburt und Grab,
 Ein ewiges Meer,
 Ein wechselnd Weben,
 Ein glühend Leben,
 So schaff ich am sausenenden Webstuhl der Zeit.
 Und wirke der Gottheit lebendiges Kleid.

In the floods of life, in the storm of deeds,
 I move up and down,
 I go to and fro,
 Birth and the grave,
 An eternal sea,
 A changing strife,
 A glowing life.
 Thus I create at the roaring loom of time,
 And weave the living garment of the Deity.

Faust says to Margaret, when she doubts if he believes in God,—

Wer darf ihn nennen ?
 Und wer bekennen :
 Ich glaub' ihn.
 Wer empfinden
 Und sich unterwinden
 Zu sagen : ich glaub' ihn nicht ?
 Der Allumfasser,
 Der Allhalter,
 Fasst und erhält er nicht
 Dich, mich, sich selbst ?
 Wölbt sich der Himmel nicht dadoben ?
 Liegt die Erde nicht hierunten fest ?
 Und steigen freundlich blickend
 Ewige Sterne nicht herauf ?
 Schau' ich nicht Aug' in Auge dir,
 Und drängt nicht alles
 Nach Haupt und Herzen dir,
 Und webt in ewigem Geheimniss
 Unsichtbar sichtbar neben dir ?
 Erfüll' davon dein Herz, so gross es ist,
 Und wenn du ganz in dem Gefühle selig bist,
 Nenn' es dann wie du willst,
 Nenn' es Glück ! Herz ! Liebe ! Gott !
 Ich habe keinen Namen
 Dafür ! Gefühl ist alles ;
 Name ist Schall und Rauch,
 Umnebelnd Himmelsluth.

Who dares to name Him ?
 And who dares to acknowledge ;
 I believe Him.
 Who can feel,
 And presume
 To say, I believe not in Him ?
 The One who embraces all,
 The Preserver of all.
 Does He not keep and preserve
 Thee, me, Himself ?
 Does not the sky arch itself above ?
 Does not the earth lie firm below ?
 And do not friendly looking stars ascend ?
 Do I not behold eye in eye in thee,
 And does not everything throng
 Towards head and heart in thee,
 And hovers in eternal mystery
 Invisibly, visible near thee ?
 Fill with it thy heart, large as it is,
 And when thou art quite blissful in that feeling,
 Name it then, as thou likest,
 Call it happiness, heart, love, God !
 I have no name for it !
 Feeling is all,
 Name is sound and smoke,
 Surrounding with mist the glow of heaven.

In Faust's interpretation of the first verses of S. John's gospel we have the doctrine of creation

Geschrieben steht : "im Anfang war das Wort !"
 Hier stock' ich schon ! Wer hilft mir weiter fort ?
 Ich kann das Wort so hoch unmöglich schätzen,
 Ich muss es anders übersetzen,
 Wenn ich vom Geiste recht erleuchtet bin.
 Geschrieben steht : im Anfang war der Sinn.
 Bedenke wohl die erste Zeile,
 Dass deine Feder sich nicht übereile !
 Ist es der Sinn, der alles wirkt und schafft ?
 Es sollte stehn : im Anfang war die Kraft !
 Doch, auch indem ich dieses niederschreibe,
 Schon warnt mich was, dass ich dabei nicht bleibe.
 Mir hilft der Geist ! Auf einmal seh' ich Rath
 Und schreibe getrost : im Anfang war die That !

It is written—"In the beginning was the Word."
 Here I am at a stand already, who will help me on ?
 I cannot possibly value the word so highly,
 I must translate it differently,
 If I am really inspired by the Spirit.
 It is written,—In the beginning was the sense.
 Consider well the first line,
 That your pen does not out-run you.
 Is it the sense that influences and produces everything ?
 It should stand : In the beginning was the Power.
 Yet even as I am writing this
 Something warns me not to keep to it.
 The Spirit comes to my aid. At once I see my way
 And write confidently. In the beginning was the deed.

In some verses entitled *Gott, Gemüth, Welt; God, Soul, World*,
 Goethe says,

Was wär' ein Gott, der nur von aussen stiesse,
 Im Kreis das All am Finger laufen liesse !
 Ihm ziemt's, die Welt im Innern zu bewegen,
 Natur in Sich, Sich in Natur zu hegen,
 So dass was in Ihm lebt und webt und ist,
 Nie Seine Kraft, nie Seinen Geist vermisst.

"What were a God who only wrought externally.
 And turned the All in a circle on His finger.
 It becomes Him to move the world in its interior ;
 To cherish nature in Himself and Himself in nature.
 So that whatsoever lives and weaves and is in Him
 Never lacks His presence and His spirit.

The following is called *Weltseele* or *World-Soul*:—

Vertheilet euch, nach allen Regionen,
 Von diesem heil'gen Schmaus !
 Begeistert reist euch durch die nächsten Zonen
 In's All und füllt es aus !
 Schon schwebet ihr, in ungemess'nen Fernen,
 Den sel'gen Göttertraum,
 Und leuchtet neu, gesellig, unter Sternen
 Im lichtbesäten Raum.

Dann treibt ihr euch, gewaltige Kometen,
In's Weit' und Weitr' hinan.
Das Labyrinth der Sonnen und Planeten
Durchschneidet eure Bahn.

Ihr greift rasch nach ungeformten Erden
Und wirket, schöpfrisch jung,
Dass sie belebt und stets belebter werden,
Im abgemess'nen Schwung.

Und kreisend führt ihr in bewegten Lüften
Den wandelbaren Flor,
Und schreibt dem Stein, in allen seinen Grüften,
Die festen Formen vor.

Nun alles sich mit göttlichem Erkühnen
Zu übertreffen strebt ;
Das Wasser will, das unfruchtbare, grünen,
Und jedes Stäubchen lebt.

Und so verdrängt, mit liebevollem Streiten,
Der feuchten Qualme Nacht ;
Nun glühen schon des Paradieses Weiten
In überbunter Pracht.

Wie regt sich bald, ein holdes Licht zu schauen,
Gestaltenreiche Schaar,
Und ihr erstaunt, auf den beglückten Auen,
Nun als das erste Paar,

Und bald verlischt ein unbegrenztes Streben
Im sel'gen Wechselblick.
Und so empfängt mit Dank das schönste Leben
Vom All in's All zurück.

Disperse yourselves towards all regions,
From this holy feast
Inspired take yourselves through the next zones
Into all and fill it out.

Already you hover in unlimited distances
Around the blessed Divine dream,
And shine anew, sociably, under stars,
In the space sown about with light.

Then you rush about, powerful comets,
Out into the wide and distant parts
The labyrinth of suns and planets
Cuts through your path.

You seize quickly after unformed earths,
And work creatingly young,
That they get more and more animated
In this measured flight.

And whirling you carry in agitated air
The changeable veil,
And prescribe to the stone in all its pits,
The firm forms.

Now everything strives with divine holiness
To surpass itself.
The water wishes the unfruitful to be green,
And every atom lives.

And thus the night with affectionate strife is dispossessed
Of the moist vapour,
Now glow already the wide distances of paradise
In great splendour.

Soon there moves about a light lovely to behold ;
A troop rich in forms,
And you are astonished on the happy meadows,
Now as the first pair.

And soon an unlimited striving
Is extinguished in a holy mutual look.
And so receive with thanks the most beautiful life,
From all into all back.

There is less theology in Schiller's poetry than in Goethe's. The following extract from one of his letters is Platonic, but not extravagant :—' The universe is a thought of God's. After this ideal image in His mind burst into reality and the new-born world filled up the sketch of its Creator—allow me this human representation—it became the vocation of all thinking beings to re-discover in the existent whole the original outline. To seek in the machine its regulator; in the phenomena the law of its production; in composition its several unities ; and thus to trace back the building to its plan or scheme, is the highest office of contemplation. Nature has for me but one phenomenon—the thinking principle. The great composition which we call the world is to me only remarkable because it is able to indicate to me symbolically the various properties of the thinking being. Everything within me and without me is the hieroglyphic of a force, and analogous to my own. The laws of nature are the cyphers which the thinking being adopts to make himself intelligible to other thinking beings. They are but the alphabet by means of which all spirits converse with the Perfect Spirit, and with each other. Harmony, order, beauty, give me pleasure, but they put me in the active state of a possessor, because they reveal to me the presence of a reasoning and a feeling being, and reveal to me my own relation to that being. A new experiment in this kingdom of truth ; gravitation, the detected circulation of the blood, the classifications of Linnæus* are to me originally just the same as an antique dug up at Herculaneum ; both are reflections of a mind—new acquaintance with a being like myself. I converse with infinitude through the organ of nature, through the history of the world, and I read the soul of the artist in his Apollo.'

* Schiller seems to have supposed the Linnæan classifications *natural*.

We have already mentioned Novalis as a disciple of Schelling, and a leader of the *Romantic* school. Like Schelling he had no defined system. His doctrines were poetical, mystical, ecstatic. The desire for the Absolute is, he said, universal. The human spirit is tormented with the desire of returning to its native land, of being *with itself*. It seeks this country everywhere. What are all the yearnings of man after a Being beyond himself—what are all the philosophies of the world but the utterance of this desire for the Infinite? 'In philosophy,' says Novalis, 'I hold converse with my true *I*, with that ideal and better *I*, which is the sole centre of my being. God converses with my soul, and thereby nourishes and strengthens it making it like Himself. Nature, too, converses with me. It is an immense and an eternal converse, where thousands on thousands of voices relate the history of God. God speaks to nature and by nature, lives in it and reveals Himself by it just as He lives and reveals Himself in man. Our *I* enters into a living and spiritual relation with an unknown Being. This Being inspires us to become spiritual as He is. By His inspiration we come to know that our *I* is but the reflex of the true *I*. This knowledge is produced in us just in the degree that the false individuality evanishes. Then the marriage of spirit and nature is completed for us in the unity of the Being of beings. God is truly known, when to our restless enquiring *I* there is an answer from the world-soul; the great *I* of the universe.' Novalis objected to Fichte's evolving *all* from the individual *I*. We must begin, rather with putting our *I* to death, and this suicide is that which will meet true life. Then shall be opened to it the life of the universe, the life of God, and it shall live again in the universal and perfect *I*. 'No mortal hath yet uncovered my veil,' said the inscription on the temple of the goddess at Saïs. 'If no mortal,' cried one of her disciples, 'has been able to lift the veil of the goddess, then we must become immortal, for he who does not lift this veil is not a true disciple.'

Einem gelang es,—er hob den Schleier der Götten zu Saïs
Aber was sah er?—er sah., Wunder des Wunders, sich selbst.

One succeeded—he lifted the veil of the goddess at Saïs,
But what did he see?—he saw, wonder of wonders, himself.

Es färbte sich die Wiese grün
Und um die Hecken sah ich blühn;
Tagtäglich sah ich neue Kräuter
Mild war die Luft, der Himmel heiter:
Ich wusste nicht wie mir geschah
Und wie das wurde, was ich sah.

Und immer dunkler ward der Wald
 Auch bunter Snger Aufenthalt,
 Es drang mir bald auf allen Wegen
 Ihr Klang in ssssem Duft entgegen.
 Ich wusste nicht, wie mir geschah
 Und wie das wurde, was ich sah.

Es quoll und trieb nun berall,
 Mit Leben, Farben, Duft und Schall ;
 Sie schienen gern sich zuvereinigen,
 Dass alles mchte lieblich schienen ,
 Ich wusste nicht, wie mir geschah
 Und wie das wurde, was ich sah.

So dacht' ich ; ist ein Geist erwacht,
 Der alles so lebendig macht,
 Und der mit tausend schnen Waaren
 Und Blten sich will offenbaren ?
 Ich wusste nicht, wie mir geschah
 Und wie das wurde, was ich sah.

Vielleicht beginnt ein neues Reich,
 Der lockre Staub wird zum Gestruch,
 Der Baum nimmt thierische Geberden,
 Das Thier soll gar zum Menschen werden.
 Ich wusste nicht, wie mir geschah,
 Und wie das wurde, was ich sah.

Wie ich so stand und bei mir sann,
 Ein mcht'ger Trieb in mir begann ;
 Ein freundlich Mdchen kam gegangen,
 Und nahm mir jeden Sinn gefangen.
 Ich wusste nicht, wie mir geschah,
 Und wie das wurde, was ich sah.

Uns barg der Wald vor Sonnenschein.
 Das ist der Frhling! fiel mir ein ;
 Und kurz, ich sah, dass jetzt auf Erden
 Die Menschen sollten Gtter werden
 Nun wusst' ich wohl, wie mir geschah
 Und wie das wurde, was ich sah.

The meadow was tinted green,
 And around the hedges I saw it blossom,
 I saw daily new herbs ;
 The air was mild, the sky clear,
 I knew not how I felt,
 And how that was which I saw.

And the wood became darker and darker,
 Also the abode of variegated songsters,
 It soon thronged towards me on all sides.
 I knew not how I felt,
 And how that was which I saw.

It was gushing, and that everywhere,
 With life, colors, fragrancy, and sound
 They seemed willing to unite together
 So that all might appear lovely.
 I knew not how I felt,
 And how that was which I saw.

So I thought ; is a spirit awake
Who makes everything alive,
And who wishes to manifest himself
With thousand beautiful wares and blossom ?

I knew not how I felt
And how that was which I saw.

Perhaps a new realm is beginning,
The loose dust becomes shrubs,
The tree assumes animal gestures,
The animal is perhaps to become man.

I knew not how I felt,
And how that was which I saw.

As I thus stood and reflected within myself
A mighty impulse began within me,
A friendly maiden was coming by
And took every sense within me captive.

I knew not how I felt,
And how that was which I saw.

The wood concealed us from sunshine.
It struck me, this is the spring !
And in short, I saw, that now upon earth,
Men should become Gods.

Now I knew well how I felt,
And, how that was which I saw.

The following lines are from Wieland's *Hymn to God* :—

Gross und erhaben bist du ! Ein unergründliches Dunkel
Birgt dich dem Menschen von Staub. Du bist ! Wir gleichen den Träumen.
Die mit den Lüften des Morgens um's Haupt des Schlummernden Schweben.
Deine Gegenwart hält die Welten in ihrem Gehorsam,
Winkt dem Kometen aus Schwindlichten Fernen. Du sendest, o Schöpfer,
Einen Strahl von dem Licht, in welchem du wohnst, in die Tiefe,
Und er geriet zur Sonne, die Leben und blühende Schönheit.
Ueber junge, zu ihr sich drängende Welten ergiesset.

In der einsamen Ewigkeit standen in geistiger Schönheit
Alle Ideen vor Ihm, nur seinem Angesicht sichtbar,
Reizende Nebenbuhler um's Leben ; und welchen er winkte,
Siehe, die wurden. Das Unermessene, so weit er umher sah,
Rauschte von neu entsprossenden Sphären ; der werdende Cherub
Stammelte, halb geschaffen, ihm seine Hymne entgegen ;
Aber sein Stammeln war mehr als einer menschlichen Seele
Feurigster Schwung, wenn sie, von deinem Daseyn umschattet,
Gott, dich empfindet, mit allen ganz ausgebreiteten Flügeln
Und mit allen Gelanken in dein Geheimniss sich senket.

Wahrheit, O Gott, ist dein Leib, das Licht des Aethers dein Schatten,
Durch die Schöpfung geworfen. Ich lehnte den Flügel des Seraphs
Flog an die Gränzen des Himmels, den Thron des Königs zu finden ;
Aber die Sphären sprachen : wir haben ihn niemals gesehen ;
Und die Tiefe : er wohnt nicht in mir. Da lispelt ein Anhauch
Einer ätherischen Stimm' in mein horchende Seele ;
Sanft, wie das erste Verlangen der Liebe, wie zärtliche Seufzer,
Lispelte sie zu meinen Gedanken : Der, welchen du, Seele,
Suchest, ist allenthalben ! Sein Arm umfasset den Weltbau,
Alle Gedanken der Geister sein Blick. Was sichtbar ist, strahlet
Etwas Göttliches aus ; was sich beweget erzählt Ihn,

Von den Gesängen des Himmels zum Lied des Sängers im Haine,
 Oder zum Säuseln des Zephyrs, der unter den Lilien weidet.
 Ihn zu denken wird stets die höchste Bestrebung des Tiefsinns
 Jedes Olympiers seyn; sie werden sich ewig bestreben.

Great and lofty art Thou! An unsearchable darkness
 Covers Thee from man (that is made) of dust. Thou art! We are like the
 dreams
 Which with the breath of the morning move over the head of him that
 slumbers.

Thy presence holds the worlds in their obedience
 Beckons to the comet from the vanishing distances. Thou sendest, O Creator,
 A ray of the light, in which Thou dwellest, into the deep,
 And it curdles to a sun, which pours out life and blooming beauty
 Over young worlds crowding towards it.

In solitary eternity stood in spiritual beauty
 All *ideas* before Him, manifest only to His sight,
 Charming rivals for life, and to whichever He beckoned;
 Lo, they were. The unmeasurable, as He looked wide around
 Rustled from the rising spheres; the *becoming* cherub
 Stammered, half-created, towards Him, his hymn,
 But his stammering was more than the ardent quivering
 Of a human soul when, shadowed by Thy being,
 It receives Thee, O God, with all its wings outspread,
 And with all (its) thoughts sinks into Thy mystery.

Truth, O God, is Thy body, the light of the air Thy shadow
 Cast forth through creation. I borrowed the wings of a seraph
 (And) flew to the borders of heaven to find the throne of the King,
 But the spheres said—we have never seen Him,
 And the deep—(said)—He dwells not in me. Then whispered a breath,
 Of an ethereal voice, in my listening soul,
 Soft as the first longing of love, like a tender sigh
 It whispered to my thought. He whom thy soul
 Seeketh is everywhere! His arm embraces the universe;
 His look all the thoughts of spirits. What is manifest streams out
 Something Divine. Whatever moves speaks of Him,
 From the songs of heaven to the song of the songster in the meadow,
 Or to the whisper of the zephyr, which pastures among the lilies.
 To think Him is to be continually the highest striving of the deep thought
 Of every inhabitant of heaven; they will strive for ever.

These are from Rückert's *Wisdom of the Brahmins* :—

Wohl der Gedanke bringt die ganze Welt hervor,
 Der, welchen Gott gedacht, nicht den du denkst, O Thor.
 Du denkst sie, ohne dass darum entsteht die Welt
 Und ohne dass, wenn du sie wegdenkst, wegfällt.
 Aus Geist entstand die Welt und gehet auf in Geist.
 Gott ist der Grund, aus dem, in den zurück sie kreist.
 Ein Säuchling ist der Geist, Natur ist seine Amme,
 Sie nährt ihn, bis er fühlt dass er von ihr nicht stamme.
 Die dunkle Mutter will ihr Kind im Schlummer halten;
 Von oben bricht ein Strahl durch ihres Hauses Spalten.
 Unendlich fühltest du dich in dir selbst, doch endlich
 Nach aussen hin und bist selber, unverständlich.

Versteh' ! Unendliches und Endliches, das dir scheint
So unvereinbar, ist durch Eines doch vereint.

Du bist ein werdendes, nicht ein geword'nes Ich,
Und alles Werden ist in Widerspruch mit sich.

Woher ich kam, wohin ich gehe, weiss ich nicht ;
Nur diess, von Gott zu Gott, ist meine Zuversicht.

Thought, indeed, produces the whole world
That, O fool, which God has thought, not what thou thinkest.

Thou *thinkest* it, but not on this account does the world arise ;
And, without your thinking it away, does it pass away.

Out of Spirit the world arose, and into Spirit it goes again .
God is the ground out of which the world comes, and into which, having
made its cycle, it returns.

The spirit is a suckling, nature is its nurse ;
She nourishes it till it feels that it does not spring from her.

The dark mother wishes to hold her child in slumber.
From above breaks in a ray through the cleaving of her house.

Thou feelest in thyself (that thou art) infinite, yet finite
Externally, and thou art incomprehensible to thyself.

Understand ; infinite and finite, what appears to thee
So irreconcilable, is yet reconciled through One.

Thou art a *becoming*, not yet an *I become*
And all becoming is a contradiction in itself.

Whence I come, whither I go, I know not.
Only this is my trust—*From God to God.*

M. Claudius, in a beautiful summer poem, makes *Frau Rebecca* thus speak to her children :—

Dies Veilchen, dieser Blütenbaum
Der seine Arm' austrecket,
Sind, Kinder ! ' Seines Kleides Saum,'
Das ihn vor uns bedeckt.

This violet, this tree covered with blossoms
Which stretches out its branches,
Are O children ' the hem of his garment
Which covers Him from our sight.

The poetical works of Lamartine are full of the Pantheistic sentiment. This is from *La Prière* in *Méditations Poétiques*.

Salut, principe et fin de toi-même et du monde !
Toi qui rends d'un regard l'immensité féconde,
Ame de l'univers, Dieu, père, créateur,
Sous tous ces noms divers je crols en toi. Seigneur !
Et, sans avoir besoin d'entendre ta parole,
Je lis au front des cieux mon glorieux symbole.
L'étendue à mes yeux révèle ta grandeur ;
La terre, ta bonté ; les astres, ta splendeur.
Tu t'es produit toi-même en ton brillant ouvrage !

L'univers tout entier réfléchit ton image,
 Et mon âme à son tour réfléchit l'univers.
 Ma pensée, embrassant tes attributs divers,
 Partout autour de toi te découvre et t'adore,
 Se contemple soi même, et t'y découvre encore ;
 Ainsi l'astre du jour éclate dans les cieux,
 Se réfléchit dans l'onde, et se peint à mes yeux.

C'est peu de croire en toi, bonté, beauté suprême !
 Je te cherche partout, j'aspire à toi, je t'aime !
 Mon âme est un rayon de lumière et d'amour
 Qui, du foyer divin détaché pour un jour,
 De désirs dévorants loin de toi consumée,
 Brûle de remonter à sa source enflammée,
 Je respire, je sens, je pense, j'aime en toi !
 Ce monde qui te cache est transparent pour moi ;
 C'est toi que je découvre au fond de la nature,
 C'est toi que je bénis dans toute créature.
 Pour m'approcher de toi, j'ai fui dans ces déserts :
 Là, quand l'aube, agitant son voile dans les airs,
 Entr'ouvre l'horizon qu'un jour naissant colore,
 Et sème sur les monts les perles de l'aurore,
 Pour moi c'est ton regard qui, du divin séjour,
 S'entr'ouvre sur le monde et lui répand le jour.

Salvation, principle and end of Thyself and of the world !
 Thou who with a glance renderest immensity fruitful,
 Soul of the universe, God, Father, Creator,
 Under all these different names I believe in Thee, Lord,
 And without having need to hear Thy word,
 I read in the face of the heavens my glorious symbol.
 Extension reveals to my eye Thy greatness,
 The earth Thy goodness, the stars Thy splendor.
 Thou Thyself art produced in Thy shining work !
 All the entire universe reflects Thy image,
 And my soul in its turn reflects the universe.
 My thought embracing Thy diverse attributes,
 Everywhere around Thee discovers Thee and adores Thee ;
 Contemplates itself, and yet discovers Thee there :
 Thus the day star shines in the heavens,
 Is reflected in the wave, and is painted on my eye.
 It is little to believe in Thee, goodness, supreme beauty ;
 I seek Thee everywhere, I aspire to Thee, I love Thee ?
 My soul is a ray of light and of love,
 Which detached from the Divine centre for a day,
 Consumed with devouring desires far from Thee,
 Burns to re-ascend to its burning source.
 I breathe, I feel, I think, I love in Thee !
 That world which conceals Thee is transparent for me.
 It is Thou whom I discover at the foundation of nature,
 It is Thou whom I bless in every creature.
 To approach Thee, I have fled into the deserts ;
 There, when the day-break, waving its veil in the air,
 Half-opens the horizon which colors a rising day,
 And sows upon the mountains the pearls of the dawn,
 For me it is Thy glance which from the Divine dwelling
 Opens upon the world and sheds over it the day.

These lines are from the poem *Dieu*, addressed to the brave Abbé Lamennais :—

Comme une goutte d'eau dans l'Océan versée,
L'infini dans son sein absorbe ma pensée ;
Là, reine de l'espace et de l'éternité,
Elle ose mesurer le temps, l'immensité,
Aborder le néant, parcourir l'existence,
Et concevoir de Dieu l'inconcevable essence.
Mais sitôt que je veux peindre ce que je sens,
Toute parole expire en efforts impuissants :
Mon âme croit parler ; ma langue embarrassée
Frappe l'air de vains sons ; ombre de ma pensée.

Dieu fit pour les esprits deux langages divers :
En sons articulés l'un vole dans les airs ;
Ce langage borné s'apprend parmi les hommes ;
Il suffit aux besoins de l'exil où nous sommes,
Et, suivant des mortels les destins inconstants,
Change avec les climats ou passe avec les temps.
L'autre, éternel, sublime, universel, immense,
Est le langage inné de toute intelligence ;
Ce n'est point un son mort dans les airs répandu,
C'est un verbe vivant dans le cœur entendu ;
On l'entend, on l'explique, on le parle avec l'âme ;
Ce langage senti touche, illumine, enflamme :
De ce que l'âme éprouve interprètes brûlants,
Il n'a que des soupirs, des ardeurs, des élans ;
C'est la langue du ciel que parle la prière,
Et que le tendre amour comprend seul sur la terre.

Aux pures régions où j'aime à m'envoler,
L'enthousiasme aussi vient me la révéler ;
Lui seul est mon flambeau dans cette nuit profonde,
Et mieux que la raison il m'explique le monde.
Viens donc ! il est mon guide, et je veux t'en servir
A ses ailes de feu, viens, laisse-toi ravir.
Déjà l'ombre du monde à nos regards s'efface ;
Et, dans l'ordre éternel de la réalité,
Nous voilà face à face avec la vérité !

Cet astre universel, sans déclin, sans aurore,
C'est Dieu, c'est ce grand tout, qui soi-même s'adore !
Il est ; tout est en lui : l'immensité, les temps,
De son être infini sont les purs éléments ;
L'espace est son séjour, l'éternité son âge ;
Le jour est son regard, le monde est son image :
Tout l'univers subsiste à l'ombre de sa main ;
L'être à flots éternels décollant de son sein,
Comme un fleuve nourri par cette source immense,
S'en échappe, et revient finir où tout commence.

Sans borne comme lui, ses ouvrages parfaits
Bénoissent en naissant la main qui les a faits :
Il peuple l'infini chaque fois qu'il respire ;
Pour lui, vouloir c'est faire, exister c'est produire !
Tirant tout de soi seul, rapportant tout à soi,
Sa volonté suprême est sa suprême loi.
Mais cette volonté, sans ombre et sans faiblesse,
Est à la fois puissance, ordre, équité, sagesse.

Sur tout ce qui peut être il l'exerce à son gré ;
 Le néant jusqu' à lui s'élève par degré :
 Intelligence, amour, force, beauté, jeunesse,
 Sans s'épuiser jamais, il peut donner sans cesse ;
 Et, eombant le néant de ses dons précieux,
 Des derniers rangs de l'être il peut tirer des dieux !
 Mais ces dieux de sa main, ces fils de sa puissance,
 Mesurent d'eux à lui l'éternelle distance,
 Tendant par la nature à l'être qui les fit :
 Il est leur fin à tous, et lui seul se suffit !
 Voilà, voilà Dieu que tout esprit adore,
 Qu' Abraham a servi, que rêvait Pythagore,
 Que Socrate annonçait, qu'entrevoyait Platon ;
 Ce Dieu que l'univers révèle à la raison,
 Que la justice attend, que l'infortune espère,
 Et que le Christ enfin vint montrer à la terre !
 Ce n'est plus là ce Dieu par l'homme fabriqué,
 Ce Dieu par l' imposture à l'erreur expliqué,
 Ce Dieu défiguré par la main des faux prêtres,
 Qu' adoraient en tremblant nos crédules ancêtres :
 Il est seul, il est un, il est juste, il est bon ;
 La terre voit son œuvre, et le ciel sait son nom !

As a drop of water in the full ocean,
 The Infinite in His bosom absorbs my thought ;
 There, queen of space and of eternity,
 It darts to measure time, and immensity,
 To approach the nothing, to run over existence,
 And to conceive the inconceivable essence of God.
 But so soon as I wish to picture what I feel,
 Every word expires in powerless efforts ;
 My soul believes that it speaks ; my embarrassed tongue
 Strikes the air with vain sounds ; shadow of my thought.
 God made for souls two different languages ;
 In articulated sounds the one flies into the air ;
 This limited language is learned among men ;
 It suffices for the wants of the exile in which we are,
 And following the uncertain destinies of mortals,
 Changes with the climates, or passes with the times,
 The other, eternal, sublime, universal immense,
 Is the innate language of all intelligence ;
 It is not a dead sound cast into air,
 It is a living word in the understanding heart ;
 We know it, we explain it, we speak it with the soul ;
 This language felt, touches, illumines, inflames :
 Burning interpreter of what the soul experiences,
 It has only sighs, ardors, raptures,
 This is the language of heaven which prayer speaks,
 And which on earth tender love alone comprehends.
 In the pure regions whither I love to fly,
 Enthusiasm also comes to reveal it to me ;
 It alone is my torch in this profound night ;
 And better than reason it explains to me the world,
 Come then ! it is my guide, and I wish to serve thee with it ;
 On the wings of fire, come, suffer thyself to be ravished.
 Already the shadow of the world is effaced from our view ;
 We escape from time, we leap over space ;

And in the eternal order of reality,
 We are here *face to face* with truth.
 This universal star, without setting, without rising,
 This is God, this is the great All who worships Himself ;
 He is, All is in Him : immensity, times
 Are the pure elements of His infinite being ;
 Space in His dwelling—eternity His age ;
 The whole universe subsists by the shadow of His hand,
 Being in eternal billows flowing from His bosom
 Like a river fed by this immense source
 Escapes from Him, and returns to finish where all begins.
 Like Himself without bounds, His perfect works
 Bless as they are produced, the hand which has made them ;
 He peoples the infinite each time that He breathes ;
 For Him to will is to do, to exist is to produce !
 Drawing everything from Himself, relating all to Himself.
 His Supreme will is His Supreme law,
 But this will without shadow and without weakness,
 Is at once power, order, equity, wisdom.
 Upon all which can be, He exercises it at His pleasure,
 The nothing is by degrees elevated to Himself :
 Intelligence, love, power, beauty, youth,
 He can give unceasingly, without exhausting Himself.
 And filling the nothing with His precious gifts
 From the last ranks of being He can draw the gods.
 But these gods of his hand ; these sons of his might,
 Measure from them to Him, eternal distance,
 Tending by nature to the Being who has made them.
 He is the end of all things, and He alone suffices Himself.
 Behold ! behold the God whom every spirit adores ;
 Whom Abraham served, of whom Pythagoras dreamed,
 Whom Socrates announced, with whom Plato conversed ;
 That God whom the universe reveals to reason,
 Whom justice waits for, whom the unfortunate hopes for,
 And whom at length Christ came to show to the world ;
 This is not that Deity fabricated by man,
 That God ill explained by imposture
 That God, disfigured by the hands of false priests,
 Whom our credulous ancestors trembling worshipped ;
 He alone is, He is One, He is just, He is good ;
 The earth sees His work, and the heaven knows His name.

Among English poets, the representative Pantheist is Shelley.
 He denies explicitly the existence of a personal or creative God.

Infinity within,
 Infinity without, belie creation
 The interminable spirit it contains
 Is nature's only God.

His God is the soul, life, or activity, of nature.

Throughout the varied and eternal world,
 Soul is the only element, the block
 That for immortal ages has remained
 The moveless pillar of a mountain's weight,
 Is active living spirit.

Spirit of nature ! here !
 In this interminable wilderness
 Of worlds, at whose immensity
 Even soaring fancy staggers.

Here is thy fitting temple,
 Yet not the lightest leaf
 That quivers to the passing breeze
 Is less instinct with Thee.

Yet not the meanest worm
 That lurks in graves and fattens on the dead
 Less shares thy eternal breath.

Spirit of nature ! thou !
 Imperishable as this scene,
 Here is thy fitting temple.

Throughout these infinite orbs of mingling light,
 Of which yon earth is one, is wide diffused
 A spirit of activity and life,
 That knows no term, cessation, or decay ;
 That fades not when the lamp of earthly life,
 Extinguished in the dampness of the grave,
 Awhile there slumbers, more than when the babe
 In the dim newness of its being feels
 The impulse of sublunary things,
 And all is wonder to unpractised sense :
 But, active, steadfast, and eternal, still
 Guides the fierce whirlwind, in the tempest roars,
 Cheers in the day, breathes in the balmy groves,
 Strengthens in health, and poisons in disease ;
 And in the storm of change, that ceaselessly
 Rolls round the eternal universe, and shakes
 Its undecaying battlement, presides,
 Apportioning with irresistible law
 The place each spring of its machine shall find.

In the following lines this 'Spirit of Nature' seems to be identified with 'Necessity' :—

Soul of the Universe ! eternal spring
 Of life and death, of happiness and woe,
 Of all that chequers the phantasmal scene
 That floats before our eyes in wavering light,
 Which gleams but on the darkness of our prison,
 Whose chains and massy walls
 We feel, but cannot see.

Spirit of Nature ! all-sufficing Power,
 Necessity ! thou mother of the world !
 Unlike the God of human error, thou
 Requirest no prayers or praises.

Shelley denies that he 'deifies the principle of the universe.' He calls the Divinity a pervading Spirit, co-eternal with the universe ; and yet unconsciously as it were, he acknowledges a personal and creative God, possessing *will*, and to whose wisdom the world owes its happiness and its harmonies :—

Spirit of Nature ! thou
 Life of interminable multitudes ;

Soul of those mighty spheres
 Whose changeless path thro' heavens deep silence lies ;
 Soul of that smallest being,
 The dwelling of whose life
 Is one faint April sun-gleam ;—
 Man, like these passive things,
 Thy will unconsciously fulfillest :
 Like theirs, his age of endless peace,
 Which time is fast maturing,
 Will swiftly, surely come ;
 And the unbounded frame, which thou prevadest,
 Will be without a flaw
 Marring its perfect symmetry.

Nature's soul
 That formed the earth so beautiful, and spread
 Earth's lap with plenty, and life's smallest chord
 Strung to unchanging unison, that gave
 The happy birds their dwelling in the grove ;
 That yielded to the wanderers of the deep
 The lovely silence of the unfathomed main,
 And filled the meanest worm that crawls the earth,
 With spirit, thought, and love.

Pope's *Essay on Man* is said to have been written to advocate the doctrines of Leibnitz, as they were made known to Pope by Bolingbroke and Shaftesbury. In what Pope says of natural laws and the perfection of the universe as a divinely constituted machine, there is much of Leibnitz, but Leibnitz would not have sanctioned

All are but parts of one stupendous whole,
 Whose body nature is, and God the soul ;
 That, changed through all, and yet in all the same ;
 Great in the earth, as in the ethereal frame ;
 Warms in the sun, refreshes in the breeze,
 Glows in the stars, and blossoms in the trees,
 Lives through all life, extends through all extent,
 Spreads undivided, operates unspent ;
 Breathes in our soul, informs our mortal part,
 As full, as perfect, in a hair as heart ;
 As full, as perfect, in vile man that mourns,
 As the rapt seraph, that adores and burns :
 To Him no high, no low, no great, no small ;
 He fills, He bounds, connects, and equals all.

nor this,

One all-extending, all-preserving Soul
 Connects each being, greatest with the least ;
 Made beast in aid of man, and man of beast ;
 All served, all serving ; nothing stands alone ;
 The chain holds on, and where it ends, unknown.

An immanent, ever-present, all-extending soul in nature was just what Leibnitz emphatically refused to admit.

Thomson, in his *Hymn on the Seasons*, has beautifully blended the impersonality and the personality of God,

These, as they change, Almighty Father ! these
Are but *the varied God*. The rolling year
Is full of Thee. Forth in the pleasing Spring
Thy beauty walks, thy tenderness and love.
Wide flush the fields ; the softening air is balm ;
Echo the mountains round ; the forest smiles ;
And every sense, and every heart, is joy.
Then comes Thy glory in the Summer months,
With light and heat refulgent. Then Thy sun
Shoots full perfection thro' the swelling year ;
And oft Thy voice in dreadful thunder speaks ;
And oft at dawn, deep noon, or falling eve,
By brooks and groves, in hollow-whispering gales.
Thy bounty shines in Autumn unconfin'd,
And spreads a common feast for all that lives.
In Winter awful Thou ! with clouds and storms
Around Thee thrown ! tempest o'er tempest roll,
Majestic darkness ! On the whirlwind's wings,
Riding sublime, Thou bidst the world adore,
And humblest Nature with thy northern blast.

In the conclusion of this hymn, the poet rises to a sublime expression of 'all for the best.'

Should fate command me to the farthest verge
Of the green earth, to distant barbarous climes,
Rivers unknown to song, where first the sun
Gilds Indian mountains, or his setting beam
Flames on th' Atlantic isles, 'tis nought to me ;
Since God is ever present, ever felt,
In the void waste as in the city full !
And where He vital breathes there must be joy.
When e'en at last the solemn hour shall come,
And wing my mystic flight to future worlds,
I cheerful will obey ; there with new powers
Will rising wonders sing. I cannot go
Where Universal Love not smiles around,
Sustaining all yon orbs, and all their suns,
From seeing evil still educing good,
And better thence again, and better still,
In infinite progression. But I lose
Myself in Him, in Light Ineffable :
Come then, expressive Silence ! muse His praise.

Cowper did not mean to be a Pantheist when he wrote

There lives and works
A soul in all things, and that soul is God.

John Sterling was once in a company where the conversation turned on poets and which of them were Christian. One gentleman was claiming Wordsworth as a Christian poet. 'No !' said John Sterling, emphatically, 'Wordsworth is not a Chris-

tian. He is nothing but a Church-of-England Pantheist.' That Wordsworth should have been Pantheistic is the more remarkable in that he avowedly belonged to that party in the church whose tendency is to *localize* the Deity; to consecrate temples and cathedrals for His special dwelling place. Wordsworth's Pantheism is found in some passages in the '*Excursion*,' but especially in the lines on Tintern Abbey.

I have felt
A presence that disturbs me with the joy
Of elevated thoughts, a sense sublime
Of something far more deeply interfused,
Whose dwelling is the light of setting suns
And the round ocean and the living air,
And the blue sky and in the mind of man
A motion and a spirit, which impels
All thinking things, all objects of all thought
And rolls through all things.

His Platonism, or belief in the pre-existence of souls, is found in the well-known lines,

Our birth is but a sleep and a forgetting;
The Soul that rises with us, our life's Star,
Hath had elsewhere its setting
And cometh from afar;
Not in entire forgetfulness
And not in utter nakedness
But trailing clouds of glory do we come
From God, who is our home.

Bailey's *Festus* has some Pantheistic lines.

The visible world
Is as the Christ of nature. God the Maker
In matter made self-manifest;
All things are formed of all things, all of God.
A world
Is but perhaps a sense of God's, by which
He may explain His nature and receive
Fit pleasure.

Our religious poetry—that is, our hymn literature, is peculiarly destitute of the Pantheistic sentiment. This verse in Wesley's Hymns approaches the raptures of the mystic.

Ah! give me this to know,
With all Thy saints below;
Swells my soul to compass Thee;
Gasps in Thee to live and move;
Fill'd with all the Deity,
All immersed and lost in love!

The following is more to our purpose:—

In Thee we move :—all things of Thee

*Are full, thou Source and Life of all ;
 Thou vast unfathomable Sea !
 (Fall prostrate, lost in wonder, fall
 Ye sons of men, for God is man !)
 All may we lose, so Thee we gain,*

This hymn seems to be a translation of Tersteegen's hymn on the *Presence of God*. The corresponding verse in German is—

Luft, die Alles füllet !
 Drinn wir immer schweben ;
 Aller Dinge Grund und Leben !
 Meer ohn' Grund und Ende,
 Wunder aller Wunder !
 Ich senk' mich in dich hinunter :
 Ich in dir,
 Du in mir,
 Lass mich ganz verschwinden,
 Dich nur sehn und finden.
 Air, which filleth all
 Wherein we always move ;
 Ground and life of all things !
 Sea without bottom or shore,
 Wonder of all wonders,
 I sink myself in Thee,
 I in Thee,
 Thou in me.
 Let me vanish
 To see and find only Thee.

It was impossible for Wesley to translate this literally to be sung by English congregations. For 'air which filleth all,' he wrote, '*In Thee we move.*' This had the sanction of S. Paul ; but, the next words, '*All things of Thee are full,*' is the most familiar sentiment of the Greek and Roman poets.* If the third line is to be interpreted by the original, the '*God is man*' is not more true and marvellous than the converse, '*man is God*' '*I in Thee*' and '*Thou in me.*' With the next verse, Wesley changed the sense and ended the translation. The German is this—

Du durchdringest Alles ;
 Lass dein schönstes Lichte,
 Herr, berühren mein Gesichte.
 Wie die zarten Blumen
 Willig sich entfalten
 Und der Sonne stille halten ;
 Lass mich so,
 Still und froh,
 Deine Strahlen fassen
 Und dich wirken lassen.

* See the verse of Aratus from which S. Paul quoted, page 53, and also the lines from Virgil, page 55.

Thou penetrate all !
 Let Thy beautiful light,
 Lord, touch my eyes
 As the tender flowers
 Willingly unfold,
 And hold (themselves) still before the sun,
 Leave me so,
 Still and joyful,
 To catch Thy rays
 And let Thee work.

Wesley's translation or paraphrase is,

As flowers their op'ning leaves display,
 And glad drink in the solar fire,
 So may we catch Thy every ray,
 So may Thy influence us inspire ;
 Thou Beam of the eternal Beam,
 Thou purging Fire, Thou quick'ning Flame.

Bryant, the American poet, is as little Pantheistic as Cowper,
 yet he writes—

Thou art in the soft winds
 That run along the summit of these trees
 In music, Thou art in the cooler breath
 That in the inmost darkness of this place
 Comes scarcely felt—the barky trunks, the ground
 The moist fresh ground are all instinct with Thee.
 That forest flower,
 With scented breath and look so like a smile,
 Seems, as it issues from the shapeless mould,
 An emanation of the indwelling Life,
 A visible token of upholding Love,
 That are the soul of this wide universe.*

He describes creation as—

The boundless visible smile of Him,
 To the veil of whose brow our lamps grow dim.

The following lines are in Emerson's *Wood Notes*. The pine
 tree sings—

Hearken ! once more ;
 I will tell thee mundane lore ;
 Older am I than thy numbers wot,
 Changes I may but I pass not.
 Hitherto all things fast abide,
 Safe anchored, in the tempest ride.
 Trendrant time returns to hurry
 All to yearn and all to bury.
 All the forms are fugitive,
 But the substances survive,

* It appears that John Wesley was the first English Theologian who introduced *German Theology* into England.

Ever fresh, the broad creation,
A divine improvisation,
From the heart of God proceeds,
A single will, a million deeds.
Once slept the world, an egg of stone,
And pulse and sound and light were none,
And God said 'Throb' and there was motion,
And the vast mass became vast ocean.
Outward and onward the eternal *Pan*,
Who layeth the world's incessant plan,
Halteth never in one shape,
But for ever doth escape,
Like wave or flame into new forms.
Of gem and air and plant and worms,
I that to day am a pine
Yesterday was a bundle of grass.
He is free and libertine
Pouring of His power the wine.
To every age and every race,
Unto every race and age,
He emptieth the beverage
Unto each and all,
Maker and Original
The world is the ring of His spells
And the play of His miracles.

• • • • •
Thou seekest in globe and galaxy
He hides in pure transparency,
Thou askest in fountains and in fires.
He is the essence that inquires ;
He is the axis of the star ;
He is the sparkle of the spar ;
He is the heart of every creature ;
He is the meaning of each feature ;
And His mind is the sky ;
Than all it holds more deep, more high.

CHAPTER XV.

WHAT IS PANTHEISM ?

A celebrated Frenchman once said that language was invented to conceal our thoughts. This may not be true, yet surely men's thought are very indefinite, or language is a very imperfect vehicle for expressing them. What careful reader of these pages has not wished long ere now that writers, especially on abstruse subjects, would define all the terms they use. How many mistakes would this prevent. How much time and labor would it save the reader. (The word Pantheism seems to be the most indefinite of all indefinite words. 'To sum up a man, and call him a Pantheist,' says Mr. Stirling in his book on Hegel, 'is to tell you just nothing at all about him.' What religion from Indian Brahmanism to English Protestantism?—What philosophy from Thales to Hegel might not be called Pantheistic? And to what religion or to what philosophy will its advocates admit that the word is rightly applied? In the first chapter we excluded entirely the Atheistic side, or that which measures God by material laws, and allows Him no existence beyond the assemblage of individual beings which compose the universe. This is called *material Pantheism*, but it is not Theism in any proper sense. It is what has always been known as Atheism, and why should a new element of confusion be introduced into a subject already sufficiently difficult by the use of new and indefinite words? If a distinction is to be made between the Atheist who believes that all arose from chance, and him who sees in all nature an eternal order and the working of certain and immutable law, let the distinction be made, but let us call them both Atheists, for this is their proper appellation. We should then lay aside the words 'material Pantheism.' They mean nothing. They carry in themselves an express contradiction.

✓ What, then, we have hitherto meant by Pantheism is what is called spiritual Pantheism. We have seen it exhibited in all its forms,—the poetical, the mystical, the religious, and the metaphysical. We may eliminate the extravagances of some of the mystics and the intoxication of the Sufis; and, this being done, we shall try to find the value and meaning of what remains. But, before proceeding to this enquiry, it will help us, first briefly to review one or two popular forms of theology said to be partly, if not altogether Pantheistic.

The first is that of Schleiermacher. Neander did not over-estimate Schleiermacher when he announced his death in these words,—‘We have now lost a man from whom will be dated henceforth a new era in the history of theology.’ Schleiermacher gave the death blow to the old Rationalism of Germany, and he sowed the seeds of the new. He regenerated theology, and gave it a fresh start; and, what is more, he revived religion. His Moravian piety was combined with the speculations of Schelling; and the glowing *Discourses*, by which he recalled the educated classes of Germany to a sense of religion, took for their standpoint the philosophy of Spinoza. ‘Piety’ he says, ‘was the maternal bosom in the sacred shade of which my youth was passed, and which prepared me for the yet unknown scenes of the world. In piety my spirit breathed before I found my peculiar station in science and the affairs of life. It aided me when I began to examine into the faith of my fathers, and to purify my thoughts and feelings against all alloy. It remained with me when the *God and immortality* of my childhood disappeared from my doubting sight. It guided me in active life. It enabled me to keep my character duly balanced between my faults and my virtues. Through its means I have experienced friendship and love.’ The ‘*God and immortality*’ of his childhood disappeared. The personal God whom the Moravians worshipped was exchanged for the impersonal Divinity of philosophy. Nor did this theology seem impious. No, it was the very essence of true religion. The pious soul has an immediate knowledge of the Infinite in the finite—of the eternal in the temporal. True piety is to seek this Infinite; to find it in all that lives and moves, in all which is born and changes, in all acting and suffering. It is a life in the *all*. It is to possess all in God and God in all. Nature becomes a continuous action of the Divinity in the world, and in the sons of men. Religion, as the highest science, tries to comprehend the unity of the Divine works—the unchangeable harmony which vivifies

the world. In one of his famous 'Discourses on Religion, Schleiermacher exclaims, with enthusiastic adoration,—'Offer up reverently with me a lock of hair to the manes of the holy, repudiated Spinoza! The high World-Spirit penetrated him; the Infinite was his beginning and his end; the universe his only and eternal love. In holy innocence and lowliness he mirrored himself in the eternal world, and saw himself as its most lovable image. He was full of religion and of the Holy Spirit; and, therefore, he stands alone and unreachable, master in his art above the profane multitude, without disciples and without citizenship.' 'When philosophers' he says again 'shall be religious, and shall seek God like Spinoza; when poets shall be pious and love Christ like Novalis, then will the great resurrection be celebrated in the two worlds.'

The old Rationalists placed religion in reason; the orthodox in authority. Schleiermacher, following Jacobi, placed it in devout feeling, or an immediate self-consciousness. Out of this he drew his entire theology, and on this ground he tried to harmonize theology with philosophy. To describe the forms of this religious feeling; the conditions of the pious consciousness, is the work of theology. Now the first and most obvious of these is a consciousness of ourselves as completely dependent, which is the same thing as a consciousness of ourselves in our relation to God. This feeling is the Divine element in our constitution. By it we are capable of fellowship with God. It proclaims the presence of God in us, and shows how we may be one with the Infinite.

Jesus Christ differed from other men in this, that in Him there was a perfect consciousness of God. He was actually what all men are potentially. He was the realization of our humanity; a perfect indwelling of the Supreme constituted His inner-self. The Divine activity, which is in humanity, was chiefly manifested in Him. The Divine word was not an eternal person. It only became a person in Jesus of Nazareth. As the Divinity is potentially a person in every man, we may at once conclude that the Trinity in the orthodox, or Western view of it, was rejected by Schleiermacher. There are not three persons, but three activities—The Father in creation; the Son in redemption; the Holy Spirit in sanctifying the Church. It is only in an improper sense that we apply the word person to Deity at all. He is the Infinite Being, the universal substance. We may think of God as a person if we can separate from His personality everything incompatible with His infinity. Indeed it is a neces-

sity of our minds that we do form a personal conception of God, yet God is more than a person. The question, he says 'between us and the material Pantheist is not whether there is a personal, but whether there is a *living* God. The attribute, 'living,' Schleiermacher regarded as not placing the same limitations to the Divine Being as that of personal. It might be objected that the humblest beings, even unorganized matter, possess life, and that Schleiermacher, instead of raising our views of the attributes of God, as He intended to do, in reality lowers them. But this would be an irrelevant objection for Schleiermacher is showing the materialist that God is a living Being, and not a blind necessity. What kind of a Being He is, and in what respect He is personal, is to be discussed not with the materialist, but with the believer in God.

Schleiermacher's doctrine of creation was the same as Spinoza's. There is a creation, but it is eternal. God as the absolute causality could never have been without a something caused. He dwells immanently in His universe, and creates unceasingly. The fall was a necessary step in human progress. It was inevitable from the existence of the sense element in man. Redemption is, therefore, a necessary result, or a continuation of creation. Its object is to raise men to a perfect communion with God, such as was possessed by Jesus Christ. Revelation is the revealing of God in us. Inspiration is the growth of the *Christ within*. In the life of Christians, the resurrection of Jesus is completed and His earthly life perpetuated. We are progressing God-wards. In Christ humanity becomes divine, and this by an eternal predestination, not of some men only, but of all men, to eternal life.

Schleiermacher said that the *immortality* as well as the God of his childhood disappeared. 'The last enemy to be destroyed is not death, but the hope of immortality' said Strauss; but Schleiermacher had said before that,—'Life to come, as actually conceived, is the last enemy which speculative criticism has yet to encounter, and, if possible, to overcome.' He means *individual* immortality—an immortality apart from God; a continuance of our present unreal existence. The true eternal life is that of which the religious soul has a foretaste in communion with God. Thus to lose ourselves—thus to abandon ourselves to the universe, to our eternal interest; to know that we are a part of the All, and one with the Eternal is not to be lost without a return, not to be annihilated without reward. On the contrary, it is to create the true personality, to know that

we are not a mere transient mode of the Infinite, but its enduring expression, its chosen and wished for instrument. These doctrines were called Pantheistic. Schleiermacher maintained that they were not. His critics say that these were merely the doctrines of his youth, and they trace in his writings modifications, gradual changes, approximations to a belief in the personality of God. Schleiermacher, in his old age, declared that he retracted nothing. He added explanatory notes to his 'Discourses on Religion;' but these were only to confirm what he had taught, and to show the harmony of his earlier and his later teaching. His critics found in this but 'the weakness, common to great men, of believing that he had never erred.'

The great German theologians whose works we now eagerly translate into our language—Tholuck, Neander, Dörner, Lücke, Ullmann, and Julius Müller—were the disciples of Schleiermacher. To such as these we may suppose were addressed the inspiring words with which he concludes the fourth of the 'Discourses on Religion,'—"Friends and admirers of all that is beautiful and good, you are a school of priests. Each of you handles as the object of art and study the representation of the spiritual life—to you the highest life. The Godhead out of His infinite riches has given to each of you a peculiar destiny. With the universal sense for all which belongs to the sacred domain of religion, each of you, as becomes an artist, unites the desire to be perfect in one particular branch. A noble emulation reigns among you, and the desire to produce something which is worthy of such an assembly, suffers each of you to drink in with truth and eagerness all which belongs to his appointed domain. It will be preserved in a pure heart. It will be arranged with a collected mind. It will be adorned and perfected by a heavenly art. And thus in all ways and from all sources shall sound forth a hymn of gratitude and praise to the Infinite, whilst each of you with a joyful heart, offers the ripest fruit of his thought and contemplation—of his reflection and feeling. You are a band of friends. Each knows that he is a part and a work of the universe, and that in him its divine work and life are manifested. He beholds himself as a worthy object of attention for others. What he observes in himself, of his relation to the universe—what there is formed in him of the elements of humanity, all will be disclosed with holy fear, but with ready openness that every one may go in and see it. Why should you conceal anything from each other? All that is human is sacred, for all is divine. You are a band of brothers

—or have you a better expression for the entire mingling of your nature, not as regards being and action, but as regards feeling and understanding? The more each of you comes near to the universal, the more does he communicate himself to others, the more perfectly do you become one. Each has a consciousness for himself. Each at the same time has a consciousness of the other. You are no longer merely men; you are also humanity, and in going forth from yourselves; triumphing over yourselves, you are on the road to true immortality and eternity.”*

The next theology we have to examine is that of Frederick Robertson. Shall we call him a disciple of Schleiermacher? His favorite doctrine of the heart preceding the intellect in all matters of eternal truth reminds us of Schleiermacher's devout feeling, and immediate consciousness of God. In Robertson's sermons there is the same mystical piety combined with a manly freedom of enquiry, the same faith in the inherent power of truth, and the same placing of the personal or internal possession of ‘eternal life,’ above all external authority. And, more than this, Robertson's view of the relation of God to the world is as near to Schleiermacher's as it can well be. ‘The world,’ he says, ‘is but manifested Deity,—God shown to eye and ear and sense; this strange phenomenon of a world, what is it? All we know of it; all we know of matter is that it is an assemblage of powers which produce in us certain sensations, but what these powers are in themselves we know not. The sensations of color, weight, form we have, but what it is which gives us these sensations—in the language of the schools, what is the substance which supports the accidents and qualities of being, we cannot tell. Speculative philosophy replies it is but ourselves becoming conscious of ourselves. Positive philosophy replies, what the being of the world is we cannot tell, we only know what it seems to us. Phenomena, appearances, beyond these we cannot reach. Being itself is, and ever must be, unknowable. Religion replies

* Schleiermacher's strength lay in the religious life within him; his weakness was his faith in criticism. It was necessary that the spirit of enquiry should be permitted free course, but the grounds on which he rejected some portions of the Scriptures were arbitrary without measure. His classification of the Dialogues of Plato from internal evidence has not been sanctioned by any eminent Platonist. That kind of criticism which gave but a faint probability as to Plato, ought surely never to have been applied to the writings of the New Testament. It must be very questionable criticism which rejects from internal evidence the first two chapters of S. Luke's gospel and retains the rest as genuine.

that something is God, the world is but manifested Deity. That which is beneath the surface of all appearances, the cause of all manifestations is God. The sounds and sights of this lovely world are but the drapery of the robe in which the Invisible has clothed Himself.*

'Go out at this Spring season; see the mighty preparations for life that nature is making; feel the swelling sense of gratefulness, and the persuasive, expanding consciousness of love for all being, and then say whether this whole form which we call nature is not the great sacrament of God—the revelation of His existence, and the channel of His communication with the spirit?'

'What is the world itself but the form † of Deity; whereby the manifoldness of His mind and beauty manifests itself, and wherein and whereby it clothes itself. It is idle to say that spirit can exist apart from form. We do not know that it can. Perhaps even the Eternal Himself is more closely bound to His works than our philosophical systems have conceived. Perhaps matter is but a mode of thought.' ‡

'The Spirit of God lies touching, as it were, the soul of man—ever around and near. On the outside of earth man stands with the boundless heaven above him—nothing between him and space, space around him and above him—the confines of the sky touching him. So is the spirit of man to the spirit of the Ever-near. They mingle—in every man this is true. God has placed men here to feel after Him, if haply they might find Him, albeit *He is not far* from any one of them. Our souls float in the immeasurable ocean of Spirit. God lies around us; at any moment we might be conscious of the contact.'*

The influence of Schleiermacher may be distinctly traced in the writings of Theodore Parker. His chief work, '*A Discourse*

*Even the practical Charles Kingsley, who is thoroughly sound on the personality of God, has these words in one of his *Village Sermons*,—'He lets His breath, His spirit, go forth, and out of that dead dust grow plants and herbs afresh for man and beast, and He renews the face of the earth. For, says the wise man, 'all things are God's garment'—outward and visible signs of His unseen and unapproachable glory; and when they are worn out He changes them—says the Psalmist—as a garment, and they shall be changed.

The old order changes, giving place to the new,

And God fulfils Himself in many ways.

But He is the same. He is there all the time. All things are His work. In all things we may see Him, if our souls have eyes. All things, be they what they may, which live and grow on this earth, or happen on land or in the sky, will tell us a tale of God.

†Even Dr. Rowland Williams, in quoting this passage, puts a query after it.
‡These three lines are found almost verbatim in Channing's *Essay on Milton*.

of *Matters pertaining to Religion* ' was obviously suggested by Schleiermacher's 'Discourses.' It proceeds on the same doctrine of religious consciousness—a *sense of dependence*; or, as it is otherwise called, *the religious element in man*. This sense of dependence does not disclose the character, still less the nature and essence of the Object on which it depends. It is but the capacity of perception—the eye which sees or the ear which hears. But it implies the Absolute. The reason spontaneously gives us by *intuition* an IDEA of that on which we depend. This is natural religion or revelation, for all actual religion is *revealed* in us. There is but one religion, and it is always the same. Theologies are men's thoughts about religion, and these have never ending differences; no two men having precisely the same theology. There have been then forms of religion of all kinds, from the worship of the Fetich to the worship of Him who is a Spirit. God has spoken most clearly in Jesus of Nazareth; but He is speaking in all men—speaking most audibly in those who listen most attentively, who honestly use the faculties which God has given them, and are in earnest to know and do His will. Jesus of Nazareth taught the absolute religion, but the churches have never realized what He taught. The Christianity of the churches is, therefore, transient and like all other passing forms will have its day, and give place to something higher and better. Parker discourses of the workings of the religious sentiment, and after the fashion of the Germans traces its development from the lowest to the highest forms. Of the *one-and-all* doctrine, he says, "Panthéism has, perhaps, never been altogether a stranger to the world. It makes all things God, and God all things. This view seems at first congenial to a poetic and religious mind. If the world be regarded as a collection of powers, —the awful force of the storm, of the thunder, the earthquake; the huge magnificence of the ocean, in its slumber or its wrath; the sublimity of the ever-during hills; the rocks, which resist all but the unseen hand of Time; these might lead to the thought that matter is God. If men looked at the order, fitness, beauty, love, everywhere apparent in Nature, the impression is confirmed. The All of things appears so beautiful to the comprehensive eye, that we almost think it is its own Cause and Creator. The animals find their support and their pleasure; the painted leopard and the snowy swan, each living by its own law; the bird of passage that pursues, from zone to zone, its unmarked path; the summer warbler which sings out its melodious existence in the woodbine; the flowers that come unasked,

charming the youthful year; the golden fruit maturing in its wilderness of green; the dew and the rainbow; the frost flake and the mountain snow; the glories that wait upon the morning, or sing the sun to his ambrosial rest; the pomp of the sun at noon, amid the clouds of a June day; the awful majesty of night, when all the stars with a serene step come out, and tread their round, and seem to watch in blest tranquillity about the slumbering world; the moon waning and waxing, walking in beauty through the night:—daily the water is rough with the winds; they come or abide at no man's bidding, and roll the yellow corn, or wake religious music at nightfall in the pines—these things are all so fair, so wondrous, so wrapt in mystery; it is no marvel that men say, this is divine; yes, the All is God; He is the light of the morning, the beauty of the noon, and the strength of the sun. The little grass grows by His Presence. He preserveth the cedars. The stars are serene because He is in them. The lilies are redolent of God. He is the One; the All. God is the mind of man. The Soul of all; more moving than motion; more stable than rest; fairer than beauty, and stronger than strength. The power of nature is God; the universe, broad, and deep, and high, a handful of dust, which God enchants. He is the mysterious magic that possesses the world. Yes, He is the All; the Reality of all phenomena.

But an old writer thus pleasantly rebukes this conclusion: 'Surely, vain are all men by nature, who are ignorant of God, and could not out of the good things that are seen, know Him that is . . . but deemed either fire, or wind, or the swift air, or the circle of the stars, or the violent water, or the lights of heaven, to be the gods which govern the world. With whose beauty if they being delighted took them to be gods; let them know how much better the Lord of them is, for the first Author of beauty hath created them.''

After this description of material Pantheism, which does not admit God as the Absolute and Infinite, but only as the sum total of material things, and which he regards as having been the doctrine of Strato of Lampsacus, of Democritus, and perhaps of Hippocrates, Parker goes on to describe what he calls Spiritual Pantheism. This denies the existence of matter, and resolves all into spirit, which is God. The material is but phenomenal, and the reality of it is God. This, Parker describes, as the Pantheism of Spinoza, of the Mediæval Mystics, of S. John, and of S. Dionysius the Areopagite. We may add that it is the Pantheism of Theodore Parker, at least it is difficult to distinguish

if from what he says soon after, about the relation of nature to God:—"If Infinite, He must be present everywhere in general, and not limited to any particular spot, as an old writer so beautifully says:—'Even heaven and the heaven of heavens cannot contain Him.' Heathen writers are full of such expressions. God, then, is universally present in the world of matter. He is the substantiality of matter The circle of His Being in space has an infinite radius. We cannot say, Lo here, or Lo there—for He is everywhere. He fills all nature with His overflowing currents; without Him it were not. His Presence gives it existence; His Will its law and force; His Wisdom its order; His Goodness its beauty.

- It follows unavoidably, from the idea of God, that He is present everywhere in space; not transiently present, now and then, but immanently present, always; His centre here; His circumference nowhere; just as present in the eye of an emmet as in the Jewish holy of holies, or the sun itself. We may call common what God has cleansed with His Presence; but there is no corner of space so small, no atom of matter so despised and little, but God, the Infinite, is there.

Now, to push the inquiry nearer the point. The nature or substance of God, as represented by our idea of Him, is divisible or not divisible. If infinite He must be indivisible, a part of God cannot be in this point of space, and another in that; His Power in the sun, His Wisdom in the moon, and His Justice in the earth. He must be wholly, vitally, essentially present, as much in one point as in another point, or all points; as essentially present in each point at any one moment of time as at any other or all moments of time. He is there not idly present but actively, as much now as at creation. Divine Omnipotence can neither slumber nor sleep. Was God but transiently active in matter at creation, His action now passed away? From the idea of Him it follows that He is immanent in the world, however much He also transcends the world. 'Our Father worketh hitherto,' and for this reason nature works, and so has done since its creation. There is no spot the foot of hoary time has trod on, but it is instinct with God's activity. He is the ground of nature; what is permanent in the passing; what is real in the apparent. All nature then is but an exhibition of God to the senses; the veil of smoke on which His shadow falls; the dew-drop in which the heaven of His magnificence is poorly imaged. The sun is but a sparkle of His splendor. Endless

and without beginning flows forth the stream of Divine influence that encircles and possesses the all of things. From God it comes, to God it goes. The material world is perpetual growth; a continual transfiguration, renewal that never ceases. Is this without God? Is it not because God, who is ever the same, flows into it without end? It is the fulness of God that flows into the crystal of the rock, the juices of the plant, the life of the emmet and the elephant. He penetrates and pervades the world. All things are full of Him, who surrounds the sun, the stars, the universe itself; 'goes through all lands, the expanse of oceans, and the profound heaven.'

Since these things are so, nature is not only strong and beautiful, but has likewise a religious aspect. This fact was noticed in the very earliest times; appears in the rudest worship, which is an adoration of God in nature. It will move man's heart to the latest day, and exert an influence on souls that are deepest and most holy. Who that looks on the ocean, in its anger or its play; who that walks at twilight under a mountain's brow, listens to the sighing of the pines, touched by the indolent wind of summer, and hears the light tinkle of the brook, murmuring its quiet tune,—who is there but feels the deep religion of the scene? In the heart of a city we are called away from God. The dust of man's foot and the sooty print of his fingers are on all we see. The very earth is unnatural, and the heaven scarce seen. In a crowd of busy men which set through its streets, or flow together of a holiday; in the dust and jar, the bustle and strife of business, there is little to remind us of God. Men must build a cathedral for that. But everywhere in nature we are carried straightway back to Him. The fern, green and growing amid the frost, each little grass and lichen, is a silent memento. The first bird of spring, and the last rose of summer; the grandeur or the dulness of evening or morning; the rain, the dew, the sunshine; the stars that come out to watch over the farmer's rising corn; the birds that nestle contentedly, brooding over their young, quietly tending the little strugglers with their beak,—all these have a religious significance to a thinking soul. Every violet bloom of God, each lily is fragrant with the presence of Deity. The awful scenes of storms, and lightning and thunder, seem but the sterner sounds of the great concert, wherewith God speaks to man. Is this an accident? Ay, earth is full of such 'accidents.' When the seer rests from religious thought, or when the world's temptations make his soul tremble, and though

the spirit be willing, the flesh is weak; when the perishable body weighs down the mind, musing on many things; when he wishes to draw near to God, he goes, not to the city — there conscious men obstruct Him with their works — but to the meadow, spangled all over with flowers, and sung to by every bird; to the mountain; 'visited all night by troops of stars;' to the ocean, the undying type of shifting phenomena and unchanging law; to the forest, stretching out motherly arms, with its mighty growth and awful shade, and there, in the obedience these things pay, in their order, strength, beauty, he is encountered front to front with the awful presence of Almighty power. A voice cries to him from the thicket, 'God will provide.' The bushes burn with Deity. Angels minister to Him. There is no mortal pang, but it is allayed by God's fair voice as it whispers, in nature, still and small, it may be, but moving on the face of the deep, and bringing light out of darkness."

From this immanency of God in the universe, Parker argues for the in-dwelling of God in man — the natural, perpetual, and universal inspiration of the human race. He supposes that the spiritual Pantheists, especially the German philosophers, did not allow God any existence beyond the sum total of finite spirit; and thus, God, with them, was variable and progressive, growing in wisdom as the ages roll. From this view of the Deity, he differed widely, as God must infinitely transcend both the worlds of matter and of spirit. The progress is not in God, the manifestor, but in nature, which is the manifestation of Him.

We have already quoted from Emerson's poetry. His prose writings abound with sentiments similar to those in his verses. Emerson is usually classed with Theodore Parker as representatives of a far gone school of Unitarianism, but this like all such classifications is open to many exceptions. A similarity of sentiments is indeed found, but the differences are manifest. For some to whom Parker is reverent, Emerson seems to border on blasphemy.

The Egyptian Hermes said, 'Let us call God by all names, or rather let us call Him by no name, for no man can express Him.' The latter is more reverent, and Parker has followed it, but Emerson delights to give God names, which according to the wise rule of Des Cartes should be rejected as expressing imperfection in the Divine nature. But Emerson does not forget the wisdom of Hermes. If he calls God by any name, it is with the distinct remembrance that no name can express Him. He says that Empedocles spoke a great truth of thought when

he declared that he was God, but it was a lie before it reached the ear, for every expression of the Infinite must be blasphemous to the finite. To determine is to deny. Yet Emerson calls God the 'Oversoul,' within which every man's particular being is contained, and by which it has its unity with all other beings. God is the *Impersonal*—the *Common Nature*—which appears in each of us, and which is yet higher than ourselves. We, as individuals, live in succession, in division, in parts, in particles, but within, in the *universal-soul*, the *wise silence*, the *universal beauty*, to which every part or particle is equally related—the Eternal One. And the deep power in which we all exist—this beatitude, which is all accessible to us, is not only perfect and self-sufficient, but it is at once the act of seeing, and the thing seen, the subject and the object in one. Time, space, and nature vanish before the revelation of the soul. The simplest person, who in integrity worships God receives God, yet for ever and ever the influx of this better and universal self is new, and unsearchable. Man, the imperfect, adores his own perfect. He is receptive of the great soul, whereby he overlooks the sun and the stars, and feels them to be accidents and effects, which to-day are, and to-morrow change and pass. Man is nothing. As a transparent eyeball he sees all the currents of universal being circulate through him. He is a part or particle of God. Humanity is a *façade* of Deity. Let man but live according to the laws of his being, and he becomes Divine. So far as man is just and pure and good—he is God. The immortality of God, the safety of God, the majesty of God have entered into his soul. There is but one mind everywhere—in each wavelet of the pool, in each ray of the star, in each heart. Whatever opposes that mind is baffled. When man becomes unjust or impure, he comes into collision with his own nature. Of his own will he subjects himself to the opposition of that mind, which, with rapid energy, is righting all wrongs.

'Jesus Christ,' says Emerson, 'belonged to the true race of prophets. He saw with open eye the majesty of the soul. Drawn by its severe harmony, ravished with its beauty, he lived in it, and had his being there. Alone in all history he estimated the greatness of man. One man was true to humanity. He saw that God incarnates Himself in man, and goes forth evermore anew to take possession of the world. He felt respect for Moses and the prophets, but no unfit tenderness at postponing their initial revelation to the hour, and man that now is—to the eternal revelation in the human heart. Thus was He a true man.'

A theology, corresponding to Theodore Parker's, is at the foundation of the celebrated 'Life of Jesus,' by M. Rénan. Describing the theology of Jesus and its relation to other religions, the author says, "Deism and Pantheism have become the two poles of theology. The paltry discussions of scholasticism, the dryness of spirit of Des Cartes, the deep-rooted irreligion of the eighteenth century, by lessening God, and by limiting Him, in a manner, by the exclusion of everything which is not His very self, have stifled in the breast of modern rationalism all fertile ideas of the Divinity. If God, in fact, is a personal being outside of us, he who believes himself to have peculiar relations with God is a 'visionary,' and as the physical and physiological sciences have shown us that all supernatural visions are illusions, the logical Deist finds it impossible to understand the great beliefs of the past. Pantheism, on the other hand, in suppressing the Divine personality, is as far as it can be from the living God of the ancient religions. Were the men who have best comprehended God—Sakya-Muni, Plato, S. Paul, S. Francis d'Assissi, and S. Augustine (at some periods of his fluctuating life)—Deists or Pantheists? Such a question has no meaning. The physical and metaphysical proofs of the existence of God were quite indifferent to them. They felt the Divine within themselves. We must place Jesus in the first rank of this great family of the true sons of God. Jesus had no visions; God did not speak to Him as to one outside of Himself; God was in Him; He felt himself with God, and He drew from His heart all He said of his Father. He lived in the bosom of God by constant communication with Him; he saw Him not, but he understood Him, without need of the thunder and the burning bush of Moses, of the revealing tempest of Job, of the oracle of the old Greek sages, of the familiar genius of Socrates, or of the angel Gabriel of Mahomet. The imagination and the hallucination of a S. Theresa, for example, are useless here. The intoxication of the Sufi proclaiming himself identical with God is also quite another thing. Jesus never once gave utterance to the sacrilegious idea that he was God. He believed Himself to be in direct communion with God; He believed Himself to be the Son of God. The highest consciousness of God which has existed in the bosom of humanity was that of Jesus."

What M. Rénan means by 'Pantheism,' is evidently materialism, or the denial of a living God. It is not that of the ancient religions nor of the old philosophers. But the doctrine which

he attributes to Jesus, and Jesus' view of His relation to God, are not widely different from what was taught by Spinoza and Schleiermacher. In another chapter Rénan says "The idea which Jesus had of man was not that low idea which a cold Deism has introduced. In His poetic conception of nature, one breath alone penetrates the universe; the breath of man is that of God; God dwells in man, and lives by man, the same as man dwells in God, and lives by God. The transcendent idealism of Jesus never permitted Him to have very clear notions of His own personality. He is His Father, His Father is He; He lives in His disciples; He is everywhere with them; His disciples are one, as He and His Father are one. The idea to Him is everything; the body which makes the distinction of persons is nothing.' In another place Renan seems to adopt Schleiermacher's view of immortality, which indeed is only a part of the same theology. "The phrase, 'Kingdom of God,' he says 'expresses also very happily, the want which the soul experiences of a supplementary destiny, of a compensation for the present life. Those who do not accept the definition of man as a compound of two substances and who regard the Deistical dogma of the immortality of the soul as in contradiction with physiology, love to fall back upon the hope of a final reparation, which under an unknown form shall satisfy the wants of the heart of man. Who knows if the highest term of progress after millions of ages may not evoke the absolute consciousness of the universe, and in this consciousness the awakening of all that have lived? A sleep of a million of years is not longer than the sleep of an hour. S. Paul, on this hypothesis, was right in saying, *In ictu oculi*! It is certain that moral and virtuous humanity will have its reward, that one day the ideas of the poor but honest man will judge the world, and that on that day the ideal figure of Jesus will be the confusion of the frivolous who have not believed in virtue, and of the selfish who have not been able to attain to it. The favorite phrase of Jesus continues, therefore, full of an eternal beauty. A kind of exalted divination seems to have maintained it in a vague sublimity, embracing at the same time various orders of truths."*

* M. Rénan's '*Vie de Jesus*,' with all its beauty—and it has some noble passages—can only be regarded as a calamity in the Christian world. The author started on the right principle, and the only principle on which a true '*Life of Jesus*' can be written—that of bringing out His perfect humanity. The Church has always believed that Jesus was '*very man*'; but the fear that His humanity, too plainly acknowledged, would lead to a denial of the other truth, that He is '*very God*,' has tended to merge His humanity in His divinity.

The question, 'What is Pantheism?' becomes more difficult to answer the more we study books written expressly to refute it. The Abbé Maret published a work some years ago in the interests of the Catholic Church, in which he shows that all religions, ancient and modern, with all philosophies of religion are Pantheistic, if not actually, yet certainly in their tendencies, excepting the Catholic religion and philosophies sanctioned by the Church, such, for instance, as the speculations of Augustine, Des Cartes, and Malebranche. Not, he says, that reason necessarily leads to Pantheism, but this is the inevitable result of rationalism, or the denial of a Divine revelation.

By a *Divine revelation*, M. Maret means an infallible church. Without this we are left to individual reason, and as all men have not the same development of reason, the same means of knowing what is truth, nor the same judgment concerning it, there cannot be for man, on the principles of reason, absolute truth and absolute error. 'Catholicism,' he says, 'starts with absolute truth. Pantheism teaches that humanity will only arrive at truth after a long history of progression.' We may object to the inference that there is no absolute truth, because it is not absolutely apprehended. As Protestants we might say that Catholics no more than we have absolutely apprehended truth. But M. Maret's argument is that the Church has; and he proves it by reason, demonstrates it, 'gives a rigorous proof of his fundamental proposition.' 'To arrive at truth,' he says, 'we must have an idea of it.' Every method of the investigation of truth supposes the idea of that which it investigates. Now as there are but two ideas of truth, there can be but two methods of investigation, that of Catholicism and that of Pantheism. Truth is that which is; truth and being are identical.

Unitarianism has preserved a part of the truth which Trinitarianism had partially lost, but which it was under no necessity of losing. A life of Jesus from the human side, as the child of humble parents growing in wisdom and stature, and in favor with God and man, awaking to a consciousness of His destiny, doing His work in the world as a man inspired by God; and showing where the human met the divine is the life we should have had from Rénan had he been consistent with himself. In the view of God's relation to the world set forth by Rénan, there is no antecedent impossibility in miracles. That impossibility only exists in the system of a *cold Deism*, such as the author condemns. But Rénan changes his ground as often as he has the opportunity of saying something clever. This 'Teacher of the absolute religion,' this great 'Revealer of God,' this 'first of the sons of God,' this 'Noble Initiateur' is after all but an enthusiast; one whose reason seemed disturbed, and if He was not Himself an impostor, He was yet weak enough to allow His friends to contrive impostures for Him! The author of *Ecce Homo* has taken up the subject from the same side as Rénan, if he is consistent, he will reach a different conclusion.

We conceive being under the two great categories of the Absolute and the relative, the Infinite and the finite. The Infinite gives us an image of itself, or an idea of the one absolute necessary and immutable truth. The finite, by its opposition to the Infinite, appears to us, in some way, as a negation of being; a true non-being. It only subsists by a real participation in the Infinite by the living relations which unite it to God. These relations, these laws which harmonize and unite all beings together, and the world with God, give us the idea of a mediating truth between the Infinite and the finite; the Creator and the creature, God and the world. Now this mediating truth comes from God; yea, it is God, and so must be like Him, absolute, eternal, and immutable.

This idea of truth leads to Catholicism, where we have a living and infallible authority—a society which is the depository of truth, and of the divine word. It is difficult to see the force of M. Maret's argument from the vagueness of his definition of Pantheism. It is that belief which makes 'truth progressive and variable,' and he enumerates among Pantheists the orthodox Guizot, the Eclectic Cousin, and the Saint-Simonian Pierre Leroux, with all the German and French philosophers who are not Catholics. It does not appear that all or any of these men make truth *in itself* progressive and variable. It is so only as regards man's relation to it. Man is a seeker after truth, and as M. Maret admits, all men, even Catholics, are 'perfectible and progressive.' Even that incomprehensible thing the Catholic Church, according to some of the greatest Catholic theologians has truth only as it is developed from age to age; new doctrines being continually added to the sum total of the Catholic faith.

The theory of an infallible church is without doubt a happy invention. It puts an end to all doubts, and if it permits enquiry, it fixes its exact bounds. An infallible church is the desired haven of every anxious and troubled mind. Had we been the makers of revelation, that is, had it been ours to determine in what way God should reveal Himself to man we should have caused the words of truth to be written in the heavens, so that all men might read them, or we should have made angels the ambassadors, so that all men might see and hear what the immediate messengers of heaven had to say, but if both of these were denied, the next mode of revelation would certainly be through an infallible church. But what if this, too, were denied? Is truth, then, impossible? Is it, therefore, mutable

and uncertain? Whatever be the answer to this question we must not invent ways for God. We cannot determine beforehand how He should reveal Himself; we must then enquire how He has revealed Himself. The infallible church has never determined what Pantheism is. It has applied the word to certain doctrines, and to certain philosophies with the same indefiniteness that we find among Protestants. It has forbidden the works of Erigena, and suffered to pass uncensored the writings of the Areopagite. It has not condemned the speculations of Des Cartes and Malebranche, the legitimate outcome of which was the doctrine of Spinoza. It declares itself opposed to Pantheism, but it has neither eliminated nor explained the Pantheistic element in the Fathers, whose works it holds for orthodox, nor of the schoolmen who were its great doctors in its mediæval glory.

M. Maret's work was specially addressed to the rationalists of France. Among whom were the Eclectic philosophers, M. Cousin and his followers, some of them, by the way, Catholic laymen who had distinguished themselves as refuters of Pantheism. Maret found the heresy in Cousin's analysis of the mind, which he, in some sense, identified with the Divine mind, filling up with the idea of causation the chasm between the Infinite and the finite. The Infinite, says M. Cousin, 'is the absolute cause which necessarily creates, and necessarily develops itself. We cannot conceive unity without multiplicity. Unity taken by itself; unity indivisible; unity remaining in the depths of its absolute existence, never developing itself into variety, *is for itself, as if it were not*. It is necessary that unity and variety co-exist so that from their existence results reality; and unity admits multiplicity, because the absolute is cause.' The life in God, Cousin describes as the movement which goes from unity to multiplicity, making up in the Divine intelligence—the Infinite, the finite, and the relation between them. From this idea of the Divine causation we learn what it is for God to create. It corresponds to the effects we can produce by the exercise of our faculties. God is an absolute and necessary cause, He creates with Himself, He passes into His work, remaining entire in Himself. The world then is created out of the Divine substance, and created necessarily. Its existence is as necessary as that of God Himself, since it is only the development of His life—the unfolding of His unity. In human reason, Cousin says, we have found three ideas which it did not create, but which rule and govern it. From these ideas to God, the passage is not

difficult, for these ideas are God Himself. 'Again,' He says, 'The God of consciousness is not an abstract God—a solitary being, banished by creation, on a throne of a silent eternity an absolute existence, which resembles the annihilation of existence. He is a God at once true and real, at once substance and cause, always substance and always cause, being substance only inasmuch as He is cause, and cause only inasmuch as He is substance, that is to say, being absolute cause, one and many, eternity and time, space and number, essence and life, individuality and totality; principle, end, and middle, at the summit of being, and at its lowest degree—Infinite and finite together, a triple Infinite, that is to say, at once God, nature, and humanity. If God is not All, He is nothing. If He is absolutely indivisible in Himself, He is inaccessible, and by consequence He is absolutely incomprehensible, and His incomprehensibility is for us His destruction. Incomprehensible as a formula, and in the school, God is revealed in the world which manifests Him, and for the soul which possesses Him and feels Him.' In accordance with this view of the relation between God and the world, M. Cousin propounds doctrines of psychology, of religion, and a philosophy of the progressive development of humanity. Thought is a Divine inspiration, a true revelation in the soul. There is a solemn moment in which, without being sought, we are found—when without any concurrence of our will; without any mingling of reflection, we enter into possession of life, and the three elements which constitute it; the idea of the Infinite the finite, and their relation. This *fiat lux* of thought is a true manifestation of God in us. There are privileged men in whom the faculty of inspiration has been raised to its highest power. These men become for other men masters and revealers. Hence the origin of prophecies, priesthoods, worships.

Cousin's disciples, Jouffroy and Damiron, Michelet and Lermnier, applied their master's principles to the elucidation of the formation of dogmas; to philosophies of history and religion; and the last mentioned, Lermnier, to the philosophy of right. The human mind Lermnier calls 'a perpetual and necessary revelation of God.' Its progress is infinite and indefinite. In it God appears on earth, constituting law and order. God Himself is the essence of law; and the development of this essence is the progress of society. Maret finds the Pantheist heresy in every idea of development, as being antagonistic to his definition of revelation. Even M. Guizot becomes a Pantheist in affirming that truth is not absolutely realized in human institutions, either political or religious.

After the Eclectics, Maret discovers the same doctrine among the Socialists of France, the followers of Saint-Simon and Charles Fourier — but especially in the school of Pierre Leroux and the new Encyclopædists, which was developed from Saint-Simonism. Maret undertakes to refute them all, and to defend and exhibit the doctrines of the Catholic Church. He has declared the certainty of revelation as man's only guide; but he does not sacrifice reason. He is more a philosopher than his theory would have led us to expect. 'When the spirit of man' he says, 'in the silence of meditation, rises to the conception of eternal, necessary, and immutable ideas. When it perceives truth; when it sees God Himself; if it re-enters into itself after having enjoyed this magnificent light; if it question itself, what will it think of its own nature? Being of a day, changeable and changing shadow of being, it will acknowledge, without doubt, that it has not been able to draw from itself the great idea of truth. Man will acknowledge with gratitude that this idea has visited his soul, that it fell upon it like a ray of the sun on the organ of sight. He will acknowledge that the great light has been given him, that it is *revealed* to him.' Independent of the Church then there is a *revelation*. We might go on to ask if this revelation is fallible or infallible, if it has any correspondence to the revelation in the Church. 'We here take the word revelation' says M. Maret, 'in its largest sense. We believe that ideas and speech are revealed to man. That is the revelation of which S. John speaks, which enlightens every man that cometh into the world, and which is the true source of reason. That primitive and natural revelation, which every good psychology establishes, is in perfect harmony with the teaching which represents to us religion as born of a revelation, preserving itself and developing itself by revelation. There is revelation in the natural order as well as in the supernatural. There are natural truths as well as supernatural truths, which both come from God.' It was, of course, necessary that the unity between the natural and supernatural suggested by the word *revelation*, should be abandoned, for the class of things naturally revealed might be differently understood by different minds. They led to Pantheism. The revelation in the Church was therefore added as the 'revelation positive and supernatural.' But even this revelation runs back into the other, for Maret has to go to the dim light of Judaism and the dimmer light of the Patriarchal age which possessed only the truths of natural religion, to find that Church which he reckons necessary for the preservation of

the supernatural revelation. But he has maintained that there is such a thing as a *revelation* in the human mind. To this extent he was a philosopher; and, as such, had to accept the same conclusions that he objected against the Eclectics and Saint-Simonians. If there is a natural revelation, it is progressive; yes, and the supernatural revelation, is it not progressive too? His theory is to start with an infallible Church, but in reality he begins with reason, and so must every man who does reason. The new Encyclopædists had good ground for retorting on the refuter of Pantheism that he had the leaven of it in himself, and though his 'ecclesiastical superiors gave encouragement to his feeble efforts for the defence of the faith,' his brother priest, the Abbé Peltier who, it must be admitted, was not wanting in discernment, found in Maret's definition of God the very essence of Pantheism.*

Amand Saintes, representing the Protestant side of Christianity, says the alternative is not Pantheism or Catholicism, but Pantheism or the gospel. This is scarcely a step towards the solution of the question, for the gospel spoken of in this way is as indefinite as Pantheism. We know what the gospel is as a message of good news from God to man. We know that it is a manifestation of God's infinite compassion—a revealing of Him as 'our Father in heaven,' but the theology of the gospel—the gospel as opposed to Pantheism; what is it? We have seen that the great teachers of the gospel from S. Paul, and the Alexandrian Fathers, to say nothing of S. John, down through the great doctors of the middle ages, even to the Abbé Maret, have been considered more or less Pantheistic. The dogmatic teaching of the gospel is to every man what it is to his reason. The moment we have refused obedience to the authority of a Church, we are cast on our own responsibility. This is the fundamental principle of Protestantism. It is useless to ignore it. Even when we give allegiance to a Church, it is only so far as that Church represents the collective wisdom of its members. The Catholic Church is a convenient refuge: for whatever a man's metaphysics may be; however much his philosophy may come in collision with the Church's dogmas, he can effect the reconciliation as Malebranche did, and indeed as every thinking

* The Abbé Peltier, like a good orthodox priest as he is, says that Christians should be content with the knowledge of God given them in the Church Catechism. He told M. Maret that his definition of God was borrowed from Hegel and Cousin; and he denounced Malebranche as a priest who substituted philosophy for the doctrines of the Church.

Catholic does, by agreeing to submit to the decisions of the Church. It is the boast of Protestantism that reason is an essential element in all matters of religious belief.

M. Saisset representing the interests of religious philosophy tried to show that Pantheism was not the necessary result of the exercise of reason in religion. He criticized Des Cartes, Malebranche, and Spinoza, with their disciples in France and Germany. He found the poison of Pantheism secretly lurking in the theology of Sir Isaac Newton and Samuel Clarke. The famous passage with which Newton concludes his *Principia* we have always regarded as an expression of the purest Theism; but M. Saisset sees in it the germs of a very dangerous theology. 'God' says Newton 'is neither eternity nor infinity, but eternal and infinite. He is neither duration nor space, but He endures always, and is present everywhere and constitutes both duration and space.' M. Saisset interprets this as teaching that God is substance, and that infinite duration and extension are only modes of His being. 'It is true' he says, 'that Newton saw the danger of the theory, and tried to escape its consequences; but his qualifications are simply inconsistencies, neither explaining the first hypothesis nor expounding another. Newton's doctrine was taken up by Clarke, who established his argument for the being of God on the fact that we have ideas of infinite time and infinite space, concluding that there must be a Being to constitute these infinities—that they seem both to be but attributes of an Essence incomprehensible to us. This, M. Saisset regards as but another form of the doctrine of Spinoza, who made extension or infinite space one of the attributes of God. The same objection had been made by Leibnitz to Sir Isaac Newton's definition of space as the *sensorium* of the Deity. Clarke defended Newton, quoting his words more accurately than Leibnitz had done. 'Space is, as it were, the *sensorium* of the Deity.'

M. Saisset criticized all erring theologians. His work has been translated into English to check the importation of *Pantheism* into England, but not without a protest by the translator that M. Saisset himself has retained the very essence of the theology which he wished to refute. M. Saisset saw, as he thought, the danger of believing in infinite time and infinite space specially exemplified in the case of Newton and Clarke, yet he thought it impossible not to believe that the world is infinite and eternal. 'Away from me!' cries the philosophical refuter of Pantheism, 'Away from me, vain phantoms of the

imagination; God is eternally all that He is. If He is the Creator, He creates externally. If He creates the world, it is not from chance or caprice, but for reasons worthy of Himself; and these reasons are eternal. Nothing new, nothing fortuitous can arise in the councils of eternity. The universe must express the infinity and the eternity of God. We cannot conceive of its having a beginning, nor can we anywhere set a bound to it. M. Saisset does not forget that Giordano Bruno was led to Pantheism through this belief of the world's eternity and infinity; but, to save himself, he distinguishes between the infinity of God, and the infinity of the world—the eternity of God and the eternity of the world. The one is absolute; the other relative. The want of this distinction led Newton to confound eternity and time, immensity and space. There can be no eternal time, and no infinite space for eternity has no duration, and space has no bounds. Eternity and immensity are the unchangeable. Time and space the very conditions of change. The Creator alone is eternal, immense, infinitely absolute. The creation is scattered over space and time, subject to changes and to limits. 'Thus,' exclaims M. Saisset:—'I consider myself saved at once from Pantheism and superstition!'

The question of Pantheism involves several other questions.

I. It is an enquiry concerning being. What is that which *IS*? There is a permanent—a something stable amid all change, at least something which abides whatever may be its changes. This is the first and most certain fact of the human consciousness. But what is that which *IS*? We do not know, we only know our ideas about it. We find ourselves in space—we ask what that is. Our first conception of it is a something limited, but this conception is soon corrected, for we cannot imagine any bound being set to space. We still ask for somewhere beyond. The highest flights of imagination never reach the boundary wall of the universe. We go from world to world, from sun to sun, and to imaginable worlds and suns beyond these, but we never reach *nowhere*. Our idea of space is infinite, or indefinite—call it whichever we may, it is practically the same. We cannot define it, we cannot give it limits. It is the opposite of the finite. Infinite space is to us a positive idea; it is that of boundless extension. This is the result of the first effort of the mind to give attributes to Being or that which *IS*. It is the boundless. Our idea of time follows the same law as that of space. We first think of a part of time; a finite part, an hour, a day, a week, a year, a life-time. We go back to past genera-

tions; the beginning of our own nation; the time of nations before ours; the first nation, the first family, the first thing, but what was there before that? Something, surely. No, there cannot have been anything before the first thing. What then? Ceaseless duration, and involved in this, something which endures; a Being infinite as regards time or duration which is our idea of time. That then which IS, is always, has been and will be always. These are the first thoughts of philosophy. They are the most certain, the clearest, the most universal of all our ideas. But being is still something undefined. It is not any one of the finite things which we see. If these are anything beyond phenomena, they must partake of that which IS. Being then is some unknown universal. 'Let us call it water,' said Thales. 'Air,' said Anaximenes. 'Fire,' said Heraclitus. 'No,' said Anaximander, 'call it what it is — 'The boundless.' 'Call it the one,' said Pythagoras. 'Better still,' cried Parmenides and all the Eleatics, 'let us call it by its true name,' 'Being,' 'the Being,' the 'One Being.' This was the foundation of all ancient Theology. It was the first great grasp of the intellect of man in its search for God. Yet it was only the philosophical putting together of a universal truth. The Brahman had incorporated it in the legends of his gods. It was the thought which reared the vast temples of India. As the negation of the finite it comforted the Buddhist amid the miseries of the transient life, and as the non-Being, or the above-Being, it was the ground of the mystic theology of Plato's Alexandrian disciples. How it passed into the theology of the Church, and how it has leavened all theology to the present day we have abundantly shown. It is, in fact, the ground-work of theology. A doctrine of being is implied, if not expressed, in every religious system. We are only shocked when a Dionysius or an Erigena calls Being Nothing, and identifies that Nothing with God — when a Spinoza calls it substance, a Schelling identity, or a Hegel, an idea, and says that God is this Substance, this Identity, this Idea. They transfer to the Infinite, words which in our minds express only the finite.

Substance was not an improper name for being in general, but in our ordinary thinking, the substance of a thing is merely that conception of it which we have from our sense-knowledge. But the substance of a thing is properly the thing itself or that which gives it reality. This is what Spinoza meant by substance; but the word had been already appropriated, and it carried with it the marks of its previous service. Bayle, who,

as we have been told a hundred times, both by Catholics and Protestants, refuted Spinoza, did his great work of refutation by confounding Spinoza's substance with the substance of ordinary thinking, proving that everything has its own substance, which in Bayle's sense was perfectly true; but the argument had nothing to do with Spinoza. So long as the problem of Being is unsolved, the problem of Pantheism too will remain unsolved.

II. The question of being involves a further question—that of creation. There are three views of creation. The first is properly emanation, or the evolution of all things from the essence of God. The second is that of some of the ancient philosophers—that God wrought on an eternal material, external to Himself. The third is the modern Christian doctrine of creation out of nothing. We waive altogether the question of the Mosaic creation. Geology has demonstrated that that was not a creation out of nothing; at least it was not the beginning of material or organized existence, and the best Hebrew scholars are agreed that the Hebrew word which we translate *created* does not necessarily mean more than *formed*. Our enquiry is not then concerning the Mosaic creation, but concerning the beginning of phenomenal or finite existence, and how the Infinite and the finite can exist together. We see at once that they cannot, for the Infinite can leave no room for a finite to stand over against it. We can add nothing to infinite Being. It is already all that is or can be. If a worm, or a drop of water, or a blade of grass has any real being by itself, that being is subtracted from the Infinite, and it ceases to be infinite. It matters not whether the finite existence be a universe or an atom of dust, a deity or a worm, the least of conceivable being subtracted from the Infinite deprives it of infinity. 'God' said the Eleatics, 'is either all or nothing, for if there is a reality beyond Him, that reality is wanting to His perfection.' The finite or the Infinite must go; either there is no God or no world. The Eleatics were certain of the existence of God. They were certain that Being existed and that it was infinite. They had, therefore, but one alternative. That was to make the world merely phenomena. It is confessed on all sides that this is the real question at issue. This is the argument which can not be answered. Plato felt it, and tried to solve it by means of the *ideas*, but he left the problem where he found it. Aristotle felt it, but notwithstanding his supposition of an eternal matter, and his evident leaning to a personal creative Deity, he fell back on abstract being, leaving the relation of God to the world undetermined, if he

did not really identify the Divine Being with the all-life of the universe. Malebranche felt that philosophy led him inevitably to a doctrine of creation different from that of the Church, but he harmonized the two on the Cartesian principle of believing the Church's doctrine on the Church's authority; and, therefore, though a philosopher, he believed in the existence of a material world and its creation out of nothing. M. Saisset refuted Pantheism, yet at the end of the refutation he cried, 'God creates eternally.' And this is the universal utterance of reason. 'How,' Mr. Mansel asks, 'can the relative be conceived as coming into being? If it is a distinct reality from the absolute it must be conceived as passing from non-existence into existence. But to conceive an object as non-existent, is again a self-contradiction, for that which is conceived exists, as an object of thought, in and by that conception. We may abstain from thinking of an object at all; but, if we think of it, we can but think of it as existing. It is possible not to think of an object at all, and at another time to think of it as already in being; but to think of it in the act of becoming, in the progress from not-being into being, is to think that which in the very thought annihilates itself. Here again the Pantheistic hypothesis seems forced upon us. We can think of creation only as a change in the condition of that which already exists, and thus the creature is conceivable only as a phenomenal mode of the being of the creation. The whole of this web of contradictions is woven from one original warp and woof,—namely, the impossibility of conceiving the co-existence of the Infinite and the finite, and the cognate impossibility of conceiving a first commencement of phenomena, or the absolute giving birth to the relative. The law of thought appears to admit of no possible escape from the meshes in which thought is entangled, save by destroying one or other of the cords of which they are composed. Pantheism or Atheism are thus the only alternative offered to us, according as we prefer to save the Infinite by the sacrifice of the finite, or to maintain the finite by the sacrifice of the Infinite.' M. Mansel has a way of his own to escape this dilemma of which we shall have occasion to speak again. Another argument for emanation, or the impossibility of creation, is derived from the want of material external to God, on which He can work. To make something out of nothing is an act which we cannot conceive. In our idea of cause, the material or passive element is always present. To change the nothing into something is to give nonentity the qualities of reality. We

may, indeed, suppose that God has made the first matter of the universe, and then wrought on it, externally, but this supposes two substances—one of God and one of the world, which cannot co-exist as we have already seen, that of God being infinite, and the other finite. This argument virtually revolves itself into the first.

A third difficulty in supposing a creation is found in the moral nature of God. Either He creates from necessity or voluntarily. If from necessity, He must be controlled by some power beyond or outside of His own being, but this is contrary to our idea of God. He must create freely. But here we are encompassed with manifold difficulties. God's will must, like Himself, be eternal. If He has willed, He has willed eternally. The things produced must then, also, be eternal. It is impossible that His will could have been without the means of being accomplished. There is some sophistry in this argument, for God's will may have been that the universe be temporal and not eternal. There is more validity in the objection from the imperfection of the world. Why did God will what is imperfect? If the world is neither perfect, eternal, nor infinite as the advocates of creation say, why, as Malebranche expresses it, has 'God taken upon Himself the base and humiliating condition of a Creator?' These are all questions we cannot solve, for the idea of creation is at war with the idea of the Infinite.

The second doctrine of creation, that of an eternal matter, is no longer tenable. The objection, from the impossibility of the co-existence of the infinite and the finite is as valid against it as against any view of creation. The third doctrine, that of creation from nothing, is the received doctrine of the Churches. Hegel, as we have seen, like an orthodox philosopher as he was, or at least meant to be, embraced this view, maintaining that the denial of this was the origin of the Pantheism of Parmenides and Spinoza. Spinoza himself thought that he escaped Pantheism, by saying that creation, though eternal in the sense of never ending duration, was not eternal in the proper, philosophical, or Alexandrian sense that eternity is distinct from all duration, and means absolute existence or the perfection of being. This is the sense in which it is generally used by the more learned of the Fathers, and which seems to be sanctioned by S. John in his Gospel. Creation out of nothing, they did not understand. It was introduced, as Hegel says, by the later Christian metaphysic.* It does not mean that nothing was the

* It is difficult to say when the doctrine of creation from nothing was first

entity out of which God created, but that God called into existence by an act of His power, a new substance. The Neo-Platonists called this new substance the phenomenal or created as distinct from the eternal and real, and probably this was what Spinoza meant when he said there was only one substance; and the moment we begin to reason on the subject we see that there is no other conclusion consistently to be reached, but that this substance is the reality of all phenomenal and finite existence. "When we are aware," says Sir William Hamilton, "of something which begins to exist, we are by the necessity of our intelligence, constrained to believe that it has a cause. But what does this expression, that it has a cause, signify? If we analyse our thought, we shall find that it simply means that as we cannot conceive any new existence to commence, therefore all that now is seen to arise under a new appearance, had previously an existence under a prior form. We are utterly unable to realize in thought, the possibility of the complement of existence, being either increased or diminished. We are unable on the one hand, to conceive nothing becoming something, or on the other, something becoming nothing. When God is said to create out of nothing, we construe this to thought, by supposing that *He evolves existence out of Himself*; we view the Creator as the cause of the universe. '*Ex nihilo nihil, in nihilum nil posse reverti*,' expresses in its purest form the whole intellectual phenomenon of causality." In another place, Sir William says — "We are unable to construe in thought that there can be an atom absolutely added to, or an atom absolutely taken away from, existence in general. Make the experiment. Form to yourselves a notion of the universal; now, conceive that the quantity of existence, of which the universe is the sum, is either amplified or diminished? You can conceive the creation of the world as lightly as you can conceive the creation of an atom. But what is creation? It is not the springing of nothing into something. Far from it; it is conceived, and is by us conceivable, merely as the evolution of a new form of existence, by the fiat of the Deity. Let us suppose the very crisis of creation. Can we realize it to ourselves, in thought, that the moment after the universe came into manifested being, there was a larger

taught. Plato makes the world to be made from the *non-existent*, but this with Plato means matter. Athanasius and Arius were agreed that the body of Christ, like all other created things, was made from the *non-existent*, but Athanasius maintained that the Divinity of Christ was uncreated, and therefore the Son was consubstantial with the Father.

complement of existence in the universe and its Author together, than there was the moment before, in the Deity Himself alone? This we cannot imagine. What I have now said of our conception of creation, holds true of our conception of annihilation. We can conceive no real annihilation, no absolute sinking of something into nothing. But, as creation is cogitable by us only as an exertion of divine power, so annihilation is only to be conceived by us as a withdrawal of the divine support. All that there is now actually of existence in the universe, we conceive as having virtually existed, prior to creation, in the Creator; and in imagining the universe to be annihilated by its Author, we can only imagine this as the retraction of an outward energy into power.* Mr. Calderwood in a criticism of Sir William Hamilton's philosophy denounces this view of causation and creation as essentially *Pantheistic*. Mr. Mansel regrets that Mr. Calderwood should ever have charged this theory with Pantheism; for, if ever there was a philosopher whose writings from first to last are utterly antagonistic to every form of Pantheism, it is Sir William Hamilton. But what in all the world is Pantheism if it is not that *God evolves the universe out of Himself*?* Mr. Stuart Mill denies the statement that we cannot conceive a beginning or an end of physical existence. Its inconceivableness belongs only to philosophers and men of science, not to the ignorant who easily conceive that water is dried up by the sun, or that wood and coals are destroyed by the fire. But surely a metaphysician like Mr. Stuart Mill knows that the phenomenon of thought is not to be taken from what the fool thinks, but from what the philosopher thinks. The true phenomenology of mind is not that of the ignorant unthinking mind, but of the mind which thinks.

That the matter of the universe is 'an efflux of God' was the doctrine of Milton, and he maintains that it is the doctrine, not only of the old Fathers but of the New Testament. 'It is clear' he says, 'that the world was framed out of matter of some kind or other. For since action and passion are relative terms; and since, consequently, no agent can act externally unless there be some patient such as matter, it appears impossible

* Mr. Mansel says that Sir William Hamilton's theory represents the Pantheistic hypothesis as the result of a mere impotence of thought. This is Sir William Hamilton's theory generally, at least as interpreted by Mr. Mansel, but in what he here says of creation he seems to imply that it is impossible for us to conceive creation except as emanation. Mr. Calderwood, in a second edition of his work, says, "It would have been gratifying had I seen sufficient grounds to warrant it, in deference to the opinions expressed, first by Professor Fraser, and then after by Dr. Mansel, to withdraw the assertion that Hamilton's

that God could have created this world out of nothing ; not from any defect of power on His part, but because it was necessary that something should have previously existed capable of receiving passively the exertion of the divine agency. Since, therefore, both Scripture and reason concur in pronouncing that all these things were made, not out of nothing, but out of matter, it necessarily follows that matter must either have always existed independently of God, or have originated from God at some particular time; that matter should have been always independent of God (seeing that is only a passive principle dependent on Deity and subservient to Him ; and seeing, moreover, that as in number, considered abstractly, so also in time or eternity there is no inherent force or efficacy) that matter, I say, should have existed of itself from all eternity is inconceivable. If, on the contrary, it did not exist from all eternity, it is difficult to understand whence it derives its origin. There remains, therefore, but one solution of the difficulty, *for which, moreover, we have the authority of Scripture, namely, that all things are of God.* But if matter thus emanates from God, if the matter of the universe proceeds immediately from the universal mind, there must still remain some bond or ground of union between mind and matter in their limited or finite forms. Milton is not afraid to carry this out, perhaps as far as Schelling did. He says that 'man is a living being intrinsically and properly one, and individual, not compound or separable, not according to the common opinion made up and framed of two distinct different natures as of soul and body ; but the whole man is soul, and the soul man, that is to say, a body, a substance individual, animated, sensitive, and rational.' This will explain the doctrine of the following lines from *Paradise Lost* :—

'O Adam ! One Almighty is, from whom
All things proceed, and up to Him return,
If not depraved from good, created all
Such to perfection. *One first matter all,*
Indued with various forms, various degrees
Of substance. And, in things that live, of life,
But more refined, more spirituous and pure,
As nearer to Him placed or nearer tending,
Each in their several active spheres assigned,
Till body up to spirit work in bounds
Proportioned to its kind. So from the root
Springs lighter the green stalk, from thence the leaves,
More aery, last the bright consummate flower
Spirits odorous breathes, flowers and their fruit,
Man's nourishment, by gradual scale sublimed,

reasoning leads logically to a Pantheistic conclusion. But, after careful re-consideration, I cannot see any escape from such a result, when it is maintained 'that creation adds nothing to existence.'

To vital spirits aspire, to animal,
To intellectual.'

III. The question of Pantheism is generally supposed to be settled by saying that the Theist believes God to be personal, the Pantheist believes Him to be impersonal—not *Him* but *It*. But what do we mean by a person? An individual, one who exists in relation to others, an *I* which evokes a *Thou*. But this is just what God in His highest being cannot be, for it involves limitations which we cannot ascribe to God without danger of idolatry. It is a denial of the Infinite. To avoid this limitation we are compelled to say that God is impersonal—that is, not a person, because He must be something more than is implied in the word person. Here language fails us, if not thought itself. The impersonal is beneath the personal. We apply it to things inanimate, to things destitute of life and consciousness. In this sense it is less applicable to God than the word personal. God, then, is neither personal nor impersonal. We cannot apply these terms to Him as they are applied to finite beings or finite things. His infinity negatives them both. But we can only speak of God in human language if we speak of Him at all. And human language being imperfect, we must often express our meaning by a verbal contradiction. God is neither personal nor impersonal. He is both. He is personal, because our highest conception of being is as a person. Only to the personal can we ascribe reason, consciousness, freedom of action. And here our idea of God emerges as that of the highest personality. God is a person absolutely free and independent. He must be a person, for our highest idea of existence is that of spirit, and spiritual existence is spiritual, individual personality. But, while ascribing the highest personality to God, it is necessary to guard this from mistake by saying that He is more than personal, and in this sense impersonal. This two-fold and apparently contradictory view of the Divine Being underlies all theology. The ignoring it or forgetting it is the ground of many differences, and the recognition of it would be the settling of many vexed questions in theology. He who has grasped the great truth of the impersonality of God and yet recognizes the Divine personality, has risen to that transcendental region where truth has its origin, and yet he has a footing on the terrene where truth is known only under the limitations of things finite, conceived through the medium of human analogies and spoken of in the language of the sensuous. If we look only on the infinite side, our eyes are dazzled with the light; if only on the finite, our knowledge will be partial, imperfect, and even erroneous, unless

we continually bring with us the remembrance that the truth thus partially seen has also a side which is infinite. The doctrine of the impersonality and the personality of God is acknowledged implicitly by the Church in many parts of Christian Theology.

(1.) We have it in the doctrine of the Trinity. Every religion and every system of religious philosophy, with but few exceptions, has been in some form Trinitarian. They have all set forth a Being, a Mind, and a Relation; a Subject, an Object, and a Bond between them. The expressions are often widely different; but the idea is generally the same. In the Christian religion we acknowledge a Father, a Son, and a Holy Ghost, —three persons, yet one God. The Father is God, the Son is God, and the Holy Ghost is God; 'and yet,' adds the orthodox creed, 'there are not three Gods, but one God.' The Arian objected that this was a manifest contradiction. Looking only to the finite side, and overlooking the conditions on which a knowledge of God is possible to man, he said,—'The Son must be inferior to the Father;' but the Nicene Fathers were guarded against 'dividing the substance.' The Sabellian, from the same ground as the Arian, tried in another way to reconcile the Trinitarian contradiction by saying that the three persons meant three manifestations of the Divine Being—'That the Monad develops itself into a Triad in the Son and in the Spirit, and yet there is only one essence in three different relations.' But the orthodox Fathers were guarded against 'confounding the persons.' The heresy of Arius was as much a heresy against the Alexandrian philosophy as against the doctrine of the Church. He interpreted eternity by his idea of time, supposing that in eternity there was temporal priority. He said that the Father must have been before the Son. 'There was, when the Son was not.' But in the Neo-Platonic philosophy, eternity and time were entirely different in kind. The process of development or manifestation which Plotinus and his disciples placed in the Godhead was an eternal process. 'The Being' was always generating the 'Mind' or Divine Reason, and the Spirit was eternally proceeding from the 'Being' through the 'Mind.' When Arius assailed the doctrine of the Nicene Fathers, S. Athanasius equipped himself with the Neo-Platonic arguments that the eternal light could never have been without its radiance that if 'there was when the Son was not, then God was once wordless and wisdomless.' Or, to use another of his illustrations, 'if the Fountain did not beget Wisdom from Itself, but acquired it from without, there is no longer a Fountain, but a sort of pool.' The 'Mind,' *Logos*, or God in His personality

must have been eternally with and in God in His impersonality, otherwise God would not be God.

Of all the heresies on the Trinity, that of Sabellius was nearest to the doctrine of the Church. It differed from it only in this, that though Sabellius called all the three *hypostases* persons, yet he explained that they were only three modes or manifestations of the Divine Nature. In this way he secured the *Uni-personality* of God. But the right faith is that God is *Tri-personal*. Implicitly, then, in the orthodox doctrine of the Trinity, personality as applied to God is not the same as personality applied to man. Trinitarian apologists have rarely failed to show their Unitarian antagonists that 'person' in the Godhead does not mean a distinct individual existence, but an indefinite *hypostasis*, so that the Trinitarian holds the doctrine of the Divine Unity as firmly as the Arian, the Sabellian, or the Unitarian. If Trinitarianism neglected the Unity and held only to the *Tri-personality*, it would be the greatest of all heresies; but the Creed declares, that though the three persons are each 'uncreate, incomprehensible, and eternal;' yet, there are not 'three uncreated,' 'three incomprehensibles,' or three eternals;' which implies that the personality of God was something transcendent; to us an impersonality, not less but more than the personality of man. Each of the three persons has distinct operations; but, even in the Scriptures, the work of the one is ascribed to the other, so that every idea of personal plurality is distinctly removed. The doctrine of the Trinity is not the irrational contradiction which the Church of Rome makes the doctrine of the Eucharist. S. Athanasius was right in calling the Arians 'insensate.' They were the least rational of the two contending parties. The orthodox doctrine was the last word of reason concerning God. It was the recognition of Him in His transcendency as personal and yet as impersonal. *

* It was common among the Alexandrians to use the word 'nature' as synonymous with 'person.' S. Cyril so used it in the following passage as quoted by John Henry Newman. 'Perhaps some one will say, How is the Holy and adorable Trinity distinguished into three *hypostases*, yet issues in one nature of Godhead? Because the same in substance necessarily following the difference of *natures*, recalls the minds of believers to one nature of Godhead.' "In this passage," continues Dr. Newman, "one nature stands for a reality, but 'three natures' is the one eternal Divine nature, viewed in that respect in which He is Three. The Son *who is* the Divine substance is from the Father, *who is* the same Divine Substance. As we might say that 'Man is father of man;' not meaning by man the same individual in both cases, but the same nature, so here we speak not of the same person in two cases, but the

The ultimate union of redeemed humanity with the Divine Essence, as taught by S. Athanasius, transcends all human ideas of personality. It is to be accomplished by Jesus Christ, in whom the eternal Logos was incarnate. Jesus Christ was not God. He was created. He was among those creatures, of whom Arius said that they were made from nothing, or out of the non-existent. But the eternal Wisdom of God was incarnated in Him, so that He was wholly God and wholly man; as simply God as if He were not man, and as simply man as if He were not God. He deified His human nature, and He will deify us. It was an essential part of the Arian heresy to deny that men could be truly the sons of God. Christ, not being of the same substance with the Father, neither He nor His disciples could ever truly participate in the Divine. But Athanasius says that in the Word we become truly the sons of God, for since the Word bore our body, and came to be in us, therefore, by reason of the Word in us, is God called our Father. For the Spirit of the Word in us, names through us His own Father as ours, which is the Apostle's meaning when he says *God hath sent forth the Spirit of His Son into your hearts, crying Abba, Father*. And again "we all partaking of the same become one body, having the one Lord in ourselves. Had He said simply and absolutely 'that they may be one in Thee,' or 'that they and I may be one in Thee, God's enemies had had some plea, though a shameless one; but, in fact, He has not spoken

same individuum. All these expressions resolve themselves into the original mystery of the Holy Trinity, that person and individuum are not equivalent terms, and we understand them neither more nor less than we understand it. In like manner as regards the incarnation, when S. Paul says, 'God was in Christ,' he does not mean absolutely the Divine nature, which is the proper sense of the word, but the Divine nature as existing in the person of the Son." In another place he adds, 'though we say three persons, person hardly denotes an abstract *idea*, certainly not as containing under it three individual subjects, but it is a term applied to the one God in three ways. It is the doctrine of the Fathers, that, though we use words expressive of a Trinity, yet that God is beyond number, that Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, though eternally distinct from each other, can scarcely be viewed together in common except as *one* substance, as if they could not be generalized into three *Any* whatever; and as if it were strictly speaking incorrect to speak of a person as otherwise than of the person, whether of Father or of Son, or of Spirit. The question has almost been admitted by S. Augustine, whether it is not possible to say that God is one—one person.' The 'preface' in our Communion Service for the Feast of Trinity says that God is 'not one only person, but three persons,' and this is the Catholic faith. Archer Butler, in a sermon on the Trinity, says 'there is no more difficulty in supposing a thousand persons in the Godhead than in supposing a single person.' All Trinitarians feel that it is only in a qualified sense that personality can be predicated of God.

simply, but, *as Thou, Father, art in Me, and I in Thee, that they may be all one.**"

(2.) This unconscious recognition of the impersonality of God may be further illustrated by the doctrine of the atonement, and the different views which theologians take of what it is. The popular, and we may say, orthodox, teaching on this subject, is that man having sinned of his own free will, God devised a scheme of redemption, a plan of salvation. There was a great emergency and God provided for it. He was angry against sin, for He is a righteous God. Yet, being full of pity, He had compassion on the sinner, and sent His Son into the world to be a propitiation for our sins. Justice being satisfied, God may now be just and yet the justifier of them who believe. This is the ordinary and popular form of the theology of the atonement. There are some variations which have at least a verbal sanction in the Holy Scripture. Such is that view which makes God the angry Father and Christ the loving Son. The Father is full of terror, suspending the sword of justice over the head of the sinner; but the Son intercedes and pleads that the evil done may be pardoned or the sinner have time for repentance. The Son dies on the cross to reconcile God to us, and so we have redemption, through

'The streaming drops of Jesus' blood,
Which calmed the Father's frowning face.'

* The reality of our sonship was a strong point with the Alexandrian Fathers. The definition of sonship was 'of the same substance with the Father.' This could be said only of the eternal Son—the Word of God. But as 'being of the same substance' is that which constitutes sonship, and as they were eager to maintain the *real* sonship of believers, it was not easy to express their meaning without saying either that believers were of the same nature with God or that we are only called sons of God by a figure of speech, as the Arians said. S. Basil says that we are sons 'properly' and 'primarily' in opposition to figuratively. S. Cyril says that we are sons 'naturally,' as well as 'by grace.' 'Truly and naturally the Son of God' is generally reserved by S. Athanasius for Christ alone, as 'we are sons not as He was by nature and grace.' "S. Basil and S. Gregory Nyssen" says John Henry Newman, "consider son to be 'a term of relationship according to nature.' The actual presence of the Holy Spirit in the regenerate in *substance*, constitutes this relationship of nature, and hence S. Cyril says that 'we are sons naturally because we are in Him, and in Him alone.' And hence Nyssen lays down, as a received truth, that 'to none does the term *properly* apply but to one in whom the name responds in truth to the nature.' And he also implies the intimate association of our sonship with Christ's, when He connects together regeneration with our Lord's eternal generation, neither being of the will of the flesh." S. Augustine says 'He called men gods as being deified of His grace, not as born of His substance.' It is remarkable that the eighteenth century divines, who were mostly disciples of Locke, and like him, Arian in their tendencies, generally denied the reality of the sonship, except as applied to Christ. Earnest religion came back with the re-assertion of a real and true sonship. Those who deny this reality may be

Some Calvinists add to this, that only a chosen number of the human race, are elected to be saved, and, only for them did Jesus pay the price of redemption, and the price having been paid, it would be unjust in the Father not to save them. The last view as it relates to the extent of redemption, can only be advocated on the ground of a certain view of the nature of the atonement. Taking the words 'price,' 'propitiation,' 'redemption' literally, it is a contradiction to speak of Christ having died for all men unless it is allowed that all men will be saved. The advocates of a universal atonement, do not seem to have known that they differed from their opponents, on the question of the character of the atonement. They were agreed to take the words literally, and to say that a real satisfaction had been made to the Father by the Son. And they were amply justified by the whole tenor as well as by the words of the Apostolic writings. There is wrath in God. The arrows of His justice are terrible. He is a consuming fire, and to fall into His hands is a fearful thing. But in Jesus Christ, He is reconciled. Yet there are many texts which show that the Divine love to man was in the Father, as well as in the Son, for God is love. He did

Trinitarians in name, but they are either Arians or the Trinity is with them some fearful contradiction like transubstantiation in the Church of Rome.

* No believer in the universality of the atonement can consistently believe in the death of Christ as a literal substitution in the sense of price or compensation. The Calvinist objection is valid, that it would be unjust in the Divine Being to suffer anyone to be lost after the price had been paid. Mr. Rigg, a Wesleyan minister, has written a book on *Modern Anglican Theology*, in which there is some severe criticism on Mr. Maurice, and especially on his doctrine of the atonement. A great deal of this would have been spared had Mr. Rigg been better acquainted with the character and tendency of Wesley's Theology, which in many points is more allied to Mr. Maurice's than is generally supposed. Wesley's Theology was essentially Alexandrian. Witness the place where he calls Socrates' demon, 'a ministering angel,' and includes him with Marcus Antoninus, and some other good Heathens, among those who were *inspired*. Southey quotes Wesley as endorsing the words that 'what the Heathens called Reason; Solomon, Wisdom; S. Paul, Grace; S. John, Love; Luther, Faith; Fenelon, Virtue was all one and the same thing.—The light of Christ shining in different degrees under different dispensations.' Southey again quotes Wesley, describing a mystical faith as 'the internal evidence of Christianity, a *perpetual revelation* equally strong, equally new, through all centuries, which have elapsed since the Incarnation, and passing now even as it has done from the beginning directly from God into the believing soul.' 'The historical evidence of revelation,' Wesley goes on to say, 'strong and decisive as it is, is cognisable by men of learning only, but this is plain, simple, and level to the lowest capacity. The sum is, *one thing I know, whereas I was blind now I see*, an argument of which a peasant, a woman, a child may feel all the force.' The position which Mr. Maurice has taken up as to reason and revelation is the very ground on which Wesley stood in his controversies with the Calvinists.—(See page 354.)

not love men merely because Christ died for them, but He so loved the world that He gave his Son. It is evident that both views are true. The apparent contradiction lies only in a too literal application to God of the idea of personality, a forgetting that God is impersonal as well as personal. The second of our 'Articles,' distinctly says that Jesus Christ truly suffered, was crucified, dead and buried, to *reconcile* His Father to us, and yet the first Article says that God is 'without body, parts, or passions.' If God is without *passions*, how could He be capable of anger—what need for reconciling a God of whom we cannot predicate either hatred or love? Is not the answer to be found in this that God transcends personality as we understand it—that the atonement, too, is in some way transcendental, that it is a process in God, and that the true reconciliation is in the 'Lamb slain from the foundation of the world?'

(8.) This two-fold conception of God again appears in the opposing views of Divine providence. Does God preserve the world by general or by special laws? One of the most certain things in the world appears to be our dependence on an absolute inviolable order in which the universe exists. We see this order reigning everywhere. It subjects us to conditions. It requires us to keep its commandments. If we break them, we suffer as certainly as if the law Maker Himself put them into immediate execution. Nor is there any apparent discrimination as to moral worth. The good man does not live longer than the vicious man, except so far as he has kept physical laws. Due retribution so manifestly follows the breaking of physical laws in the natural world, that it has been justly inferred that in the long run evil doing may as certainly entail its own punishment as if there were no living personal Judge to inflict it. The impersonal Deity is plainly the Ruler of the world. But would it be worthy of an omnipotent God, or would it be like an everywhere present and all-knowing God so to govern the universe as to exclude His own special working. Man might work in this way, but it is incredible that God would. His general and His special working are both true as to us, but general and special lose their meaning when applied to Him. That inexorable law which governs the world is never suspended—

'When the loose mountain trembles from on high,
Shall gravitation cease if you go by?
Or some old temple, nodding to its fall,
For Chartres' head reserve the hanging wall?'

Yet the very hairs of our head are all numbered. His hand feeds the ravens when they cry. His Spirit gives breath to every

living thing. Whatsoever is done in the earth He doeth it Himself. If science teaches us of the general law, religion teaches us of the ever-present God; and, however men may dispute about the mode of the Divine government in the world, some abiding by the general, and others acknowledging only the special laws, all truly religious minds practically admit both.

(4.) The same question returns when we enquire into the nature of prayer. If there is no special providence, it seems useless to pray. Shelley said of the 'Spirit of Nature' that, 'unlike the God of human error, it required no prayers nor praises.' If all is inviolably fixed, it is idle to pray. If God has put within our own reach all which He intended that we should have, why ask Him for more? Can our petitions change His order? Will He be moved by our importunity? Reason tells us that He cannot. Yet we pray. Religion teaches men to pray. Those who try to explain it say that it is God's will that we should pray—His will to give us things on condition that we ask them, as a father gives his children gifts, yet requires of his children that they ask them from him. Thus prayer becomes a religious exercise, profitable to ourselves by raising and cherishing in us good dispositions. And so rational men fall back on the worship of God in His impersonality. Prayer becomes lost in praise. Awful feelings of reverence overpower the soul. Prayer becomes a life, a love, a longing, a feeling of the Divine within us. 'The best of all prayers' said Fenelon, 'is to act with a pure intention, and with a continual reference to the will of God. It is not by a miracle, but by a movement of the heart that we are benefitted, by a submissive spirit.' Hence petitions to God are not like petitions to men. We repeat the same words in liturgies. Men repeat them for centuries. They are never old. They never change God. They are not meant to change God, but they produce good dispositions in the sincere worshipper. And thus we sometimes sing our prayers as well as our praises, for rational prayer cannot be other than praise. Is not this the reconciliation of Wordsworth's Pantheism with his High Churchism? The cathedral is not the dwelling place of God, but it helps us to realize the presence of the Ever-Near. The very stones are made to sing psalms to God. We project the Divine within us, and that externally realized, speaks to the Divine in others. Even in our prayers we worship God personal and impersonal.

(5.) The question of general and special laws is nearly the

same as the question of miracles. A miracle supposes a personal Deity. The impossibility of miracles exists only on the supposition of the Divine impersonality. Those to whom Deity appears simply as an individual distinct from themselves, only greater than themselves, have no difficulty in believing miracles. Yea, they expect miracles. As knowledge advances, men become conscious of a universal order, and they see more of God in this order than in its violation. Miracles, then, become doubtful, for why, as Leibnitz said, should the Creator have made His work so imperfect as to require His continual interference. If the Deity is all-powerful and all-wise, why should He violate the laws which were made in infinite wisdom. Through these considerations scientific men conclude the improbability, if not the impossibility of any violation of the order of nature. The idea of miracle as a *violation* of law is generally renounced by enlightened men. This definition, or this view of a miracle, gave to Hume's argument against the miracles of the gospel, the only strength which it had. It is more likely that the testimony concerning miracles is false than that miracles should have occurred. It is more likely that men were deceived as to what they saw, than that God should violate His own order. There can be no changeableness in God. The supposition that He capriciously violates His own laws exists only by our ascribing to Him the limitations of human personality. The moment we have seen that God must transcend such personality all objections to the possibility of miracles cease. We have been confounding our view of the order of nature with that order in itself. We have been interpreting the works of God as if they were human works. In the transcendent impersonality of God the natural and the supernatural become one. Nature exists in Him. What is miraculous to us is no miracle to God, for His being constitutes what we call the order of nature. It is all miraculous, and if He hastened the operation of His laws or did something in our view different from them, it would still be order. 'A miracle' says Bishop Butler, 'is something different from the course of nature as *known*.' It may be in harmony with that course as unknown to us. 'The difference' says Mr. Rogers 'between the natural and the supernatural is relative, not absolute—it is not essential. . . . These miracles, so we on earth must call them, and which we are accustomed to speak of as inroads upon the course of nature, are, if truly considered, so many fragmentary instances of the eternal order of an upper world.' Thomas Carlyle, with a deeper view of the

Divine impersonality than was possessed either by Bishop Butler or Mr. Rogers, teaches the same doctrine concerning miracles. In *Sartor Resartus* the question is asked, 'Is not a miracle simply a violation of the laws of nature?' 'I answer' says Teufelsdröck, 'by this new question, what are the laws of nature? To me, perhaps, the rising of one from the dead were no violation of these laws, but a confirmation, were some far deeper law now first penetrated into, and by spiritual force even as the rest have all been, brought to bear on us with its material force. . . . They (the laws) stand written in our works of science, say you, in the accumulated records of man's experience? Was man with his experience present at the creation, then, to see how it all went on? Have any deepest scientific individuals yet dived down to the foundations of the universe and gauged everything there? Did the Maker take them into His council; that they read His ground-plan of the incomprehensible All, and can say,—This stands marked therein and no more than this?' Alas! not in any wise. These scientific individuals have been nowhere but where we also are, have seen some handbreadths deeper than we see into the Deep that is infinite without bottom and without shore.'

We must predicate human attributes of God, and yet we must again deny that any human attributes can be truly predicated of Him. He has them, and yet He has them not, for the mode of His possessing them transcends our knowledge. God is not a person as we are persons, yet, as Schleiermacher says, 'the pious soul craves a personal God,' and the very conditions on which we know God, carry with them, in some way, His personality. We may deny Him will, and yet He wills. He is not intelligent. He is intelligence itself. He has no designs, the idea of infinite wisdom excludes that of design, and yet to us He is the vast Designer. He is not hoary with time, for eternity is ever young, and yet He is the *Ancient of Days*. He is not our Father, because we are not infinite as He is, nor consubstantial with Him, and yet He is most truly 'Our Father in Heaven.' He is not a king, for that is a human term, and a human office. He sits on no material throne. He holds in His hand no material sceptre, and yet He is King of kings, and Lord of lords. He is incorporeal, 'without body or parts,' and yet He fills heaven and earth. He is 'without passions;' yet He is a jealous God, and angry with the wicked every day. His name is love. He is an immutable will to all good, yet to all workers of unrighteousness, He is, by the necessity of His nature, a consuming fire.

IV. Pantheism is sometimes defined as a doctrine which denies the distinction between good and evil. But this definition is too indefinite to be of any service. Religious philosophy invariably interprets the Mosaic account of the fall of man as a mythical form of a fact of human nature. Evil or sin is generally identified with imperfection. Man comes short of the supreme good, and therefore evil exists, which is only the negation of good. Every explanation of sin which has been made virtually denies that there is anything positive in it. Even the Greek word, which the Apostles use to express it, is said to mean primarily 'failure' or 'short-coming,' omission rather than commission. The theory of Leibnitz, which is adopted by some writers on Natural Theology makes sin nothing more than a metaphysical imperfection. In this, Leibnitz did not differ from Spinoza, nor Spinoza from S. Augustine, though the Abbé Maret boasts that 'Leibnitz and the Catholic theologians' have settled the question of evil long since. They have settled it only by showing that 'whatever is, is right,' and that 'partial evil' is 'universal good.' S. Augustine; had no other argument but this against the Manichean Dualism; and rational theology has, as yet, found no other vindication of 'the ways of God to man' Instead of leading to the Catholic doctrine of original sin, it leads where it led Dr. Pangloss to the denial of sin altogether. Pantheism in this sense is nothing more than the theology of reason—the theology of 'all for the best' as taught by Pope in the *Essay on Man*, by Archbishop King in his sermon on Predestination, by Thomson in his sublime *Hymn on the Seasons*, and by Emerson in one of his 'Pantheistic sermons' where he says 'that the Divine effort is never relaxed; the carrion in the sun will convert itself into grass and flowers; and man, though in brothels or jails, or on gibbets, is on his way to all that is true and good.' *

V. The question of the existence of evil is inseparably connected with the doctrine of predestination which, with the old philosophers, was called 'necessity,' or 'fate.' If evil has not come into the world through the free will of man, it must have come from the will of God, or through necessity. The ancient

* This subject is treated of at large by Dr. Julius Müller in the second book of his treatise on 'the Christian doctrine of sin.' There are some judicious remarks on it in Principal Talloch's 'Burnett Prize Essay.' The author says 'it is clear that this theory (that of Leibnitz) pushed to its fair logical results, only escapes Pantheism by making sin eternal. Man only ceases to be a sinner by becoming God.'

philosophers were strong predestinarians. Predestination entered into their conception of God. It was God's providence considered absolutely. They did not always distinguish between the Divine will and necessity. And yet each is distinctly acknowledged. The union of them, if in any way they can be harmonized, would correspond to the 'free-necessity' of Spinoza. The recognition of a Divine will is the recognition of a personal Deity. Fate is the silent impersonal power through which the purposes and designs of God are accomplished. This Fate is often identified with the being of God, as in Seneca, where he says, 'Will you call Him Fate? You will call Him rightly, for all things depend on Him. He is the cause of causes.' It is sometimes called law. Seneca again says, 'All things go on for ever according to a certain rule, ordained for ever.' To this agree the words of Cicero 'All things come to pass according to the sovereignty of the eternal law;' and those of Pindar, where he calls law 'the ruler of mortals and immortals.' But this fate or law was yet in some way the expression of a mind. 'Nothing is more wonderful in the whole world,' said Manilius, 'than *Reason*, and that all things obey fixed laws.' The reason manifest in the world is so inseparably connected with the laws that the one seems to be always assumed when the other is mentioned. 'I am firmly of opinion' says Sophocles, in the Ajax, 'that all these things, and whatever befalls us, are in consequence of the Divine purpose. Whoso thinks otherwise is at liberty to follow his own judgment, but this will ever be mine.' Chrysippus, the Stoic, defined fate as 'that natural order and constitution of things from everlasting, whereby they naturally followed upon each other in consequence of an immutable and perpetual complication.' The Stoics, more than all the philosophers of antiquity, connected the Divine Being with the universe. He was the active principle in nature or the first nature, corresponding to the 'nature-producing' of Spinoza, while created things were 'nature produced.' Laetius says that they defined fate as 'the Logos whereby the world is governed and directed.' God Himself is subjected to fate, yet He is the maker of that fate to which He is subject. 'The same necessity' says Seneca, 'binds the gods themselves. The Framer and Ruler of all things made the fates indeed, yet He follows. He always obeys. He commanded once.' And Lucan to the same effect.—'He eternally formed the causes whereby He controls all things, subjecting Himself likewise to law.' This interpretation of the fate of the Stoics has the sanction of S.

Augustine, who says 'we acquiesce in their manner of expression, because they carefully ascribe this fixed succession of things, and this mutual concentration of causes and effects to the will of God.' Nothing could be nearer Spinoza's necessity than that of the Stoics. The very words of Seneca enter into his definitions of freedom and necessity. 'A thing is free,' said Spinoza, 'when it exists by the sole necessity of its nature, and is determined to action only by itself.' 'Outward things cannot compel the gods,' said Seneca, 'but their own eternal will is a law to themselves.' 'God acts by a free necessity,' said Spinoza, and Seneca, to the same effect, said 'God is not hereby less free, or less powerful, for He Himself is His own necessity.'

In the doctrine of predestination as received by Christians, the idea of a necessity which binds the Deity is eliminated. God Himself is absolutely free. All things proceed from His will, and are directed by His will in all apparent contingencies. With the old Calvinist divines of the Church of England this was a tangible doctrine of the special providence of God. 'A sparrow,' says Bishop Hopkins, 'whose price is but mean, and whose life, therefore, is but contemptible, and whose flight seems giddy and at random, yet falls not to the ground, neither lights anywhere without your Father. His all-wise providence hath before appointed *what bough it shall pitch on; what grains it shall pick up; where it shall lodge, and where it shall build; on what it shall live and when it shall die.*' All things are predestined—every event and every action in the life of every individual. It is unchangeably determined to whom salvation shall be offered, who shall accept it, and who shall neglect it. But does not this destroy all distinction between good and evil? Does not this take away responsibility from man, and make God the Author of good and evil, salvation and condemnation? Yes, according to our reasoning. And is not this the very objection which was made to Spinoza? And what was Spinoza's answer? Nearly in the words with which Toplady answered Wesley. The wicked must be punished because they are wicked, just as men destroy vipers because they are hurtful, though it is by no choice of theirs, but by their nature, "Zeno, the founder of the Stoics," says Toplady, 'one day thrashed his servant for pilfering. The fellow knowing his master was a fatalist, thought to bring himself off by alleging that he was destined to steal, and therefore ought not to be beat for it. 'You are destined to steal, are you?' answered the philosopher, 'then you are no less destined to be thrashed for it,' and laid

on some hearty blows accordingly. What is objected to the predestination of Spinoza may be equally objected to the predestination of the genuine Calvinist.* Christ, according to Spinoza, was good by necessity, but He did not, therefore, cease to be good. Judas was predestined to betray Jesus, but he was not, therefore, less Judas, or less culpable. This was virtually leaving the question where Bishop Butler left it when he said, 'And, therefore, though it were admitted that this opinion of necessity were speculatively true; yet, with regard to practice, it is as if it were false, so far as our experience reaches; that is to the whole of our present life. For the constitution of the present world, and the condition in which we are placed, is as if we were free.'†

VI. The question of Pantheism involves the question of immortality, not, indeed, as to its reality, but its character. Our first thought of the life everlasting is that of dwelling as conscious individuals in the immediate presence of God. And as we cannot conceive that the sum of our being can be less in the eternal world than in the present, we cling eagerly to the hope of 'the resurrection of the body.' But how can the same body be raised again? We change the materials of the body many times in the course of our lives. Yea, the same materials which constitute our bodies have constituted other bodies, and will constitute yet others, we know not how often. In the resurrection day whose shall the bones be, the particles of which have formed the bones of many individuals? The physical fact destroys belief in the literal resurrection of the body. 'Thou fool,' says S. Paul, 'thou sowest not that body which shall be, but bare grain, but God gives it a body, to every seed its own

* What is here said of predestination refers only to the philosophical part of it—that which relates to necessity. Christians who receive this doctrine, generally receive it because they find it, or think they find it in the Scriptures. Supposing it is there in any absolute sense, either Sublapsarian or Supralapsarian, its reception or rejection becomes then a question of authority or reason. Wesley, in his celebrated sermon on *Free Grace*, says that '*no scripture can prove predestination.*' He means that the doctrine of election—the choosing of some to eternal life, and the preterition or reprobation of others is so opposed to the character of God as the good, the merciful, the just, that no external authority can establish it. So far as we can see, it is not justified by reason. Hence all rational theologians who have been predestinarians, such as Erigena, Spinoza, and Schleiermacher believed in the predestination of *all men* to eternal life. This is the only view that consists with reason.

† 'If,' says Spinoza, 'we look to our nature, we shall understand clearly that in our actions we are free. But if we look to the nature of God, we shall see as clearly and distinctly that all things depend on Him, and that nothing exists but that which God has decreed eternally should exist.'

body.' The stalk of wheat is in reality the wheat seed which was sown. They are to appearance altogether different, but the substance of the seed has passed into the plant, and they are in an important sense the same. Such will be the identity and difference between the present body and the resurrection body. It is sown a natural body. It is raised a *spiritual* body. S. Paul has tried to explain the resurrection, but how rapidly does his reasoning change the whole aspect of our first belief. A *spiritual* body! At once every idea of materialism is removed. The material body is left in the earth as the seed sown is left to die and decay. Like a worn-out garment that has served its time, it is cast away. But there was something in it which could not die. Something which could not be lost. Something that was spiritual, and which grew up a spiritual body. What do we know of the mode of immortality? As little as we know of being; as little as we know of matter or of spirit. Yet we believe in immortality because we believe that God has given us something of true being. Spinoza says we are but modes of God. If in this life we are but modes, what matters it if our present mode of being shall end that we may exist as higher modes? Schleiermacher associated our individual existence with our imperfection and our separation from God; and, therefore, he denied an individual immortality. This, certainly, was to make the idea of immortality less distinct to ordinary minds; but to him, immortality was something greater than ordinary minds conceive it to be. When we cannot follow the philosopher he seems to us to be losing his grasp of the truth, but is he not striving to give emphasis to what S. John felt so deeply when he said, 'Now are we sons of God, but it doth not yet appear what we shall be'? S. Athanasius says that Christ did not lose the proper substance of His divinity when He became man, and so we shall not lose our proper humanity when we become God.

VII. The difference between ordinary Theism and what is called Pantheism, is perhaps most distinctly seen in the question of God's immanency in the universe. Does God abide in His creation, or is He seated on a silent throne in some far distant region beyond the boundary wall of the universe? This question is evidently in close connection with some others, which we have already considered. It is but another form of the Divine personality, or impersonality. We are but repeating the question,—if God has created only once, or if He creates unceasingly. So far as we look upon God as made in the likeness of man, we conceive Him as altogether separate from all created things. He

sees all, and with unerring wisdom He guides all, but He Himself is far distant, dwelling in some special heaven, filled with unspeakable splendor. So feeble are our thoughts that we associate happiness with places as if spiritual beings were influenced by material phenomena. When we have seen that God must transcend human personality, we see, also, that He needs no throne and no heaven, for 'the heaven of heavens cannot contain Him.' He must be *in* His universe as well as out of it—'immanent in the world, yet transcending the world.'

The belief in the Divine immanency is another of the doctrines which are implied, if not expressed, in all theology and all men's thoughts of God. This is obviously the *Pantheism* of the poets, as expressed for instance in Cowper's lines already quoted:—

'There lives and works

A soul in all things, and that soul is God.'

There is a soul in nature—a soul which in some way is God Himself. A dim conception of this was the foundation of the ancient mythologies, which peopled all nature with living spirits, connected a deity with every field and forest, every road and river. This conception placed Jupiter on Olympus, Apollo in the sun, Neptune in the sea, Bacchus in the vintage, and Ceres among the yellow corn. It filled the fountains with Naiades, the woods with Dryades, and made the sea to teem with the children of Nereus. At last, advancing reason became dissatisfied with the multitude of divinities, and poets and philosophers treated them as the creations of fancy, yet as embodying the higher truth, that 'all things are full of God.'

That the soul which lives and works in nature is God, is the partial truth of all the theories of progressive development which have prevailed in the world. These theories were the inevitable result of the study of nature. There, all is progress. Every thing unfolds. The highest organism has its beginning in the smallest form of life. The visible starts from the invisible. The things which are seen are made from things which are not seen.

The oldest cosmogonies recognized the law of progress in nature. The ancient Brahman looked upon creation as the outbeaming of the Deity—the going forth of Brahm. It was not a work, but an unfolding; a manifestation of mind in matter; a development of the One into the many. The spiritual shone out in the material. The real was visible in the phenomenal. It was a strange dream, but it has been the dream of poetry, and

the romance of science. The Egyptian did not materially differ from the Brahman. Nature was the emanation of Osiris and Isis; the gushing forth of Nilus; the one Deity, whatever was His name, for He was called by all names, passing into the manifold. The Greeks who may have got their knowledge from Egypt's priests, had the same thoughts of nature. The old Ionics were on this track when they sought for the first element out of which the *all* was formed. The Atomic philosophers, whom Plato describes as 'sick of the Atheistic disease'—Democritus and Epicurus, and in later times Lucretius, were all, after a fashion, enquirers concerning the progress of nature. Atoms wandering in the vacuum of infinite space, like motes dancing in a sunbeam they supposed to be the first matter. These atoms, in the lapse of ages, gathered into a solid mass, and became suns and moons, stars and worlds. Through the blending of all things with all things, the waters brought forth vegetables, and animals. These took their form and character from the climate in which they lived, and the conditions on which life was permitted them. Special organs, and particular members of the body took their origin from the same conditions. By long practice they learned to fulfil their offices with a measure of perfection. Birds learned to fly, and fishes to swim. Eyes became skilful in seeing, tongues in talking, ears quick to hear, and noses to smell. Plato, indeed, in the *Timæus* confounds this development with creation. After describing how Oceanus and Tethys sprang from Heaven and Earth, and from them Phorcys, Kronos, and Rhea, from whom sprang Zeus and Hera, he says, 'the Artificer of the universe commanded them to create mortal natures as He had created them.' Ovid, too, gives an account of creation which resembles that of Moses, but Horace represents the general belief of antiquity, where he thus describes the origin of men. 'When animals first crept forth from the newly-formed earth, a dumb and filthy herd, they fought for acorns and lurking places with their nails and fists, then with clubs, and at last with arms, which, taught by experience, they had forged. Then they invented names for things, and words to express their thoughts, after which they began to desist from war, to fortify cities, and to enact laws.' All the old philosophers were agreed that the working of nature was a process of advancing development, but Democritus and his disciples left the evolution to chance, while the wiser philosophers regarded it as the working of God, or of God as the soul of nature.

The development doctrine was revived in the beginning of the

last century by De Maillet, an eccentric Frenchman.* It is scarcely evident that De Maillet believed all he said, for what he calls his facts are, some of them, fictions wild enough; and his analogies and correspondences in nature are often not only fanciful but merely verbal. With Homer, Thales the Milesian, and the Nile worshippers of Egypt, he traced the origin of all things to the element of water. He quotes Moses as teaching the same thing, where he speaks of the Spirit brooding over the face of the deep. He argues from geology that the ocean must once have swept over the entire globe, and nourished nature in its cool embrace. It treasured up the seeds of plants and flowers. It watered the undeveloped monads of fishes and foxes, mammoths, and men. All things rejoiced in the rolling wave and 'the busy tribes of flesh and blood' slept as softly on beds of seaweed as dolphins and mermaids on the bosom of Galatea. The ocean, said De Maillet, still witnesses to its universal fatherhood. Its kingdoms, animal and vegetable, are closely analo-

* De Maillet puts his discourse into the mouth of an Indian philosopher, Telliamed (his own name backwards). The first dawns of geology were rising on the world, and threatening to overthrow the established beliefs and unbeliefs. Petrified shells were found on the top of Mount Cenis, from which De Maillet argued that the mountains must once have been submerged. Voltaire, afraid that this might establish the fact of Noah's flood, thought the pilgrims to Rome who crossed Mount Cenis might have carried *oyster shells in their bonnets*. De Maillet, certainly with more science than Voltaire, said that all these petrified shells, plants, bones, reptiles, fishes, &c., which were found in the hard rocks must have been placed there when the mountains were soft liquid. The ocean must for long ages have covered the face of the earth. The vision of Pythagoras was true, as Ovid has it—

'Where once was solid land, seas have I seen,
And solid land, where once deep seas have been.
Shells far from seas, like quarries on the ground;
And anchors have on mountain tops been found.

Ship keels, anchors, and even entire ships in a state of petrification had recently been dug up in the Alps and the Appenines, and in the deserts of Lybia and Africa. On a Swiss mountain had been discovered the petrified bodies of sixty mariners who had suffered shipwreck in a tempest that drifted the wild surges over the highest peaks of the Ural and the Caucasus somewhere about the year two million before Adam and Eve were in Paradise. De Maillet had some other wonderful stories to tell about *Mer-men* and *Mer-maids* that had been caught in the sea. The most wonderful of these was an extraordinary manifestation of our *sea-faring* brethren at Greenland. The crew of an English whaler saw about sixty *sea-men* rowing to the ship in boats. But when the *sea-men* discovered that there were *land-men* in the ship, they all plunged under the water, boats and all, except one poor fellow who broke his oar and could not get under. He was taken on board, and was found to be covered all over with scales. He could not speak a word of English, nor would he eat sea-biscuit nor anything on board, and so he died. His boat and fishing tackle were curiously made of fish bones. They were all brought to England, and may yet be seen in the Town Hall of Hull!

gous to those on dry land. We have the same unity of type, and in many cases the species correspond. The sea has flower beds as rich and varied as those on land and corresponding to them, as the very names show. We have sea-roses, sea-lilies, sea-violets, and sea-vines. When the water receded from the land the plants and flowers remained. What changes they have since undergone are due to the influences of the sun and fresh water, being nourished by the rain and the rivulets that water the earth. Similar conformations are visible in animals. Varieties of plumage and form in birds have their analogies in the shape, color, and disposition of the scales of fishes. The fins of a fish are arranged like the feathers in its analogous bird. If we attend to the flight of birds we shall discover a likeness to the mode in which the corresponding fishes swim in the water. The same analogies De Maillet finds between land animals and sea animals. When the waters left the land the marine animals had no alternative but to become land animals, and should the ocean again overflow the world, what could they do but again betake themselves to the sea? In the struggle for life many would doubtless perish, but some would eat the herb of Glaucus, and when used to the new element would find a congenial home with their ancient marine relatives, the children of Nereus and Doris.

De Maillet's doctrine was never regarded in any other light but that of a wild theory, of which the object was amusement rather than serious enquiry. But the development doctrine was soon after taken up by a Frenchman of a very different character. This was J. B. Robinet, the eminent and able author of '*De la Nature*'—a work which Lord Brougham pronounces to have greater merit than the famous '*System of Nature*,' which bears the name of Mirabaud. Brougham says that both these works have the same tendency, but this is entirely a mistake. Mirabaud's, or rather D'Holbach's '*System of Nature*' was avowedly Atheistic, Robinet's was avowedly Theistic. D'Holbach was the leader of the French Atheists; Robinet claimed to be a religious philosopher all his life, in his latter years he became a Catholic, and died in the faith of the Catholic Church.

Nature, Robinet said, is not God, nor any part of God, yet it results, necessarily, from His Divine Essence. It never had a moment which was not preceded by another, and it never will have a moment to which another will not equally succeed. In other words, it never had a beginning, and it will never have an end. Moses says that creation took place in the beginning,

that is, out of time, in that abyssal eternity, which is not constituted by duration. It will never have an end. *New heavens and new earths* mean only that the heavens and the earth will be changed. The matter is the same, they are new as contrasted with previous forms.

Nature thus co-existing, necessarily and eternally, with the Divine Essence develops unceasingly its types and forms, according to its own eternal laws. This development is progressive. The first axiom in natural philosophy is this—'nature makes no leaps.' Everything begins to exist under a very little form—the smallest possible. It passes, necessarily, from the state of seed to that of species. The more complete the organization, the longer the time required for development. An insect reaches its perfection in a day. A man requires many years; an oak, centuries. The difference between the acorn and the oak, the germ cell and the full-grown man is vast, but vaster still between the seed of the world and 'the world formed.' How immense, then, the length of time required by the law of development to bring the universe to the point of increase which it had reached, when our earth was formed.

Robinet could see in nature no mode of operation, but this of progressive development. He could find no trace in the past, of a working different from what he saw going on in the world now. This unceasing law forms the universal *all*. This all is infinitely graduated. It is without bounds, and its divisions are only apparent. Nature has individuals, but no kingdoms, no classes, kinds, or species. These are artificial—the work of man; but having no existence in nature. Originally there is but one being—the prototype of all beings, and of this one all are variations, multiplied and diversified in all possible ways. This seemed to Robinet so obviously true that he wondered any naturalist should dispute it. But he complained chiefly of those who did not acknowledge any absolute difference between animals and vegetables, and who yet made a bridgeless chasm between the lower animals and man. Why, he asked, this great stride? Why should the law suffer an exception; why be deranged here? Have we not the links of the chain to complete the continuity of the gradation of being? Robinet, indeed, was not convinced of the consanguinity of apes and men, but there were the *seamen* of whom De Maillet had spoken. There was, moreover, the *ourang*, which Robinet supposed to be more nearly allied to men than to apes, but its existence had not yet been satisfactorily proved to the naturalists of France. The links of the complete

chain, he thought, could not be far off; if not actually discovered science must soon discover them.

Nature has had her eye upon man from her first essays at creation. We see all beings conceived and formed after a single pattern. They are the never-ending graduated variations of the prototype—each one exhibiting so much progress towards the most excellent form of being, that is, the human form. Man is the result of all the combinations which the prototype has undergone in its progress through all the stages of progression. All were types of man to come. As a cave, a grotto, a wigwam, a shepherd's cabin, a house, a palace, may all be regarded as variations of the same plan of architecture, which was executed first on a simple and then on a grander scale, so in nature. The cave, the grotto, the wigwam, the cabin, and the house are not the *Escorial* nor the *Louvre*, yet we may look upon them as types; so a stone, a vegetable, a fish, a dog, a monkey, may be regarded as variations of the prototype, or ideal man.

Robinet's theory was vastly comprehensive, uniting all kingdoms, classes and species. He believed that he had found the key of the universe, and that he had laid the foundation of all true science, in being able to say, 'Nature is one.' He had fewer fictions than De Maillet, but his analogies were not altogether free from fancy. Beginning with minerals, he found stones that in shape resembled members of the human body—the head, the heart, the eye, the ear, the feet. Among vegetables, he found plants resembling men and women; these, however, were not, he admitted, normal growths. Among zoophytes, he found many points of resemblance to the human form, as the names indicated; such are the sea-hand, sea-chest, and the sea-kidney. Among fishes, he found some of human shape; but these were in distant seas. The fish of S. Pierre, which is caught on the coasts of America, engenders in its body a stone which has the shape of a man. The *Pece Muger*, as the Spaniards call it, has a woman's face. Some sea monsters are two-handed, as the whale, the sea-fox, and the sea-lion. Coming to land animals, Robinet traced the same gradation from the lowest form of life to the highest, to the topstone of nature's efforts—the being nobler than all others, with an erect look and a lofty countenance, the lord of creation—Man.

Robinet's principles were taken up and illustrated by another Frenchman—the famous naturalist, Lamarck. He was more scientific than Robinet, and mingled with his enquiries less theology and metaphysics—less of Plato and interpretations of

Moses, yet he recognized the same relation between nature and the Divine Essence that had been set forth by Robinet. Nature he said, is a work, and its great Author is the ever-present Worker. It can do nothing of itself; it is limited and blind. But, though nature is a work, it is yet in a sense a laboratory. In this laboratory the Author of nature works incessantly. He never leaves His creation. We say that He gave it laws; but He is Himself ever-present, the immediate Executor of all law, the Doer of all nature's works.

Lamarck discarded all the divisions and subdivisions of plants and animals, which other naturalists had made. Like Robinet, he regarded them as having no real existence in nature, being only the arbitrary arrangements of man. Nature is one and undivided. It knows of no orders but the order of progression. Nature makes nothing great at once. Unnumbered ages are required to bring to perfection the workmanship of her laboratory. Lamarck takes the fluid which impregnates an egg, and gives vitality to the embryo of a chick, as the principle analogous to that by which life presses into the world. A seminal fluid pervades all nature, and impregnates matter when placed in circumstances favourable to life. Nature begins with the humblest forms. It produces 'rough draughts,'—infusoria, polypi, and other similarly simple forms. When life is once produced, it tends to increase the body that clothes it, and to extend the dimensions of every part. Variations are the result of circumstances. A plain proof of this is seen in the production of new species. Dogs, fowls, ducks, pigeons, and other domesticated animals have superinduced qualities which did not belong to them in their wild state. These have arisen entirely from the circumstances and conditions of their existence as domesticated animals. The same law prevails in the vegetable kingdom. The wheat from which we make bread is originally a wild grass. It is due to cultivation that it has become wheat.

The characteristic part of Lamarck's doctrine is the way in which he endeavours to account for the possession of senses and special bodily organs. They were acquired by what he calls 'an internal sentiment.' By this 'sentiment,' animals have desires; and, by frequent endeavours to gratify these desires, the organ or sense necessary for their gratification was produced. The duck and the beaver, for instance, had an 'internal sentiment' to swim; and, after long and persevering efforts, webs grew on their feet, and ducks and beavers learned to swim. The antelope and the gazelle were naturally timid, and, being often

pursued by beasts of prey, they had an 'internal sentiment' to run fast, and much practice in running, the result of which was that suppleness of limb which is their only resource in times of danger. The neck of the camel-leopard became elongated through stretching its head to the high branches of the trees on which its food is found. The dumb race of men had an 'internal sentiment' to speak. They exercised their tongues till they could articulate sounds; these sounds became signs of thoughts, and thus arose the race of articulate speaking men. The senses, capacities, and organs thus acquired by the efforts of many successive generations were transmitted to their offspring, and, in this way arose those differences and resemblances on which naturalists ground the idea of species.

The doctrine of development, even with Lamarck, is still in the region of romance. His illustrious contemporary and fellow-laborer, Geoffroy S. Hilaire first gave it a really scientific form. Lamarck's studies were chiefly in botany. S. Hilaire applied himself to zoology. In this he was joined by Cuvier. Hitherto there had been no serious effort at a scientific classification of the animal kingdom. The old writers on natural history were content with a general division of animals into wild and tame, or animals living on land and animals living in water. Until Linnæus, no naturalist had got beyond the divisions of beasts, birds, fishes, and reptiles. And Linnæus himself could find no better principle for the classification of mammals than a purely artificial arrangement, grounded on the number and shape of the teeth. Cuvier and S. Hilaire endeavoured to discover the natural classification that they might classify the animal kingdom as they found it in nature. They co-operated harmoniously for many years, scarcely conscious that they were each pursuing widely different principles, and when they did find out how and where they differed, neither of them seemed conscious of the magnitude or importance of the difference. They were seeking the natural classification, but that classification eluded their search. S. Hilaire doubted its existence. Cuvier confesses that he could not find it, but he believed it was to be found. S. Hilaire was at last convinced that the search for it was as vain as the search for the philosophers' stone—that the lines supposed to separate between genera and species are as imaginary as the lines of latitude and longitude which divide the globe. This was the first manifestation of difference between Cuvier and S. Hilaire, but the difference had roots as yet unseen, and branches undeveloped. Cuvier said that the

business of a naturalist was simply to observe nature and try to discover nature's classification. S. Hilaire said it was more than this. The naturalist must also reason from his facts. He must draw inferences from his observations. There must be room for the noble faculty of judgment. When the facts are established, scientific results follow, as stones that have been quarried and dressed are carried to their places in the building.

S. Hilaire was well-known as a naturalist before his doctrines were formally announced to the world, but the careful reader of his early essays may find it there without any formal declaration of its presence. S. Hilaire waited, it is said, for the publication of Cuvier's 'Animal Kingdom' that the world might be in possession of the facts necessary to secure for his doctrine an impartial hearing. This may be true, but in one of his earliest compositions, that 'On the frontal prolongation of Ruminants' he compares the neck of the giraffe with that of the stag, explaining the difference by the inequalities of development—a prophetic intimation of what was afterwards known as 'The theory of Arrests.' In another piece of the same date he clearly evinces his belief in the essential unity of organic composition. Nature, he says, has formed all living beings on a unique plan, essentially the same in principle but varied after a thousand ways in all its necessary parts. In the same class of animals, the different forms under which nature is pleased to give existence to each species, are all derived from each other. When she wishes to give new functions, she requires to make no other change but that of the proportion of the organs—to extend or restrain the use of these, suffices for her object. The *osseous pouch* of the *Allouat*, the organ by means of which it makes its strange howl, is but an enlargement of the hyoid bone—the purse of the female opossum is but a deep fold of the skin; the trunk of the elephant, an excessive prolongation of the nostrils; and the horn of the rhinoceros, a mass of adherent hairs. In this way, in every class of animals, the forms, however varied, result from a common organism. Nature refuses to make use of novelties. The most essential differences which affect any one family come solely from another arrangement, complication, or modification of the same organs. The doctrine thus early announced is distinctly avowed in S. Hilaire's later compositions. By it he accounted for the existence of vestiges and rudiments of organs. The ostrich, for instance, though it does not fly, has rudimentary wings, because this organ played an important part in other species of the same family. Similar rudiments, unseen by ordinary observers, are

yet seen by all careful anatomists. In some quadrupeds, and in most birds, there is a membrane which covers the eye in sleep. Anatomists find a rudiment of this membrane at the internal angle of the human eye. 'So numerous' said S. Hilaire, 'are the examples of this kind disclosed by comparative anatomy, that I am convinced the germs of all organs which we see, exist at once in all species, and that the existence of so many organs half-effaced or totally obliterated is due to the greater development of others—a development always made at the expense of the neighbouring organs.'

In 1830, Cuvier and S. Hilaire had their famous discussion before the French Academy. The chief subject was the mutability of species,—Cuvier maintaining that the same forms had been perpetuated since the origin of things; and S. Hilaire, that all species are the result of development. Never were disputants more equally matched. Never was evidence more equally balanced. Never had disputants a wiser Palæmon. 'I do not judge;' said Goethe, 'I only record.' So great was the interest in this discussion that it pre-occupied the public mind, though France was on the very eve of a great political revolution. 'The same year—almost the same month' says Isidore S. Hilaire, in the biography of his father, 'took away Goethe and Cuvier. Unity of organic composition—admitted by the one, denied by the other, had the last thoughts of both. The last words of Cuvier answer to the last pages of Goethe.'

Forty years before the discussion between Cuvier and S. Hilaire, Goethe had announced the doctrine of development as the law of the vegetable kingdom. In his 'Metamorphoses of Plants,' he supposes nature to have ever had before her an ideal plant—an idea corresponding to Robinet's more general conception of an ideal man. To realize the ideal plant was the great object of nature. Every individual plant is a partial fulfilment of the ideal—every stage of progress an advancement of the concrete to the abstract. Not only are all plants formed after one type, but the appendages of every individual plant are repetitions of each other. The flowers are metamorphosed leaves. Goethe's doctrine was afterwards taken up by Schleiden, but in a modified form. He supposed every plant to have two representative organs, the stem as well as the leaf. The leaf is attached to the ascending stem, and, besides its common form, it takes other forms, as scales, bracts, sepals, petals, stamens, and pistils. What seemed at first but the fancy of a poet is now the scientific doctrine of vegetable morphology.

The French naturalists reached the doctrine of development through the study of external nature. But, with the Germans, it followed upon their transcendental philosophy. Spinoza's theology recognized a bond between God and nature, unknown both to the theologians and the naturalists of that day. In his theology, creation was the emanation of the Deity as well as His work. This had been the dream of the Brahman; and, though the dream might not be true, the Transcendentalists thought that there was truth in the dream. 'Nature produced' was the mirror of 'Nature producing.' The *One* who was working in nature, produced in nature the image of Himself. In Schelling's philosophy, nature was the counterpart or the correspondent of mind. 'The final cause' said Schelling, 'of all our contemplation of nature is to know that absolute unity which comprehends the whole, and which suffers only one side of itself to be known in nature. Nature is, as it were, the instrument of the absolute Unity, through which it eternally executes and actualizes that which is prefigured in the Absolute understanding. The whole Absolute is therefore cognizable in nature, though phenomenal nature only exhibits it in succession, and produces in an endless development that which the true and real eternally possesses.' Lorenz Oken, a disciple of Schelling's, found in actual nature what his master found in ideal. Nature was a divine incarnation—the progress of Deity in 'His other being'—from imperfection to perfection. Deity reaches its full manifestation in man, who is the sum total of all animals, and consequently the highest incarnation of the Divine.*

The doctrine of development was first made popular in England by the 'Vestiges of a Natural History of Creation.' The author of the 'Vestiges' rejected, as vicious, Lamarck's notion of an 'internal sentiment.' But even S. Hilaire had seen that the function followed the organ, and not the organ the function. He adopted Robinet's principle, that the phenomenon of reproduction was the key to the genera of species. This, to some extent, had been accepted by Lamarck, but more fully by Robinet, who, like the author of the 'Vestiges' in showing the progress of the development of men from animalcules, illustrated it by the changes which the tadpole undergoes in its progress towards being a perfect and complete member of the Batrachian

* Lorenz Oken saw the bleached skull of a deer in the Hartz forest, and he exclaimed 'it is a vertebral column.' Anatomists are now agreed that Oken was right—the same plan that served for the back bone served also for the skull.

order. Oken, too, had adopted the same principle, illustrating the stages of development from vesicles to men by corresponding stages in inter-uterine life.

To make earth, according to this analogy, the mother of the human race, it was necessary to suppose that the earth had existed long before man appeared. That such had been the case was now evident from geology. The earth had travailed in birth, from the earliest of the geologic ages till the close of the Tertiary, when divine man, her noblest child, was born. La Place had shown in his nebular theory, how the earth and other planets were first formed by the separating and condensing of nebular matter. Supposing his theory to be true, it was only necessary to show the continuation of the same progressive movement, and the same working of natural laws. La Place may have thought it unnecessary to suppose that the Divine mind was directing this natural law in its operations. But the author of the 'Vestiges' saw in this progressive working the mode of operation most becoming the Divine Being, and most analogous to all that we know of His ordinary working. In nature, there are no traces of 'Divine fiats,' nor of 'direct interferences.' All beginnings are simple, and through these simples nature advances to the more complex. The same agencies of nature which we now see at work are sufficient to account for the whole series of operations displayed in organic geology. We still see the volcano upheaving mountains, and new beds of detritus forming rocks at the bottom of the sea. 'A common furnace exemplifies the operation of the forces concerned in the Giant's Causeway, and the sloping ploughed field after rain showing at the end of the furrows, a handful of washed and neatly composed mud and sand, illustrates how nature made the Deltas of the Ganges and the Nile. On the ripple bank or sandy beaches of the present day we see nature's exact repetition of the operation by which she impressed similar features on the sandstones of the carboniferous era. Even such marks as wind slanted rain would in our day produce on tide deserted sands have been read on the tablets of the ancient strata. It is the same nature—that is to say, God, through or in the manner of nature, working everywhere and in all time, causing the wind to blow, and the rain to fall, and the tide to ebb and flow, immutable ages before the birth of our race, the same as now.'

The author appeals to the astronomical discoveries of Newton and La Place; and to the facts in geology attested by Murchison and Lyell, as affording ample ground for the conclusion that

the Creator formed the earth by a complicated series of changes similar to those which we see going on in the present day. As He works now, so has He wrought in the ages that are past. The organic, indeed, is mixed up with the physical, but it is not, therefore, necessary to suppose that because there are two classes of phenomena, there must be two distinct modes of the exercise of Divine Power. Life pressed in as soon as there were suitable conditions. Organic beings did not come at once on the earth by some special act of the Deity. The order was progressive. There was an evolution of being, corresponding to what we now see in the production of an individual. That life has its origin from inorganic bodies is shown by the very constitution of organic bodies, these being simply a selection of the elementary substances which form the inorganic or non-vitalized.

The development doctrine has found a rigidly scientific advocate in Mr. Charles Darwin. He has not been content with general principles and theories, but has collected a multitude of observations or facts which tend to show not only that all complex organisms have undergone changes, but *how* the changes were effected. Any naturalist, he says, reflecting on the natural affinities of organic beings, their embryological relations, geographical distribution, and geological succession might reasonably come to the conclusion that each species had not been independently created but, had descended, like varieties from other species. But the conclusion would not be satisfactory till it could be shown how the different species were modified so as to acquire that perfection of structure and co-adaptation which excite our admiration. Mr. Darwin admits that external conditions, such as climate and food, may have had some influence, but he thinks them insufficient to account for all the changes, and so he adds what he calls the principle of 'natural selection.' Among the multitude of beings that come into existence, the strong live and the weak fail in the struggle for life. As the struggle is continually recurring, every individual of a species which has a variation, in the way of a quality superior to the others, has the better chance of surviving the others. And as individuals transmit, to their descendants, their acquired variations, they give rise to favored races, which are nature's 'selections.' The neck of the giraffe has not been elongated by having made efforts to reach the branches of the lofty trees, but in a time of scarcity a longer-necked variety being able to obtain food where others could not obtain it survived the other varieties and thus become a species.

Mr. Darwin's doctrine of natural selection was suggested by the varieties produced in domesticated animals through man's selections. But the deeper principle is the great tendency to variation, which is found in all plants and animals. Variations determine the selection. The early progenitor of the ostrich, for example, may have had habits like the bustard, and as natural selection increased in successive generations the size and weight of the body, its legs were used more, and its wings less, until they became incapable of flight. In Madeira there are two species of one kind of insect. The one has short wings, and feeds on the ground, the other has long wings, and finds its food on trees and bushes. The wings of each have been determined by the conditions on which they could live in the island. Those which were able to battle with the winds continued to fly, and their wings grew larger, those that were unable to battle with the winds found their food on the ground, and rarely or ever attempted to fly. Animal life will adapt itself to any climate, and become adapted to any conditions of existence provided the changes are not effected suddenly. The elephant and the rhinoceros, though now tropical or subtropical in their habits, were once capable of enduring a colder region; species have been found in glacial climates. This capacity for variation is not denied by any naturalists. Some suppose it to have limits beyond which nature never passes, but these limits cannot be defined. Mr. Darwin can see no trace of them, and for the facts which he has noticed he can find no explanation but in the doctrine he advocates, that nature forms varieties, and these in time, through natural selection, become new species.

The development doctrine has received but little additional illustration since Mr. Darwin's work. From a more extensive study of the mode of nature's working connected with researches in geology, Sir Charles Lyell has been led to adopt Mr. Darwin's doctrine of the mutability of species; and Professor Huxley has endeavoured to find the missing and most missed link in the development chain—that which connects man with the brute creation. This intermediary was the great want of De Maillet and Robinet. The sea-man was legendary, and the orang was little known, and M. De Chaillu had not yet invaded the territory of the gorilla. Professor Huxley finds most *humanity* in the chimpanzee. He has, perhaps, demonstrated that monkeys as well as men have the 'posterior lobe' of the brain, and the 'hippo-campus minor'—that they are no longer to be classed as 'four-handed' animals, but as having two feet and two hands;

the feet consisting, like a human foot, of an *os calcis*, an astragalus, and a scaphoid bone, with the usual tarsals and metatarsals.

The doctrine of development may be denied, but the facts which have led to a belief in it remain the same, and require to be explained. These facts are an obvious unity in the plan of nature's works, which is now acknowledged by all scientific men. Professor Owen says that he withstood it long, but he was finally compelled to yield. The remarkable conformity to type in the bones of the head of the vertebrate animals led him to a re-consideration of the conclusions to which he, as a disciple of Cuvier, had previously come. On reviewing the researches of anatomists into the special homologies of the cranial bones, he was surprised to find that they all agreed as to the existence of the determinable bones in the skull of every animal down to the lowest osseous fish. That these bones had, in every case, similar functions to perform, was a supposition beset with too many difficulties to be entertained for a moment. There are marked sutures in all skulls, but these sutures cannot serve the same end in marsupials, crocodiles, and young birds, which they are supposed to serve in the head of a child. According to Professor Owen, more than ninety per cent of the bones in the human skeleton have their homologies recognized by common consent in the skeletons of all vertebrata. The same uniformity as recognized in the animal structure, is acknowledged by botanists to prevail in the vegetable world. Even the duality of Schleiden has been rejected, and scientific botanists have adopted the unity of Goethe. 'Every flower' says Professor Lindley, with its peduncle and bracteolæ, being the development of a flower bud, and flower buds being altogether analogous to leaf buds, it follows as a corollary that every flower, with its peduncle and bracteolæ is a metamorphosed branch. And, further, the flowers being abortive branches, whatever the laws are of the arrangement of branches with respect to each other, the same will be the laws of the flowers with respect to each other. In consequence of a flower and its peduncle being a branch in a particular state, the rudimentary or metamorphosed leaves which constitute bracteolæ, floral envelopes, and sexes, are subject to exactly the same laws of arrangement as regularly shaped leaves.' The recognition of typology and morphology would not have been so tardy but for the belief that it came in collision with the obvious fact that nature is working for an end. The disciples of Cuvier have been compelled to acknowledge the principle of archetypal order, so precious in the eyes of S.

Hilaire, a principle originally connected with the mental philosophy of Plato, and the mystical dreams of the later Platonists, but now established by observations on external nature. And the lesson which Cuvier's disciples have learned is, not that the doctrine of special ends or 'final causes' is lost or obscured; but that it receives new illustrations and a new form. They have learned that, though the works of God resemble the works of man, there is a point where the resemblance ceases, and the working of the Divine is no longer analogous to that of the human worker.

The unity of nature does not cease with that of animal or vegetable structures. Matter, as a substantial existence independent of the forms and qualities it assumes, has been banished from the world by all genuine metaphysicians since the days of Plato. It has a supposed existence in the laboratory of the chemist, but it ever eludes his grasp, like the sunbeam through the window or the phantasmagorian images on the canvas. It is the *supposed* something which is beyond all analysis. A mind at work is the most obvious fact in nature alike to the metaphysician, and the natural philosopher. 'The attentive study,' says Robert Hunt, 'of the fine abstractions of science lifts the mind from the grossness of matter, step by step to the refinements of immateriality, and there appear shadowed out, beyond the physical forces which man can test and try, other powers still ascending until they reach the source of every good and every perfect gift.'

Even the forces of nature lose themselves in each other, and are reduced to one force; its nature and essence escaping observation. Heat, light, electricity, magnetism, chemical affinity, motion are all correlative or have some reciprocal dependence. No one of them by itself can be the essential cause of the other, and yet it may produce, or be convertible into, any of the other. Heat may produce electricity, electricity may produce heat. Chemical affinity may produce, motion, and motion chemical affinity. Each force as it produces, merging itself as the other is developed. 'Neither matter nor force,' says Dr. Grove, 'can be created or annihilated—an essential cause is unattainable—causation is the will, creation the act of God.' Life itself is supposed to be but a higher degree of the same power which constitutes what we call inanimate objects — 'an exalted condition of the power which occasions the accretion of particles in the crystalline mass,' the quickening force of nature through every form of existence being the same. When we say life is

present or absent we only mean the presence or absence of a particular *manifestation* of life. The all-life of the universe is the Deity energizing in nature—this is the theology of science. The conception of the universe is incomplete if it is not conceived as a constant and continuous work of the eternally-creating Spirit. 'External nature,' says Mr. Ruskin, 'has a body and soul like man, but the soul is the Deity.' Though nature be not God, the thoughts of nature are God's thoughts. Religion, poetry, and science all demand that however much God may transcend His creation, He must in some way be immanent therein.*

VIII. Lastly, Pantheism involves the question of the capacity of the human mind to know God. It is a question of the validity of reason in theology. Can we without any external revelation through a church, a book, or otherwise, know that there is a God? and can we know anything whatever of what He is? Have we any capacity in any way competent for such knowledge? Some will answer that we can know there is a God, because we see His works, and from His works we infer His existence, but we do not know what He is. We may know that there is a Creator—an Author of nature, but we cannot know Him as the Infinite and the Absolute. Some jealous defenders of the authority of external revelation have impugned all arguments addressed to reason

* The scientific feeling of the Divine Immanency has been made popular by Robert Hunt in his *Panthea, or Spirit of Nature*. The name, as well as the idea, is taken from Shelley. Julian Lord Altmont, the hero, comes under the powerful influence of Leon and his daughter Aeltgiva, worshippers of the Spirit of Nature. Altmont is initiated. "Aeltgiva exclaimed, in a tone of command, 'Julian Altmont; let the eyes of the mind look through the other senses and see the spirit of the law.' She continued in a calmer tone:—'Those curving waters, line with line commingling to form that flowing sheet on either side of the translucent mass, which shines more brightly than any artificial mirror, glide adown the sun-woven tresses of the mighty Panthea, by which they are restrained. Can you not trace their myriads of silver threads weaving through all, and binding that mass of waters? But gaze on,—Aeltgiva was suddenly silent. She clasped her hands upon her bosom, still pressing the water lily. She bowed herself reverently, and sank one knee slowly to the ground. 'Kneel, Julian,' she continued, 'kneel,' the revelation of those heaven-illuminated eyes, dimming the moon with their lustre, is to be received with humility, and met with human adoration. Mighty Spirit, kindly looking from thy throne of waters, permit me to hope that by this manifestation of Thine eternal presence to the earth-born, Thou art pleased to receive the votary we bring Thee! Panthea speaks through me, and bids me say, — 'To know nature thou must be true to nature. To be true to nature thou must live looking for ever with purest love unto the Mighty Spirit who presides. The love of the sensual must rise into the love of the spiritual. On the earth thou must cease to be of the earth. In the body the purified soul must become bodiless; and then the rapture of that holy life shall be given thee, and, mounting the car of mind, thou shalt know the mystery.'"

to prove the existence of God ; but these are few, and not deserving of any notice. The question is between those who say we can know God as the Infinite, and those who deny that we are capable of such knowledge. By knowing God is not meant comprehending His Essence. This, perhaps, we shall never know. We do not know any essences. All our knowledge is relative. The question is, Do we know God as we know other beings ? Have we a knowledge of the Infinite as well as of the finite ? On the assumption that we have this knowledge, all rational theology is founded. Sir William Hamilton, and after him Mr. Mansel, with a clear perception of the inevitable result of the admission that the human mind has a cognition of the Infinite, denied the possibility of our knowing God. This was laying the axe to the root of Pantheism, and had it cut down nothing more than the theologies of the Pantheists, Sir W. Hamilton's doctrine, as applied by Mr. Mansel, might have been accepted in all its simplicity. But it did not stop there. It deprived theology of all foundation in reason. We speak only of Mr. Mansel's doctrine if legitimately carried out. He admits, we imagine, that no man ought to receive a religion unless there was something rational in it, and if it contained a doctrine which made God cruel or unjust he would surely say as Wesley did of predestination ; ' No Scripture *can* prove this.' But Mr. Mansel's mode of refuting Pantheism is to expel reason to make way for revelation. The Abbé Maret did the same thing to make way for the infallible church, and then he returned to reason, not only to show the reasonableness of believing in the Church, but to show that natural religion was really a kind of revelation. Before Mr. Mansel's argument can have any weight the question which Mr. Maurice asked must be fully settled. What is *Revelation* ? The external evidences of the infallible Church we, as Protestants, at once reject not only because of their own weakness, but because the Church of Rome teaches doctrines too monstrous to be believed. The external evidences of the Scriptures—what are they when deprived of the moral or internal evidence ? Had the character of Jesus been the contrary of what it is could any miracles have established His divine mission, or any testimony been sufficient to authenticate the inspiration of those who wrote the books of His life and doctrines ? It is evident that an appeal to reason, and the moral conscience of mankind enters into the evidences of revelation. Christianity has made its way in the world just because its truth commends itself to the hearts of men. Few people

are capable of understanding the external evidences, and of those who do still fewer are convinced by them. It is not the objective doctrine nor the objective revelation that turns men from darkness to light and fills their souls with faith in a Father infinitely good, in a Son who bears the perfection of our nature, or a Holy Spirit who sanctifies and leads into all truth. The multitude of Christians who know and believe these things could not prove the genuineness, the authenticity, nor the inspiration of any book in the Bible, nor state with any measure of accuracy the argument from prophecy or miracles. Revelation is subjective. It is God speaking in man. The record of God's speaking to the saints in times past is objective revelation. To suppose that this can be opposed to the reason or the moral conscience, is to suppose a contradiction. It could not be revelation if it were. But the Scriptures do not mark out those limits of religious thought which are marked out by Mr. Mansel. And Mr. Mansel knows this. He knows that the Scriptures do speak of God as the Infinite. They do not seek to crush reason, but to exalt it, to exercise it, to raise it to the Infinite. 'Surely' he says, 'there is a sense in which we may not think of God as though He were man, as there is also a sense in which we cannot help so thinking of Him. When we read in the same narrative, and almost in two consecutive verses of Scripture—The Strength of Israel will not lie nor repent, for He is not a man that He should repent; and, again, the Lord repented that He made Saul king over Israel; we are imperfectly conscious of an appeal to two different principles of representation involving opposite sides of the same truth; we feel that there is a true foundation for the system which denies human attributes to God; though the superstructure which has been raised upon it logically involves the denial of His very existence.' It is evident then that the Scriptures agree with reason, and that both give a foundation for Pantheism. Mr. Mansel cannot change revelation into something else than what it actually is, and however bad Pantheism may be we cannot, in order to escape it, give up both reason and revelation.

Pantheism is, on all hands, acknowledged to be the theology of reason—of reason it may be in its impotence, but still of such reason as man is gifted with in this present life. It is the philosophy of religion; the philosophy of all religions. It is the goal of Rationalism, of Protestantism, and of Catholicism, for it is the goal of thought. There is no resting place but,

by ceasing to think or reason on God and things divine. Individuals may stop at the symbol, Churches and sects may strive to make resting places on the way by appealing to the authority of a Church, to the letter of the Sacred Writings, or by trying to fix the 'limits' of religious thought, when God Himself has not fixed them. But the reason of man in its inevitable development and its divine love of freedom will break all such bonds and cast away all such cords. They are but the inventions of men, and the human soul in its progress onwards will hold them in derision. It knows that God is infinite, and only as the Infinite will it acknowledge Him to be God.

But what is Pantheism? Substantially and primarily, Pantheism is the effort of man to know God as Being, infinite and absolute. It is ontological Theism—another, a necessary and an implied form of rational Theism. The argument from teleology proves a God at work; the argument from ontology proves a God infinite. We cannot take the one without the other, whatever may be our difficulties in reconciling the conclusions to which each leads us. The difficulties arise from the vastness of the subject; and, though we cannot see further than we do see, that is no reason for shutting our eyes to what is manifest.

And is not this the reconciliation of the supposed contradiction in Plato's theology? Who was more decidedly Pantheistic than Plato? Is he not the great ancestor of all rational or Pantheistic theologians? And yet who is clearer on teleology than Plato? In the *Timæus* God is a Creator distinct and separate from creation, and apparently, too, from the ideas,* after which creation was modelled. From nature and its regulation according to laws, Plato derives his principal reasons for the conviction of the Divine existence, and from the constant mobility of nature he concludes the necessity of an originating, moving principle. Every doubt as to Plato's belief in a personal Deity who works in nature for special ends must be removed by the following passage from the *Sophistes*:—

“Guest of Elea,—But with respect to all living animals and plants which are produced in the earth from seeds and roots, together with such inanimate bodies as subsist on the earth,

* We have assumed throughout that Plato's 'ideas' are the thoughts of God. Professor Thompson says 'this is a common misrepresentation, but assuredly it is one. In the *Parmenides* Plato denies that ideas are thoughts, and refutes the position dialectically. If they are not 'thoughts,' of course they cannot be 'God's thoughts.' The theory is not Plato, but *Plato made easy*.'

able to be liquified or not, can we say that, not existing previously, they were subsequently produced by any other than some fabricating God? or making use of the opinion and the assertion of the many.'

Theætetus,—'What is that?'

Guest,—'That nature generates these from some self-acting fortuitous cause and without a generating mind, or (is it) with reason and a Divine science originating from God?'

Theætetus.—'I, perhaps through my age, am often changing my opinion to both sides. But, at present, looking to you and apprehending that you think these things are produced according to (the will) of a Deity, I think so too.'

Guest,—'It is well, Theætetus? and if we thought that you would be one of those who, at a future time, would think differently, we should now endeavour to make you acknowledge this by the force of reason, in conjunction with the persuasion of necessity. But, since I know your nature to be such, that without any arguments from us, it will of itself arrive at that conclusion to which you say you are now drawn, I will leave the subject, for the time would be superfluous. But I will lay this down, that the things which are said to be made by nature are (made) by divine art, but the things which are composed from those of men, are produced from human (art); and that, according to this assertion, there are two kinds of the making art—one human, and the other divine.'

Plato's teleology exposed him to the reproach of anthropomorphism as much as his ontology to the reproach of Pantheism. Plutarch says 'Even Plato, that magnificent reasoner, when he says that God made the world in His own mould and pattern, savors of the rust and moss of antiquity. . . . He represents the Divine Architect as a miserable bricklayer, or a mason, toiling and sweating at the fabric and government of the world.'

But the elements which Plato inherited from Parmenides were never renounced. God was still 'the Being'—existence itself. He was without passions, incapable of repentance, anger, or hatred. He was best worshipped by pious feeling and upright conduct. Ceremonies, prayers, sacrifices were no honor to Him. They did not secure His favor; they did not change God. Not only was God 'the Being,' but He was 'the Good'—absolute Goodness. Plato's modern disciples have been perplexed by the identification of God with 'the Good,' and have tried to explain that this was not his meaning, but all his ancient

followers, Platonists and Neo-Platonists alike, so understood him. 'This opinion,' says Professor Thompson, 'is evidently difficult to reconcile with the personality of the Divine Essence, and with those passages in the *Timæus* and elsewhere, in which that personality seems to be clearly asserted. Are we to suppose that such passages are to be taken in an exclusively mythical sense, and that we are to look to the *Republic* and *Philebus* as conveying Plato's interior meaning?' But what need for all this criticism and these suppositions, if the Theism of ontology is a necessary part of all rational Theism? That which reconciles Plato with himself, reconciles Schleiermacher, the modern Plato, with himself. His short-sighted critics talk piteously of the Pantheism of his youth, and express rejoicing that in his later years he saw more distinctly the personality of God. But that great spirit who had a genius for theology, such as is rarely to be found in the course of ages, saw clearly that the theology of the 'Discourses on Religion,' was the same as the theology of his sermons. He knew that God was impersonal and yet personal; that He was without parts or passions, and yet that He was our Lord, our King, and our Judge.

We have already proposed that the words 'material Pantheism' should be no longer used, and as the other form of Pantheism is nothing more than belief in the ontological Deity, we might propose that the word Pantheism be entirely laid aside. Indefinite or ambiguous words are the greatest enemies to clear thinking. But there is an important sense in which some of those who are called Pantheists have fallen into error. The source of this error is an ignoring of the conditions under which what may be known of God is known. Our knowledge is always relative. We do not know essences, least of all the transcendent essence of God. The dread of anthropomorphism has led some theologians to a denial of the likeness between God and man. They have preferred worshipping a God without attributes, of whom nothing can be predicated, to ascribing to God any attributes which would seem to limit Him. This is dividing the truth, yea it is running against it, for man is made in God's image, and the qualities of love, goodness, justice, with many others which, are in man, are also, in some way, in God. Every philosophy, and every religion has returned to acknowledge this, however much they may have denied it. What but this is the meaning of all Polytheism, and the incarnations of the gods? In all religions there is a human deity corresponding to the wisdom of God. A Brahma, a Budha incarnate, a Hermes, a Honover or a

Logos. In the Hebrew religion, though God was the impersonal 'I Am,' He was yet a personal God, appearing to the patriarchs in a human form, leading forth the people out of Egypt, abiding in the cloud by day and the pillar of fire by night. All religions, even those which have speculated most on the Infinite have yet conceived God under a human form and as possessing human attributes. Nor is this wonderful when we consider that man is the highest being of whom the mind can form a distinct image. Man is to himself the representative of all that is great; the exemplar of mind; the highest manifestation of spirit. Provisional, the conception of God as personal may be, corrected by the other it must be, yet it is necessary to a true knowledge of God. 'The pious soul craves a personal Deity.' We crave to worship man. It is equally true that God is infinite and that He can be represented under the form of the finite. So has He been represented in Him who is the visible 'image of the invisible God'—*Him* we can worship without idolatry, for in Him the Divine was clothed in the human form. Man is made in the likeness of God, and the converse is fully true that God is in the likeness of man. He wills and designs. He has passions—anger, jealousy, love, and hatred, but He has them without the limitations and infirmities which they imply when predicated of men. So long as we hold fast by this we are free to indulge in the widest and fullest speculations concerning the being of the Infinite God. He invites us to such enquiries. They are natural to the human mind. They are connected with the highest theologies and the deepest and most devout feelings of men. We could not believe in a Logos, did we not believe in a 'Being,' or a 'Bythos' beyond; or to use more Christian language we could not believe in Christ who is the Son, but for our belief in God who is the Father. We could not believe in a personal God who creates the world and rules it as a king or judge, but for our belief in a Spirit which is everywhere, and yet *nowhere*. The argument from final causes proves the existence of a world-maker. It demonstrates that there is a mind working in the world. It is a clear and satisfactory proof to the ordinary understanding of man, but it proves nothing more than a finite God. We must supplement it by the argument from ontology. The one gives a mind, the other gives Being, the two together give the infinite God, impersonal and yet personal—to be called by all names, or, if that is irreverent, to be called by no name. Our thoughts concerning God reach a stage where silence is the sublimest speech. Like the little child that at even time lifts

its eyes to the great blue vault of heaven and says of the ten thousand stars that are twinkling there, these are God's eyes, He is the silent Witness and Watcher of my deeds; so must we say of the great world, that God is everywhere, in all things He sees us, in all things we may see Him. The profoundest philosopher, the man most deeply learned in science, returns to the creed of the world's infancy, and hears in the roar of the thunder that voice which is full of majesty, sees in the lightning the flashes of the Divine Presence, and in all the operations of nature's manifold laws, the working of an ever-present God.

CONCLUSION.

WE have already said that Pantheism is a question of the right of reason to be heard in matters pertaining to religion. We have seen the conclusion to which reason inevitably comes. Is what is called Pantheism anything so fearful that to avoid it we must renounce reason? To trace the history of theology from its first dawning among the Greeks, down to the present day, and to describe the whole as opposed to Christianity is surely to place Christianity in antagonism with the Catholic reason of mankind. To describe all the greatest minds that have been engaged in the study of theology as Pantheists, and to mean by this term men irreligious, unchristian, or Atheistic, is surely to say that religion, Christianity, and Theism have but little agreement with reason. Are we seriously prepared to make this admission? Not only to give up Plato and Plotinus, Origen and Erigena, Spinoza and Schleiermacher, but S. Paul and S. John, S. Augustine and S. Athanasius. It may be said that the philosophy of the Greeks and Alexandrians corrupted the simplicity of the gospel of Christ, and that an apostle says, 'the world by wisdom knew not God.' It might be enough to answer with S. Augustine that by wisdom S. Paul here means the philosophy of such as Democritus and Epicurus, not that of Socrates and Plato. Yet there is an important sense in which philosophy corrupted the simplicity of Christ's gospel. That gospel was a religion, not a theology; a rule of life rather than a code of faith. It was corrupted when theology took the place of religion, and certain dogmas were declared necessary to salvation, and substituted for a godly life. But the first

teachers of Christianity—those who had their commission immediately from Christ appealed to the truths of natural religion and incorporated as their own all that was true in the teaching of the Heathen world. S. Paul quoted and sanctioned the Pantheism of one of the most Pantheistic of the Greek poets. He did not stop to explain in what sense we are the *offspring* of God. He took the words of Aratus as they stood. He did not explain the Monotheism of the Greeks as a spurious Theism, nor did he say that the God whom the Greeks worshipped was not the same God whom Jesus revealed. He quoted the words of the philosophical poet without qualification or explanation. He made use of Heathen wisdom to refute Heathen folly. Christianity, indeed, clothed itself in the Greek forms of speech. It adopted, corrected, or modified the great truths of natural religion that were known to the Heathen world. Even the Logos which in S. John is the designation of the Son of God, previous to His incarnation, was in familiar use in the theology of the schools. Throughout S. Paul's Epistles, and the Epistle to the Hebrews, close parallelisms may be traced both in thought and language between them and the writings of the Alexandrian philosophers and especially those of Philo, the Jew, who preceded the Apostles in translating Hebrew thoughts into Greek forms. 'Alexandrianism' says an able and earnest writer, 'was not the seed of the great tree which was to cover the earth, but the soil in which it grew up. It was not the body of which Christianity was the soul, but the vesture in which it folded itself—the old bottle into which the new wine was poured. When with stammering lips and other tongues the first preachers passed beyond the borders of the sacred land Alexandrianism was the language which they spoke, not the faith they taught. It was mystical and dialectical, not moral and spiritual; for the few, not for the many; for the Jewish therapeute not for all mankind. It spoke of a Holy Ghost, of a Word, of a Divine Man, of a first and second Adam, of the faith of Abraham, of bread which came down from Heaven; but knew nothing of the God who had made of one blood all nations of the earth, of the victory over sin and death, of the cross of Christ. It was a picture, a shadow, a surface, a cloud above, catching the rising light ere He appeared.' Christianity recommended itself by its reasonableness to the philosophers of Alexandria. These passed into the Church and became its first great teachers after the days of the Apostles. Their deep longing for yet higher and clearer truth was satisfied in Christianity. The gospel became to them

the true Gnosis—the knowledge which Plato had taught men to seek after as the highest good.

To separate between reason and revelation is to put asunder what God hath joined together. To speak of their harmony is but to enunciate a truism, for revelation is made to reason—that is, it appeals to man as a moral and rational being. It is in itself the highest reason, for it is the Divine reason speaking to the reason of man. Man may apprehend it but imperfectly; some men more, others less. If we start with the assumption that revelation is an infallible Church, or if we make the Bible that reasonless and indefinite authority which Catholics make the Church, we shall end in inextricable confusion. The exile of reason will be a necessity, and the only substitute left, a blind and unenquiring faith, which, in other circumstances, would have been given to the religion of Budha or Mahomet as readily as it is given to that of Jesus. ‘That would be an evil day’ says the Bishop of London, ‘for the Christian religion and the Christian Church, in which theologians granted that the truths which they taught were not to be tested and maintained by reason. Where should we have anything to save us from launching on the shoreless sea of superstition, which, in a vague way, satisfying unthinking minds, is for those who think, but another name for Scepticism?’ Come what may, let us hold fast to reason. Let theology be brought out into the field of a full and searching enquiry. In such an ordeal, like other sciences, it will be purged of much of its dross, but it will come forth all the better and brighter and worthier in the eyes of men. It skulks now behind authority, tradition, and ignorance, for its advocates are afraid that it cannot bear the light. Vanish all such fears! Let men be honest with themselves, honest with their own minds; and God, too, will be honest with them. The search for light is our earthly vocation, and God Himself is leading us on. He is holding before us the golden lamp. Often we see it but dimly, and often the very brightness of our vision is dazzling to the eyes of other men. ‘The most precious truth’ said Richard Baxter, ‘not apprehended doth seem to be but error and fantastic novelty.’ But for all this seeming, it is not less ‘precious truth.’ Reason has had many wanderings and many guesses. She has often been right when she seemed to be wrong, and wrong when she seemed to be right. The Catholic Baronius wished to expel ‘the Hagar’ with ‘her profane Ishmael;’ but, with all her conjectures, her dreams, her air castles, that is true

which was said by One wiser than Baronius even by Him who was the incarnation of the Divine Reason.—*Wisdom is justified of all her children.*

The following works have been used more or less in the composition of this chapter ; some of them have reference to all the chapters.

Essai sur le Panthéisme ; par H. L. C. Maret.

Théodicée Chrétienne ; par H. L. C. Maret.

La Théodicée Chrétienne de M. L' Abbé Maret comparée avec la Théologie Catholique ; par M. L'Abbé Peltier.

Modern Pantheism ; by M. Saisset. Translated from the French.

Der Pantheismus nach seinen verschiedenen Hauptformen, seinen Ursprung und Fortgange &c ; von G. B. Jäsche.

Reden über die Religion ; von Dr. F. Schleiermacher.

Der Christliche Glaube ; von Dr. F. Schleiermacher.

Schleiermacher on the Gospel of S. Luke translated by Bishop Thirlwall.

Weihnachtsfeier ; von Dr. F. Schleiermacher.

Essay on Schleiermacher ; by R. A. Vaughan.

Sengler's Idee des Gottes.

Amand Saintes on German Rationalism.

Theodore Parker's Sermons on Theism, Atheism &c.

Theodore Parker's Discourses on Religion.

Robertson's Sermons.

Vie de Jesus ; par M. Rénan.

Essays and Lectures ; by R. W. Emerson.

Mansel's Bampton Lectures.

Mansel's Metaphysics.

Professor Mansel on M. Saisset's 'Modern Pantheism' in the Contemporary Review, May, 1866.

Sir William Hamilton's Lectures and Discussions.

Professor Ferrier's Institutes of Metaphysic.

What is Revelation ? ; by the Rev. F. D. Maurice.

Philosophy of the Infinite ; by H. Calderwood.

Examination of Sir W. Hamilton's Philosophy ; by J. S. Mill.

Channing's Essay on Milton.

S. Athanasius against the Arians in the Library of the Fathers.

Kingsley's Sermons.

Weasley's Sermons.

Toplady's More work for John Weasley.

Thompson's Burnett Prize Essay.

Tulloch's Burnett Prize Essay.
 Robert Hunt's Panthea, or Spirit of Nature.
 Robert Hunt's Poetry of the Sciences.
 Correlation of Physical Forces ; by Dr. Grove.
 Oersted's Soul in Nature.
 Life and its Varieties ; by Leo. H. Grindon.
 Life and Death ; by W. S. Savory.
 Vie, Travaux et Doctrine Scientifique d'E. Geoffroy S. Hilaire par
 son Fils.
 Owen on the Archetype and Homologies of the Vertebrate Skeleton.
 M'Coah on Typical Forms in Creation.
 Oken's Physico-Philosophy.
 Cuvier's Animal Kingdom.
 De la Nature ; par J. B. Robinet.
 La vraie Philosophie ; par J. B. Robinet.
 Origin of Species ; by Charles Darwin.
 Vestiges of a Natural History of Creation.
 Man's Place in Nature ; by Professor Huxley.
 Professor Lindley's Botany.
 Goethe's Versuch die Metamorphose der Pflanzen zu erklären
 Plant, A Biography ; by Professor Schleiden.
 Ruskin's Modern Painters.
 Ackermann on the Christian Element in Plato.
 Plato's Republic, Sophistes, and Timæus.
 Professor Jowett on S. Paul's Epistles.
 Dr. Irons on the whole Doctrine of Final Causes.
 Esquisse d'une Philosophie ; par M. Lamennais.
 De l' Humanité, son Principe et de son Avenir ; par M. Leroux.
 Fragments Philosophiques ; par M. Cousin.
 De la Philosophie du Clergé ; Revue des deux Mondes, Mai, 1844.
 Melanges Philosophiques ; par M. Jouffroy.
 Essai sur l'histoire de la philosophie en France au xix^e siècle ; par M.
 Damiron.
 Philosophie de Droit ; par M. Lerminier.
 Nouveau Christianisme ; par Le Comte Henry de Saint-Simon.
 Exposition de la Doctrine saint-simonienne première et deuxième
 années.
 L'Encyclopedie Nouvelle ; Articles—Christianisme, Ciel, Théologie.
 L'Origine des Cultes ; par M. Dupuis.
 Dictionnaire Catholique par M. Goechler ; Art,—Panthéisme.
 Histoire naturelle des Animaux ; par M. de Lamarck.

History of Civilization ; by T. H. Buckle.
 Bishop Warburton's Divine Legation of Moses.
 Cudworth's Intellectual System of the Universe.
 Bishop Berkeley's Minute Philosopher.
 Voltaire's Philosophical Dictionary ; Art.—Shells.
 Hume's Essays.
 Sir Charles Lyell on the Antiquity of Man.
 Farrar's Bampton Lectures.
 Bayle's Dictionary ; Articles—Spinoza and Manichæism.
 Baden Powell on the Order of Nature.
 Natural Religion ; by M. Jules Simon. Translated from the French
 by J. W. Cole.
 Bishop Beveridge on the XXXIX Articles.
 Exposition of the XXXIX Articles ; by the Bishop of Ely.
 Claims of the Bible and of Science ; by the Rev. F. D. Maurice.
 Harmony of Revelation and the Sciences ; by the Bishop of London.

THE END.